

# *The* **CHOICE**

**ISLAM AND CHRISTIANITY**

**VOLUME ONE**

**VOLUME TWO**

**BY AHMED DEEDAT**

1st PRINT	APRIL 1993	10 000
2nd PRINT	MAY 1993	10 000
3rd PRINT	JULY 1993 (BY THE IQRAA CHARITABLE SOCIETY)	10 000
4th PRINT	AUGUST 1993 (STATE OF BAHRAIN SUNNI WAQF COUNCIL)	10 000
5th PRINT	SEPTEMBER 1993 (FAHIL KHAIR - SAUDI ARABIA ✕ ) AABF	30 000
6th PRINT	OCTOBER 1993 IPCI - SA - HABIB BANK A/c	10 000
7th PRINT	NOVEMBER 1993 (FAHIL KHAIR - SAUDI ARABIA) M.A.L.J.	10 000
8th PRINT	DECEMBER 1993 (FAHIL KHAIR - DOHA QATAR) AAS - ABSA - HMAM	20 000
9th PRINT	DECEMBER 1993 IPC - KUWAIT لجنة التعريف بالإسلام	10 000
10th PRINT	DECEMBER 1993 (FAHIL KHAIR - KUWAIT) A.A.B	10 000
11th PRINT	APRIL 1994 (FAHIL KHAIR - SAUDI ARABIA) A.A.B.F.	20 000
12th PRINT	APRIL 1994 (FAHIL KHAIR - QATAR)	5 000
13th PRINT	APRIL 1994 I.P.C.I. - S.A.	5 000
14th PRINT	MAY 1994 Y.A.L.J. - Saudi Arabia	50 000

**AHMED DEEDAT**

49 TREVENNEN ROAD  
VERULAM 4340  
REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA

## ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Born in the Surat district of India in 1918, Ahmed Hoosen Deedat had no recollection of his father until 1926. His father a tailor by profession had emigrated to South Africa shortly after the birth of Ahmed Deedat.

With no formal education and fighting off the extreme pangs of poverty, he went to South Africa in 1927 to be with his father. His farewell to his mother in India in 1927 was the last time he saw her alive for she passed away a few months later.

In a foreign land, a boy of nine with no formal schooling and command of the English language began preparing for the role he was to play decades later without realizing it.

Applying himself with diligence to his studies, the little boy not only was able to overcome the language barrier but excelled in school. His avid passion for reading helped him gain promotions until he completed standard 6. Lack of finance interrupted his schooling and at the early age of about 16 he took on the first of many jobs in retailing.

The most significant of these was in 1936 where he worked at a Muslim owned store near a Christian seminary on the Natal South Coast. The incessant insults of the trainee missionaries hurled against Islam during their brief visits to the store infused a stubborn flame of desire within the young man to counteract their false propaganda.

As fate would have it, Ahmed Deedat discovered by pure chance a book entitled **Izharul-Haq**, meaning the Truth revealed. This book recorded the techniques and enormous success of the efforts of Muslims in India in turning the tables against Christian missionary harassment during the British subjugation and rule of India. In particular the idea of holding debates had a profound effect on Ahmed Deedat.

Armed with this new found zeal, Ahmed Deedat purchased his first Bible and began holding debates and discussions with the

trainee missionaries. When they beat a hasty retreat in the face of his incisive counter arguments, he personally called on their teachers and even priests in the surrounding areas.

These successes spurred Ahmed Deedat in the direction of Da'wah. Not even his marriage, birth of children and a 3 year sojourn to Pakistan after its independence dampened his enthusiasm or dulled his desire to defend Islam from the deceitful distortions of the Christian missionaries.

With missionary zeal to project the Truth and beauty of Islam, Ahmed Deedat immersed himself into a host of activities over the next three decades. He conducted classes on Bible studies and gave numerous lectures. He established the As-Salaam, an institute to train propagators of Islam. He, together with his family, almost single-handedly erected the buildings including the masjid which is still a landmark today.

He was a founder member of the Islamic Propagation Centre International (IPCI) and became its President, a position he still holds today. He has published over 20 books and distributed millions of copies free of charge. He has delivered thousands of lectures all over the world and successfully engaged Christian Evangelists in public debates. Several thousand people have come into the fold of Islam as a result of these efforts.

In a fitting tribute to this monumental achievement, he was awarded the King Faisal International award in 1986, a prestigious recognition of enormous value in the world of Islam.

No number of awards and honours can truly capture the man's essence and zeal for Islam. This anthology of books is no exception. It demonstrates Sheikh Deedat's analytical compilations drawn from personal encounters and experiences against Christian distortions.

May Allah (SWT) bless him for this book, the ones to follow and all his efforts for Islam, Insha-Allah!

**EBI LOCKHAT**

20 SHAWWAL 1413 / APRIL 13, 1993  
DURBAN, SOUTH AFRICA



# AHMED DEEDAT

*Man with a Mission*



Born in 1926  
Moslem Scholar of  
Comparative Religion  
Started Durrani and  
lecturing 40 years ago  
Late President of IPCI  
Lectured in many parts of  
the world  
Debated with prominent  
personalities  
Author of a number of  
books  
Winner of the FIM, Jaisal  
Award in 1986

www.kingfaisalaward.com

**King Faisal International Award  
for Service to Islam**



The Committee of King Faisal International Award, after perusing the Regulations of King Faisal International Award as approved by the Board of Trustees of the King Faisal Charity Foundation by Resolution No. 11-68-98 dated on 10-8-1398 Hijri, and the Minutes of the Selection Committee of King Faisal International Award for Services to Islam, in its ninth session on 30th Rabi'ul Awwal, 1406 Hijri, corresponding to 12th December, 1985, decided hereby to grant:

**Ustaz Ahmed Hoosen Deedat**

King Faisal International Award for Service to Islam jointly of this year, 1406 Hijri, in appreciation to his continuous and serious efforts exerted in propagating Islam for around thirty five years, on the local, regional, international and global levels, particularly as regards the following:

- His serious participation in numerous Islamic conferences.
- Giving numerous lectures in a number of Islamic countries.
- His argumentation against the opponents of Islam, and debating with them in open meetings.
- His founding of "As-Salaam" – an institution – for raising up students and propagators, and training them to take up the task of Islamic propagation.
- His writing of a number of pamphlets and books published for the cause of the propagation and combating missionary activities, in addition to enlightening the Muslims on the principles of their illustrious belief and the rules of their religion.

And the Committee of the Award have presenting this to him supplicates Allah to give it him for his good service to the Ummah and to make him a member of those who are his.

Chairman of the Award Committee

Chairman  
of the Award Committee

Issued at Riyadh, under No. 33  
date 28. 6. 1406 H  
corresponding to 12. 12. 1985 C.E.

  
Khalid Al-Faisal bin Abdul Aziz

TRANSLATED FROM THE ORIGINAL

# CONTENTS

PAGE No.

## *PART 1*

### **WHAT THE BIBLE SAYS ABOUT MUHUMMED (PBUH)**

MY FIRST MAJOR ENCOUNTER	2
EIGHT IRREFUTABLE ARGUMENTS	9
FURTHER PROOFS	15
NEW TESTAMENT ALSO CONFIRMS	22
COME LET US REASON TOGETHER	28

## *PART 2*

### **MUHUMMED (PBUH) THE NATURAL SUCCESSOR TO CHRIST (PBUH)**

THE FINAL MESSENGER	30
IN THE WORDS OF THE MASTER	40
MUHUMMED (PBUH) IS THE "PARACLETE"	51
TOTAL GUIDANCE!	68
FULFILLED PROPHECIES	84
EXTREMISM CONDEMNED	95

## *PART 3*

### **MUHUMMED (PBUH) THE GREATEST**

EVERYBODY'S CHOICE	102
FROM THE HISTORICAL PAST	118
FASTEST GROWING RELIGION TODAY	132

## *PART 4*

### **AL-QUR'AN — THE MIRACLE OF MIRACLES**

A STANDING CHALLENGE	163
SCIENCE AND THE QUR'ANIC REVELATIONS	175
AL-QUR'AN ABSOLUTELY UNIQUE IN ITS RECORDING	189
MIRACULOUS BOOK OF TELEGRAMS	205
GOD — UNIQUE IN HIS ATTRIBUTES	218
SOLVING CONTROVERSY	223



BIBLE

UNHARMED

## CHAPTER ONE

### *My First Major Encounter*

**SAY: "DO YOU SEE? WHETHER THIS MESSAGE BE FROM ALLAH (God Almighty), AND YET YOU REJECT IT, AND A WITNESS FROM AMONG THE CHILDREN OF ISRAEL' BORE WITNESS OF ONE LIKE HIM . . . . ."**

(SÚRA AHQÁF) Holy Qur'an 46:10

Mr. Chairman, Ladies and Gentlemen,

The subject of this evening's talk\* — "**What the BIBLE says about MUHUMMED (Peace be upon him)**" — will no doubt come as a surprise to many of you because the speaker is a Muslim. How does it come about that a Muslim happens to be expounding prophecies from the Jewish and Christian Scriptures?

As a young man, about 30 years ago, I attended a series of religious lectures by a Christian theologian, a certain Rev. Hiten, at the "Theatre Royal", Durban.

\* This is the text of a lecture delivered by the author in the early seventies.

### **POPE OR KISSINGER?**

This Reverend gentleman was expounding Biblical prophecies. He went on to prove that the Christian Bible foretold the rise of Soviet Russia, and the Last Days. At one stage he went to the extent of proving that his Holy Book did not leave the Pope out of its predictions. He expatiated vigorously in order to convince his audience that the "**Beast 666**" mentioned in the Book of Revelation — the last book of the New Testament — was the

---

1. This refers to Moses. See Yusuf Ali's commentaries Nos. 4783/4 to this verse. His translation with text and commentary available from the I.P.C.I., 124 QUEEN STREET, DURBAN 4001, R.S.A.

**POPE**, who was the Vicar of Christ on earth. It is not befitting for us Muslims to enter into this controversy between the Roman Catholics and the Protestants. By the way, the latest Christian exposition of the “**Beast 666**” of the Christian Bible is Dr. Henry Kissinger.<sup>1</sup> Christian scholars are ingenious and indefatigable in their efforts to prove their case.

Rev. Hiten's lectures led me to ask that if the Bible foretold so many things — not even excluding the “Pope” and “Israel”, — then surely it must have something to say about the greatest benefactor of mankind<sup>2</sup> — the Holy Prophet Muhammed (may the peace of Allah be with him).

As a youngster I set out to search for an answer. I met priest after priest, attended lectures, and read everything that I could lay my hands relating to the field of Bible prophecies. Tonight I am going to narrate to you one of these interviews with a dominee<sup>3</sup> of the Dutch Reformed Church.

## LUCKY THIRTEEN

I was invited to the Transvaal<sup>4</sup> to deliver a talk on the occasion of the Birthday celebration of the Holy Prophet Muhammed. Knowing that in that Province of the Republic of South Africa, the Afrikaans language is widely spoken, even by my own people, I felt that I ought to acquire a smattering of this language so as to feel a little more “at home” with the people. I opened the telephone directory and began phoning the Afrikaans-

- 
1. Christian exegetists give progressive numerical values by sixes, to the English alphabet and add up to get the total 666 i.e. A = 6, B = 12, C = 18, D = 24 and so on. Progression by 6's because the number of the Beast in the Bible is “666”. Try it for Dr. Kissinger.
  2. The writer has just delivered another talk in the City Hall, Durban on the 10th December, 1975 on the subject — “**Muhummed the Greatest**”, booklet on that topic now available **FREE** from the Centre.
  3. “Dominee” is the Afrikaans equivalent of priest, parson and predikant.
  4. One of the Provinces of the Republic of South Africa.

speaking churches. I indicated my purpose to the priests that I was interested in having a dialogue with them, but they all refused my request with "plausible" excuses. No. 13 was my lucky number. The thirteenth call brought me pleasure and relief. A dominee Van Heerden agreed to meet me at his home on the Saturday afternoon that I was to leave for the Transvaal.

He received me on his verandah with a friendly welcome. He said if I did not mind, he would like his father-in-law from the Free State (a 70-year-old man) to join us in the discussion. I did not mind. The three of us settled down in the dominee's library.

### WHY NOTHING?

I posed the question: "What does the Bible say about Muhammed?" Without hesitation he answered, "Nothing!" I asked: "Why nothing? According to your interpretation the Bible have so many things to say about the rise of Soviet Russia and about the Last Days and even about the Pope of the Roman Catholics?" He said, "Yes, but there was nothing about Muhammed!" I asked again, "Why nothing? Surely this man Muhammed who had been responsible for the bringing into being a world-wide community of millions of Believers who, on his authority, believe in —

- (1) the miraculous birth of Jesus,
- (2) that Jesus is the Messiah,<sup>1</sup>
- (3) that he gave life to the dead by God's permission, and that he healed those born blind and the lepers by God's permission.

---

1. The word "Messiah" comes from the Arabic and Hebrew word **masaha** which means to rub, to massage, to anoint. The religious significance is "**the one who is anointed**" — priests and kings were anointed in consecration to their offices. Messiah translated Christ does not mean God. Even **the heathen** Cyrus is called "Christ" in the Bible, (Isaiah 45:1).



Surely this book (the Bible) must have something to say about this great Leader of men who spoke so well of Jesus and his mother Mary?" (Peace be upon them both).

The old man from the Free State replied. "My son,\* I have been reading the Bible for the past 50 years, and if there was any mention of him, I would have known it."

\* I was much younger and clean shaven then.

### NOT ONE BY NAME!

I enquired: "According to you, are there not hundreds of prophecies regarding the coming of Jesus in the Old Testament." The dominee interjected: "Not hundreds, but thousands!" I said, "I am not going to dispute the 'thousand and one' prophecies in the Old Testament regarding the coming of Jesus Christ, because the whole Muslim-world has already accepted him without the testimony of any Biblical prophecy. We Muslims have accepted the **de facto** Jesus on the authority of Muhammed alone, and there are in the world today no less than 900,000,000<sup>1</sup> followers of Muhammed who love, respect and revere this great Messenger of God — **JESUS CHRIST** — without having the Christians to convince them by means of their Biblical dialectics. Out of the 'thousands' of prophecies referred to, can you please give me just **ONE** single prophecy where Jesus is mentioned by name? The term 'Messiah', translated as 'Christ', is not a name but a title. Is there a single prophecy where it says that the name of the Messiah will be **JESUS**, and that his mother's name will be **MARY**, that his supposed father will be **JOSEPH THE CARPENTER**; that he will be born in the reign of **HEROD THE KING**, etc. etc.? No! There are no such details! Then how can you conclude that those 'thousand' prophecies refer to Jesus?"

---

1. This was first written in 1976.

## WHAT IS PROPHECY?

The dominee replied: "You see, prophecies are word-pictures of something that is going to happen in the future. When that thing actually comes to pass, we see vividly in these prophecies the fulfilment of what had been predicted in the past." I said: "What you actually do is that you deduce, you reason, you put two and two together." He said: "Yes." I said: "**If this is what you have to do with a 'thousand' prophecies to justify your claim with regards to the genuineness of Jesus, why should we not adopt the very same system for Muhammed?**"<sup>1</sup> The dominee agreed that it was a fair proposition, a reasonable way of dealing with the problem.

I asked him to open up Deuteronomy, chapter 18, verse 18 (the fifth Book of the Christian and Jewish Bibles), which he did. I read from memory the verse in Afrikaans, because this was my purpose in having a little practice with the language of the ruling race in South Africa.<sup>2</sup>

*'N PROFEET SAL EK VIR HULLE  
VERWEK UIT DIE MIDDE VAN HULLE BROERS,  
SOOS JY IS,  
EN EK SAL MY WOORDE IN SY MOND LÊ,  
EN HY SAL AAN HULLE SÊ  
ALLES WAT EK HOM BEVEEL. Deut. 18:18.*

The English translation reads as follows:—

***I will raise them up a Prophet  
from among their brethren,***

- 
1. Muhammed is mentioned by name in the Song of Solomon 5:16. The Hebrew word used there is **Mahammudim**. The end letters **IM** is a plural of respect, majesty and grandeur. Minus "**im**" the name would be **Mahammud** translated as "altogether lovely" in the Authorised Version of the Bible or '**The Praised One**' — 'the one worthy of praise' i.e. **MUHUMMEDI** (P.B.U.H.)
  2. If this booklet is translated into any language, please change the Afrikaans words into the local dialect; and do not try a free hand translation of the Biblical quotations. Obtain a Bible in the language in which translation is being made and transcribe exactly as the words occur in that Bible.

*like unto thee,  
and I will put my words in his mouth;  
and he shall speak unto them  
all that I shall command him.*

(HOLY BIBLE) Deuteronomy 18:18

## PROPHET LIKE MOSES

Having recited the verse in Afrikaans, I apologised for my uncertain pronunciation. The dominee assured me that I was doing fine. I enquired: "To whom does this prophecy refer?" Without the slightest hesitation he answered: "**JESUS!**" I asked: "**Why Jesus — his name is not mentioned here?**" The dominee replied: "Since prophecies are word-pictures of something that is going to happen in the future, we find that the wordings of this verse adequately describe him. You see the most important words of this prophecy are 'SOOS JY IS' (**like unto thee**), — LIKE YOU — like Moses, and Jesus is like Moses. I questioned: "In which way is Jesus like Moses?" The answer was: "In the first place Moses was a **JEW** and Jesus was also a **JEW**; secondly, Moses was a **PROPHET** and Jesus was also a **PROPHET** — therefore Jesus is like Moses and that is exactly what God had foretold Moses — "**SOOS JY IS**". "Can you think of any other similarities between Moses and Jesus?" I asked. The dominee said that he could not think of any. I replied: "If these are the only two criteria for discovering a candidate for this prophecy of Deuteronomy 18:18, then in that case this criteria could fit any one of the following Biblical personages after Moses: — Solomon, Isaiah, Ezekiel, Daniel, Hosea, Joel, Malachi, John the Baptist, etc., because they were also **ALL** "Jews" as well as "Prophets." Why should we not apply this prophecy to any one of these prophets, and why only to Jesus? Why should we make fish of one and fowl of another?" The dominee had no reply. I continued: "You see, my conclusions are that Jesus is

most unlike Moses, and if I am wrong I would like you to correct me."

### THREE UNLIKES

So saying, I reasoned with him:

In the **FIRST** place Jesus is not like Moses, because, according to **YOU** — 'JESUS IS A GOD', but Moses is not God, Is this true?" He said: "Yes." I said: "**Therefore Jesus is not like Moses!**

"**SECONDLY**, according to **YOU** — 'JESUS DIED FOR THE SINS OF THE WORLD', but Moses did not have to die for the sins of the world. Is this true?" He again said: "Yes." I said: "**Therefore Jesus is not like Moses!**"

"**THIRDLY**, according to **YOU** — 'JESUS WENT TO HELL FOR THREE DAYS', but Moses did not have to go there. Is this true?" He answered meekly: "Y-e-s." I concluded: "**Therefore Jesus is not like Moses!**"

"But dominee," I continued: "these are not hard facts, solid facts, tangible facts; they are mere matters of belief over which the little ones can stumble and fall. Let us discuss something very simple, very easy that if your little ones are called in to hear the discussion, they would have no difficulty in following it, shall we?" The dominee was quiet happy at the suggestion.

## CHAPTER TWO

### *Eight Irrefutable Arguments*

#### FATHER AND MOTHER

- (1) "Moses had a father and a mother. Muhammed also had a father and a mother. But Jesus had only a mother, and no human father. Is this true?" He said: "Yes." I said: DAAROM IS JESUS NIE SOOS MOSES NIE, MAAR MUHUMMED IS SOOS MOSES!" Meaning: "**THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES, BUT MUHUMMED IS LIKE MOSES!**" (By now the reader will realise that I was using the Afrikaans language only for practice purposes. I shall discontinue its use in this narration).

#### MIRACULOUS BIRTH

- (2) "Moses and Muhammed were born in the normal, natural course, i.e. the physical association of man and woman; but Jesus was created by a special miracle. You will recall that we are told in the Gospel of St. Matthew 1:18 "**... BEFORE THEY CAME TOGETHER,** (Joseph the Carpenter and Mary) **SHE WAS FOUND WITH CHILD BY THE HOLY GHOST.**" And St. Luke tells us that when the good news of the birth of a holy son was announced to her, Mary reasoned: "**... HOW SHALL THIS BE, SEEING I KNOW NOT A MAN? AND THE ANGEL ANSWERED AND SAID UNTO HER, THE HOLY GHOST SHALL COME UPON THEE, AND THE POWER OF THE HIGHEST SHALL OVERSHADOW THEE ...**" (Luke 1:35). The Holy Qur'an confirms the miraculous birth of Jesus, in nobler and sublimer terms. In answer to her logical question: '**O my Lord! How shall I have a son when no man hath**

touched me?' the angel says in reply: **'Even so: Allah createth what He willeth: when He hath decreed a Plan, He but saith to it "BE" and it is!'**" (Holy Qur'an 3:47). It is not necessary for God to plant a seed in man or animal. He merely wills it and it comes into being. This is the Muslim conception of the birth of Jesus. (When I compared the Qur'anic and the Biblical versions of the birth of Jesus to Rev. Dunkers the head of the Bible Society in our largest city, and when I enquired: "Which version would you prefer to give your daughter, the **QUR'ANIC** version or the **BIBLICAL** version?" The man bowed his head and answered: "The Qur'anic.") In short, I said to the dominee: "Is it true that Jesus was born miraculously as against the natural birth of Moses and Muhammed?" He replied proudly: "YES!" I said: **"THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES, BUT MUHAMMED IS LIKE MOSES.** And God says to Moses in the Book of Deuteronomy 18:18 **"LIKE UNTO THEE"** (Like You, Like Moses) **and Muhammed is like Moses."**

### MARRIAGE TIES

- (3) "Moses and Muhammed married and begot children, but Jesus remained a bachelor all his life. Is this true?" The dominee said: "Yes." I said: **THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES, BUT MUHAMMED IS LIKE MOSES."**

### JESUS REJECTED BY HIS PEOPLE

- (4) "Moses and Muhammed were accepted as prophets by their people in their very lifetime. No doubt the Jews gave endless

---

1. Please open the Holy Qur'an 3:42 and 19:16 where the birth of Jesus is spoken about; read it with the commentary, and draw the attention of your Christian friends to the high position which Jesus and his mother occupy in Islam.

trouble to Moses and they murmured in the wilderness, but as a nation, as a whole, they acknowledged that Moses was a Messenger of God sent to them. The Arabs too made Muhammed's life impossible. He suffered very badly at their hands. After 13 years of preaching in Mecca, he had to emigrate from the city of his birth. But before his demise, the Arab nation as a whole accepted him as the Messenger of Allah. But according to the Bible — *'HE (Jesus) CAME UNTO HIS OWN, BUT HIS OWN RECEIVED HIM NOT.'* (John 1:11). **And even today, after two thousand years, his people — the Jews, as a whole, have rejected him.** Is this true?" The dominee said: "Yes." I said: "**THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES, BUT MUHUMMED IS LIKE MOSES.**"

### **"OTHER-WORLDLY" KINGDOM**

- (5) "Moses and Muhammed were prophets as well as kings. By prophet I mean a man who receives Divine Revelation for the Guidance of Man and this Guidance he conveys to God's creatures as received without any addition or deletion. A king is a person who has the power of life and death over his people. It is immaterial whether the person wears a crown or not, or whether he was ever addressed as king or monarch: if the man has the prerogative of inflicting capital punishment — **HE IS A KING**. Moses possessed such a power. Do you remember the Israelite who was found picking up firewood on the Sabbath Day, and Moses had him stoned to death? (Numbers 15:36). There are other crimes also mentioned in the Bible for which capital punishment was inflicted on the Jews at the behest of Moses. Muhammed too, had the power of life and death over his people.

There are instances in the Bible of persons who were given gift of **prophecy only**, but they were not in a position

to implement their directives. Some of these holy men of God who were helpless in the face of stubborn rejection of their message were the prophets Lot, Jonah, Daniel, Ezra and John the Baptist. They could only deliver the message, but could not enforce the Law. The Holy Prophet Jesus unfortunately also belonged to this category. The Christian Gospel clearly confirms this: when Jesus was dragged before the Roman Governor, Pontius Pilate, charged for sedition, Jesus made a convincing point in his defence to refute the false charge: **JESUS ANSWERED, 'MY KINGDOM IS NOT OF THIS WORLD': IF MY KINGDOM WERE OF THIS WORLD, THEN WOULD MY SERVANTS FIGHT, THAT I SHOULD NOT BE DELIVERED TO THE JEWS; BUT NOW IS MY KINGDOM NOT FROM HENCE"** (John 18:36). This convinced Pilate (A Pagan) that though Jesus might not be in full possession of his mental faculty, he did not strike him as being a danger to his rule. Jesus claimed **a spiritual kingdom only**; in other words he only claimed to be a prophet. Is this true?" The dominee answered: "Yes." I said: **"THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES BUT MUHAMMED IS LIKE MOSES."**

### NO NEW LAWS

- (6) "Moses and Muhammed brought new laws and new regulations for their people. Moses not only gave the Ten Commandments to the Israelites, but a very comprehensive ceremonial law for the guidance of his people. Muhammed comes to a people steeped in barbarism and ignorance. They married their stepmothers; they buried their daughters alive; drunkenness, adultery, idolatry and gambling were the order of the day. Gibbon describes the Arabs before Islam in his **"Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire"**, **"THE HUMAN BRUTE, ALMOST WITHOUT SENSE, IS POORLY DISTINGUISHED FROM THE REST OF THE ANIMAL**



CREATION.' There was hardly anything to distinguish between the "man" and the "animal" of the time; they were animals in human form.

From this abject barbarism, Muhammed elevated them, in the words of Thomas Carlyle, '**into torch-bearers of light and learning.**' **'TO THE ARAB NATION IT WAS AS A BIRTH FROM DARKNESS INTO LIGHT. ARABIA FIRST BECAME ALIVE BY MEANS OF IT. A POOR SHEPHERD PEOPLE, ROAMING UNNOTICED IN ITS DESERTS SINCE THE CREATION OF THE WORLD. SEE, THE UNNOTICED BECOMES WORLD NOTABLE, THE SMALL HAS GROWN WORLD-GREAT. WITHIN ONE CENTURY AFTERWARDS ARABIA WAS AT GRANADA ON ONE HAND AND AT DELHI ON THE OTHER. GLANCING IN VALOUR AND SPLENDOUR, AND THE LIGHT OF GENIUS, ARABIA SHINES OVER A GREAT SECTION OF THE WORLD ...'** The fact is that Muhammed gave his people a Law and Order they never had before.

As regards Jesus, when the Jews felt suspicious of him that he might be an imposter with designs to pervert their teachings, Jesus took pains to assure them that he had not come with a new religion — **no new laws and no new regulations.** I quote his own words: *'THINK NOT THAT I AM COME TO DESTROY THE LAW, OR THE PROPHETS: I AM NOT COME TO DESTROY, BUT TO FULFIL. FOR VERILY I SAY UNTO YOU, TILL HEAVEN AND EARTH PASS, ONE JOT OR ONE TITTLE SHALL IN NO WISE PASS FROM THE LAW, TILL ALL BE FULFILLED.'* (Matthew 5:17-18).

In other words he had not come with any new laws or regulations; he came only to fulfil the old law. This is what he gave the Jews to understand — unless he was speaking with

the tongue in his cheek trying to bluff the Jews into accepting him as a man of God and by subterfuge trying to ram a new religion down their throats. No! This Messenger of God would never resort to such foul means to subvert the Religion of God. He himself fulfilled the laws. He observed the commandments of Moses, and he respected the Sabbath. At no time did a single Jew point a finger at him to say, '**why don't you fast**' or '**why don't you wash your hands before you break bread**', which charges they always levied against his disciples, but never against Jesus. This is because as a good Jew he honoured the laws of the prophets who preceded him. In short, he had created no new religion and had brought no new law like Moses and Muhammed. Is this true?" I asked the dominee, and he answered: "Yes." I said: "**THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES BUT MUHAMMED IS LIKE MOSES.**"

### HOW THEY DEPARTED

- (7) "Both Moses and Muhammed died natural deaths, but according to Christianity, Jesus was violently killed on the cross.<sup>1</sup> Is this true?" The dominee said: "Yes." I averred: "**THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES BUT MUHAMMED IS LIKE MOSES.**"

### HEAVENLY ABODE

- (8) "Moses and Muhammed both lie buried in earth, but according to you, Jesus rests in heaven. Is this true? The dominee agreed. I said: "**THEREFORE JESUS IS NOT LIKE MOSES BUT MUHAMMED IS LIKE MOSES.**"

---

1. For full exposition of this topic see Vol. II under "**CRUCIFIXION OR CRUCI-FIXION?**"

## CHAPTER THREE

### *Further Proofs*

#### ISHMAEL THE FIRST BORN

Since the dominee was helplessly agreeing with every point, I said, "Dominee, so far what I have done is to prove only one point out of the whole prophecy — that is proving the phrase '**LIKE UNTO THEE**' — 'like you' — 'like Moses.' The prophecy is much more than this single phrase which reads as follows: "**I WILL RAISE THEM UP A PROPHET FROM AMONG THEIR BRETHREN LIKE UNTO THEE ...**" The emphasis is on the words — "**From among their brethren.**" Moses and his people, the Jews, are here addressed as a racial entity, and as such their '**brethren**' undoubtedly be the Arabs. You see, the Holy Bible speaks of Abraham as the "Friend of God". Abraham had two wives — Sarah and Hagar. Hagar bore Abraham a son — **HIS FIRST-BORN** — '**... And Abram' called HIS SON'S name, which Hagar bare, Ishmael.**' (Genesis 16:15). '**And Abraham took Ishmael HIS SON ...**' (Genesis 17:23). '**And Ishmael HIS SON was thirteen years old, when he was circumcised in the flesh of his foreskin.**' (Genesis 17:25). Up to the age of THIRTEEN Ishmael was the **ONLY son** and **seed** of Abraham, when the covenant was ratified between God and Abraham. God grants Abraham another son through Sarah, named Isaac, who was very much the junior to his brother Ishmael.

#### ARABS AND JEWS

If Ishmael and Isaac are the sons of the same father Abraham, then they are brothers. **And so the children of the one are**

---

1. According to the Bible Abraham's name was **Abram** before it was changed by God to **Abraham**.

the **BRETHREN** of the children of the other. The children of Isaac are the Jews and the children of Ishmael are the Arabs — so they are **BRETHREN** to one another. The Bible affirms, '**AND HE (ISHMAEL) SHALL DWELL IN THE PRESENCE OF ALL HIS BRETHREN.**' (Genesis 16:12). '**AND HE (ISHMAEL) DIED IN THE PRESENCE OF ALL HIS BRETHREN.**' (Genesis 25:18). The children of Isaac are the brethren of the Ishmaelites. In like manner Muhammed is from among the brethren of the Israelites because he was a descendant of Ishmael the son of Abraham. This is exactly as the prophecy has it — '**FROM AMONG THEIR BRETHREN.**' (Deut. 18:18). There the prophecy distinctly mentions that the coming prophet who would be like Moses, must arise **NOT** from the '**children of Israel**' or from '**among themselves**', but from among their brethren. **MUHUMMED THEREFORE WAS FROM AMONG THEIR BRETHREN!**

### WORDS IN THE MOUTH

The prophecy proceeds further: '**... AND I WILL PUT MY WORDS INTO HIS MOUTH ...**' What does it mean when it is said '**I will put my words in your mouth**'? You see, when I asked you (the dominee) to open Deuteronomy, chapter 18, verse 18, at the beginning, and if I had asked you to read, and if you had read: would I be putting my words into your mouth? The dominee answered: "No." But, I continued: "If I were to teach you a language like Arabic about which you have no knowledge, and if I asked you to read or repeat after me what I utter i.e.

قُلْ هُوَ اللَّهُ أَحَدٌ ۝

SAY: HE IS ALLAH THE ONE AND ONLY;

اللَّهُ الصَّمَدُ ۝

ALLAH, THE ETERNAL ABSOLUTE;

لَمْ يَلِدْ ۙ وَلَمْ يُولَدْ ۝

HE BEGETTETH NOT, NOR IS HE BEGOTTEN:

وَلَمْ يَكُنْ لَهُ كُفُوًا أَحَدٌ ۝

AND THERE IS NONE LIKE UNTO HIM.

(SÚRA IKHLÁS) Holy Qur'an 112:1-4

Would I not be putting these unheard words of a foreign tongue which you utter, **into** your **mouth?**" The dominee agreed that it was indeed so. In an identical manner, I said, the words of the Holy Qur'an, the Revelation vouchsafed by the Almighty God to Muhammed were revealed.

History tells us that Muhammed was forty years of age. He was in a cave some three miles north of the City of Mecca. It was the 27th night of the Muslim month of Ramadaan. In the cave the Archangel Gabriel commands him in his mother tongue: **اقْرَأْ** which means **READ!** or **PROCLAIM!** or **RECITE!** Muhammed is terrified and in his bewilderment replies: **مَا أَنَا بِتَعَارٍ** which means: **I AM NOT LEARNED!** The angel commands him a second time with the same result. For the third time the angel continues:

اقْرَأْ بِاسْمِ رَبِّكَ الَّذِي خَلَقَ ۝

Now, Muhammed, grasps, that what was required of him was to **repeat!** to **rehearse!** And he repeats the words as they were put into his mouth:

اقْرَأْ بِاسْمِ رَبِّكَ الَّذِي خَلَقَ ۝

"READ! IN THE NAME OF THY LORD AND CHERISHER, WHO CREATED —

خَلَقَ الْإِنْسَانَ مِنْ عَلَقٍ ۝

CREATED MAN, FROM A (MERE) CLOT OF CONGEALED BLOOD:

اقْرَأْ وَرَبُّكَ الْأَكْرَمُ ۝

READ! AND THY LORD IS MOST BOUNTIFUL, —

الَّذِي عَلَّمَ بِالْقَلَمِ ۖ

HE WHO TAUGHT (THE USE OF) THE PEN, —

عَلَّمَ الْإِنْسَانَ مَا لَمْ يَعْلَمُ ۗ

TAUGHT MAN THAT WHICH HE KNEW NOT."

(SŪRA 'ALAQ) Holy Qur'an 96:1-5

These are the first five verses which were revealed to Muhammed which now occupy the beginning of the 96th chapter of the Holy Qur'an.

### THE FAITHFUL WITNESS

Immediately the angel had departed, Muhammed rushed to his home. Terrified and sweating all over he asked his beloved wife Khadija to 'cover him up!' He lay down, and she watched by him. When he had regained his composure, he explained to her what he had seen and heard. She assured him of her faith in him and that Allah would not allow such a terrible thing to happen to him. Are these the confessions of an imposter? Would imposters confess that when an angel of the Lord confronts them with a Message from on High, they get fear-stricken, terrified, and sweating all over, run home to their wives? Any critic can see that his reactions and confessions are that of an honest, sincere man, the man of Truth — '**AL-AMIN**' — THE Honest, the Upright, the Truthful.

During the next twenty-three years of his prophetic life, words were '**put into his mouth**', and he uttered them. They made an indelible impression on his heart and mind: and as the volume of the Sacred Scripture (Holy Qur'an) grew, they were recorded on palm-leaf fibre, on skins and on the shoulder-blades of animals; and in the hearts of his devoted disciples. Before his demise these words were arranged in the order in which we find them today in the Holy Qur'an.

The words (revelation) were actually **put into his mouth**, exactly as foretold in the prophecy under discussion: 'AND I WILL PUT MY WORDS IN HIS MOUTH.' (HOLY BIBLE) Deut. 18:18.

## UNLETTERED PROPHET

Muhummed's experience in the cave of Hira, later to be known as Jabal-un-Noor — **The Mountain of Light**, and his response to that first Revelation is the exact fulfilment of another Biblical prophecy. In the Book of Isaiah, chapter 29, verse 12, we read: "AND THE BOOK" (al-Kitaab, al-Qur'an — the 'Reading', the 'Recitation') "IS DELIVERED TO HIM THAT IS NOT LEARNED,"

النَّبِيِّ الْأُمِّيِّ the unlettered Prophet, Holy Qur'an 7:158)

"SAYING, READ THIS, I PRAY THEE:" (the words 'I pray thee', are not in the Hebrew manuscripts, compare with the Roman Catholics' "Douay Version" and also with the "Revised Standard Versions") "AND HE SAITH, I AM NOT LEARNED." ("I am not learned." is the exact translation of the words مَا أَنَا بِقَارِئٍ which words Muhummed uttered twice to the Holy Ghost — the **Archangel Gabriel**, when he was commanded اِقْرَأْ "READ!").

Let me quote the verse in full without a break as found in the "King James Version," or the "Authorised Version" as it is more popularly known: "AND THE BOOK IS DELIVERED TO HIM THAT IS NOT LEARNED, SAYING, READ THIS, I PRAY THEE: AND HE SAITH, I AM NOT LEARNED." (HOLY BIBLE) Isaiah 29:12.

It may be noted that there were no Arabic Bibles<sup>1</sup> in existence in the 6th Century of the Christian Era when Muhummed lived and preached! Besides, he was absolutely unlettered and unlearned. No human had ever taught him a word. His teacher was his Creator —

1. There are today Arabic Bibles in fifteen different scripts and dialects for the Arabs alone. See "The Gospels in many tongues", a reproduction, in Book 1 of Vol. II under the heading "A MUSLIM DICTIONARY OF THE BIBLE." Alternative title — "COMBAT KIT" AGAINST BIBLE THUMPERS.

وَمَا يَنْطِقُ عَنِ الْهَوَىٰ ۝

"HE DOES NOT SPEAK (AUGHT), OF (HIS OWN) DESIRE

إِنْ هُوَ إِلَّا وَحْيٌ يُوحَىٰ ۝

IT IS NO LESS THAN INSPIRATION SENT DOWN TO HIM:

عَلَّمَهُ شَدِيدُ الْقُوَىٰ ۝

HE WAS TAUGHT BY ONE MIGHTY IN POWER,"

(SŪRA NAJM) Holy Qur'an 53:3-5

Without any human learning, 'he put to shame the wisdom of the learned'."

### GRAVE WARNING

"See!" I told the dominee, "how the prophecies fit Muhammed like a glove. We do not have to stretch prophecies to justify their fulfilment in Muhammed."

The dominee replied, "All your expositions sound very well, but they are of no real consequence, because we Christians have Jesus Christ the "incarnate" God, who has redeemed us from the Bondage of Sin!"

I asked, "Not important?" God didn't think so! He went to a great deal of trouble to have His warnings recorded. God knew that there would be people like you who will flippantly, light-heartedly discount his words, so he followed up Deuteronomy 18:18 with a dire warning: the very next verse, "AND IT SHALL COME TO PASS," (it is going to happen) "THAT WHOSOEVER WILL NOT HEARKEN UNTO MY WORDS WHICH HE SHALL SPEAK IN MY NAME, I WILL REQUIRE IT OF HIM." (in the Catholic Bible the ending words are — "I will be the revenger", — I will take vengeance from him — I will take revenge!) "Does not this terrify you? **God Almighty is threatening revenge!** We shake in our pants if some hoodlums threaten us, yet you have no fear of God's warning?"



“Miracle of miracles! in the verse 19 of Deuteronomy chapter 18, we have a further fulfilment of the prophecy in Muhammed! Note the words — ‘... **MY WORDS WHICH HE SHALL SPEAK IN MY NAME,**’ In whose name is Muhammed speaking?” I opened the Holy Qur’an — Allama Yusuf Ali’s translation, at chapter 114 — ‘**Súra Nás**’, or ‘Mankind’ — the last chapter, and showed him the formula at the head of the chapter:

بِسْمِ اللّٰهِ الرَّحْمٰنِ الرَّحِیْمِ

and the meaning: “IN THE NAME OF GOD, MOST GRACIOUS, MOST MERCIFUL.” And the heading of chapter 113:

بِسْمِ اللّٰهِ الرَّحْمٰنِ الرَّحِیْمِ

and the meaning: “IN THE NAME OF GOD, MOST GRACIOUS, MOST MERCIFUL”. And every chapter downwards 112, 111, 110 ... was the same formula and the same meaning on every page, because the end **SÚRAS** (chapters) are short and take about a page each.

“And what did the prophecy demand? ‘... WHICH HE SHALL SPEAK **IN MY NAME,**’ and in whose name does Muhammed speak? ‘**IN THE NAME OF GOD, MOST GRACIOUS, MOST MERCIFUL.**’ The Prophecy is being fulfilled in Muhammed to the letter!

“Every chapter of the Holy Qur’an except the 9th begin with the formula

بِسْمِ اللّٰهِ الرَّحْمٰنِ الرَّحِیْمِ IN THE NAME OF GOD, MOST

GRACIOUS, MOST MERCIFUL.’ The Muslim begins his every lawful act with the Holy formula. But the Christian begins: “**In the name of the Father, son and holy ghost.**”

Concerning Deuteronomy chapter eighteen, I have given you more than 15 reasons as to how this prophecy refers to Muhammed and **NOT** to Jesus.

---

1. The Christian theologians are ignorant of even the “name of God. Because “God” is not a name, and “Father” is also not a name. Write for “**WHAT’S HIS NAME?**” from the I.P.C.I.

## CHAPTER FOUR

# *New Testament Also Confirms*

### **BAPTIST CONTRADICTS JESUS**

In New Testament times, we find that the Jews were still expecting the fulfilment of the prophecy of 'ONE LIKE MOSES'; refer John 1:19-25. When Jesus claimed to be the Messiah of the Jews, the Jews began to enquire as to where was Elias? The Jews had a parallel prophecy that before the coming of the Messiah, Elias must come first in his second coming. Jesus confirms this Jewish belief:

*"... ELIAS TRULY SHALL FIRST COME, AND RESTORE ALL THINGS. BUT I SAY UNTO YOU, THAT ELIAS IS COME ALREADY, AND THEY KNEW HIM NOT, ... THEN THE DISCIPLES UNDERSTOOD THAT **HE SPAKE UNTO THEM OF JOHN THE BAPTIST.**" (HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 17:11-13.*

According to the New Testament the Jews were not the ones to swallow the words of any would-be Messiah. In their investigations they underwent intense difficulties in order to find their true Messiah. And this the Gospel of John confirms: *"AND THIS IS THE RE(ORD OF JOHN," (the Baptist) "WHEN THE JEWS SENT PRIESTS AND LEVITES FROM JERUSALEM TO ASK HIM, WHO ART THOU? AND HE CONFESSED AND DENIED NOT; BUT CONFESSED, I AM NOT THE CHRIST." (This was only natural because there can't be two Messiahs<sup>1</sup> at the same time. If Jesus was the Christ then John couldn't be the Christ!)" "AND THEY ASKED HIM, WHAT THEN? ART THOU ELIAS? AND HE SAITH, I AM NOT." (Here **John the Baptist** contradicts Jesus! Jesus says that John is "Elias" and John denies that he is what Jesus ascribes him to be. One of the **TWO** (Jesus or John), God*

---

1. The Jews were expecting a single Messiah not two.

forbid! is definitely not speaking the **TRUTH!** On the testimony of Jesus himself, **John the Baptist** was the greatest of the Israelite prophets: "*VERILY I SAY UNTO YOU, AMONG THEM THAT ARE BORN OF WOMEN THERE HAS NOT RISEN A GREATER THAN JOHN THE BAPTIST: ...*" (**HOLY BIBLE**) *Matthew 11:11.*

We Muslims know John the Baptist as Hazrut **YAHYAA** Alai-his-salaam (peace be upon him). We revere him as a true prophet of Allah. The Holy Prophet Jesus known to us as Hazrut **ISAA** Alai-his-salaam (peace be upon him), is also esteemed as one of the mightiest messengers of the Almighty. How can we Muslims impute lies to either of them? We leave this problem between Jesus and John for the Christians to solve, for their "sacred scriptures" abound in discrepancies which they have been glossing over as the "**dark sayings of Jesus**".<sup>1</sup> We Muslims are really interested in the last question posed to **John the Baptist** by the Jewish elite — "*ART THOU THAT PROPHET? AND HE ANSWERED, NO.*" (**HOLY BIBLE**) *John 1:21.*

### THREE QUESTIONS!

Please note that three different and distinct questions were posed to **John the Baptist** and to which he gave three emphatic "**NO's**" as answers. To recapitulate:—

- (1) Art thou the Christ?
- (2) Art thou Elias?
- (3) Art thou that prophet?

But the learned men of Christendom somehow only see two questions implied here. To make doubly clear that the Jews definitely had T-H-R-E-E separate prophecies in their minds when they were interrogating **John the Baptist**, let us read the remonstrance of the Jews in the verses following —

---

1. See the "**TIMES**" Magazine December 30th, 1974, article "**How true is the Bible?**" And write for your free copy of "50,000 Errors in the Bible?" — a reproduction from the Christian Magazine "**AWAKE!**" September 8, 1957.

*"AND THEY ASKED HIM, AND SAID UNTO HIM, WHY BAPTIZEST THOU THEN, IF THOU BE*

- (a) NOT THAT CHRIST,*
- (b) NOR ELIAS,*
- (c) NEITHER THAT PROPHET?"*

*(HOLY BIBLE) John 1:25*

The Jews were waiting for the fulfilment of **THREE** distinct prophecies: **One**, the coming of CHRIST. **Two**, the coming of ELIAS, and **Three**, the coming of THAT PROPHET.

### **"THAT PROPHET"**

If we look up any Bible which has a concordance or cross-references, then we will find in the marginal note where the words "**the prophet**", or "**that prophet**" occur in John 1:25, that these words refer to the prophecy of Deuteronomy 18:15 and 18. And that '**that prophet**' — '**the prophet like Moses**' — "LIKE UNTO THEE", we have proved through overwhelming evidence that he was MUHUMMED and **NOT** Jesus!

We Muslims are not denying that Jesus was the "Messiah", which word is translated as "Christ".<sup>1</sup> We are not contesting the "thousand and one prophecies" which the Christians claim abound in the Old Testament foretelling the coming of the Messiah. What we say is that Deuteronomy 18:18 does **NOT** refer to Jesus Christ but it is an explicit prophecy about the Holy Prophet **MUHUMMED!**"

The dominee, very politely parted with me by saying that it was a very interesting discussion and he would like me very much to come one day and address his congregation on the subject. A decade and half has passed since then but I am still awaiting that privilege.

---

1. How the word Messiah was transmuted to Christ? Refer Part 2 following.

I believe the dominee was sincere when he made the offer, but prejudices die hard and who would like to lose his sheep?

## THE ACID TEST

To the lambs of Christ I say, why not apply that acid test which the Master himself wanted you to apply to any would be claimant to prophethood? He had said: **“BY THEIR FRUITS YE SHALL KNOW THEM. DO MEN GATHER GRAPES FROM THE THORNS, OR FIGS FROM THE THISTLES? EVERY GOOD TREE WILL BEAR GOOD FRUIT AND EVERY EVIL TREE WILL BEAR EVIL FRUIT ... BY THEIR FRUITS YE SHALL KNOW THEM.**

*(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 7:16-20.*

Why are you afraid to apply this test to the teachings of Muhummed? You will find in the **Last** Testament of God — **the Holy Qur'an** — the true fulfilment of the teachings of Moses and Jesus which will bring to the world the much-needed peace and happiness. **“IF A MAN LIKE MOHAMED WERE TO ASSUME THE DICTATORSHIP OF THE MODERN WORLD, HE WOULD SUCCEED IN SOLVING ITS PROBLEMS THAT WOULD BRING IT THE MUCH NEEDED PEACE AND HAPPINESS.”**

*(George Bernard Shaw)*

## THE GREATEST!

The Weekly News magazine “TIME” dated July 15, 1974, carried a selection of opinions by various historians, writers, military men, businessmen and others on the subject: **“Who Were History's Great Leaders?”** Some said that it was Hitler; others said — Gandhi, Buddha, Lincoln and the like. But Jules Masserman, a United States psychoanalyst put the standards straight by giving the correct criteria wherewith to judge. He said:

**“LEADERS MUST FULFIL THREE FUNCTIONS:—**

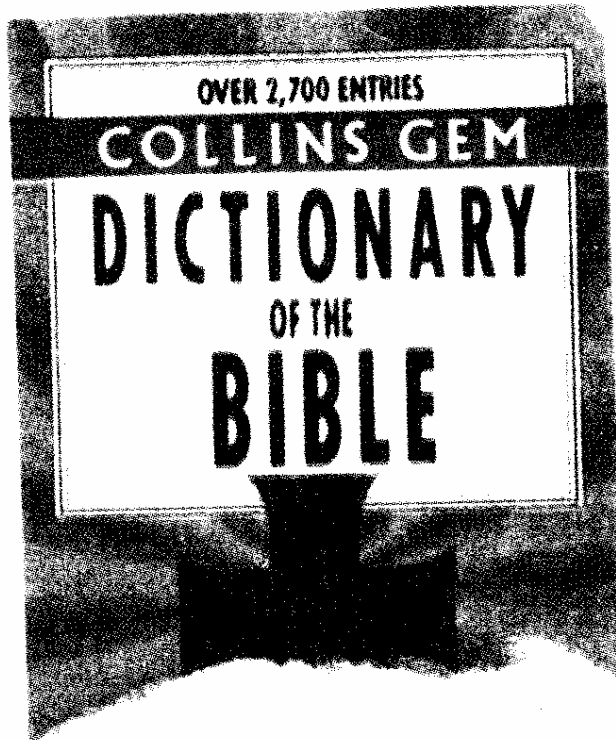
- (1) Provide for the well-being of the led,
- (2) Provide a social organization in which people feel relatively secure, and
- (3) Provide them with one set of beliefs.”

With the above three criteria he searches history and analyses — Hitler, Pasteur, Caesar, Moses, Confucius and the lot, and ultimately concludes:—

“PEOPLE LIKE PASTEUR AND SALK ARE LEADERS IN THE FIRST SENSE. PEOPLE LIKE GANDHI AND CONFUCIUS, ON ONE HAND, AND ALEXANDER, CAESAR AND HITLER ON THE OTHER, ARE LEADERS IN THE SECOND AND PERHAPS THE THIRD SENSE. JESUS AND BUDDHA BELONG IN THE THIRD CATEGORY ALONE. **PERHAPS THE GREATEST LEADER OF ALL TIMES WAS MOHAMMED, WHO COMBINED ALL THREE FUNCTIONS.** To a lesser degree, **MOSES DID THE SAME.**”

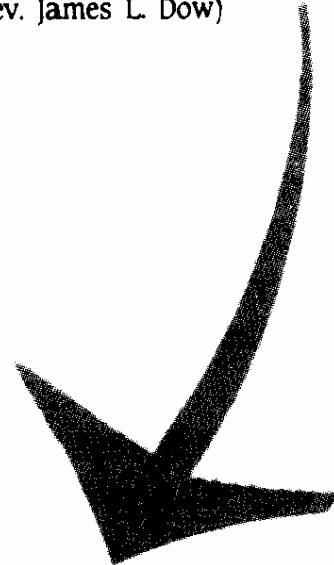
According to the objective standards set by the Professor of the Chicago University, whom I believe to be Jewish, — JESUS and BUDDHA are nowhere in the picture of the “**Great Leaders of Mankind**”, but by a queer coincidence **groups** Moses and Muhammed **together** thus adding further weight to the argument that JESUS is not like MOSES, but MUHUMMED is like MOSES: *Deut. 18:18 “LIKE UNTO THEE” — Like Moses!*

Reverend James L. Dow in **Collins Dictionary of the Bible** gives further proof, that JESUS is not like MOSES, but MUHUMMED is like MOSES: “AS A STATESMAN AND LAWGIVER MOSES IS THE CREATOR OF THE JEWISH PEOPLE. HE FOUND A LOOSE CONGLOMERATION OF SEMITIC PEOPLE, NONE OF . . . . .



“ . . . . . THE ONLY MAN OF HISTORY WHO CAN BE COMPARED EVEN REMOTELY TO HIM IS MAHOMET.”

(Rev. James L. Dow)



The only man of hist. who can be compared even remotely to him is Mahomet.

In conclusion, I end with a quotation of a Christian Reverend the commentator of the Bible, followed by that of his Master:

“THE ULTIMATE CRITERION OF A TRUE PROPHET IS THE MORAL CHARACTER OF HIS TEACHINGS.”

(Prof. Dummelow.)

“BY THEIR FRUITS YE SHALL KNOW THEM.”

(Jesus Christ)

## ***COME LET US REASON TOGETHER!***

**SAY: "O PEOPLE OF THE BOOK!  
COME TO COMMON TERMS AS BETWEEN US AND YOU:  
THAT WE WORSHIP NONE BUT GOD;  
THAT WE ASSOCIATE NO PARTNERS WITH HIM;  
THAT WE ERECT NOT, FROM AMONG OURSELVES,  
LORDS AND PATRONS OTHER THAN GOD."  
IF THEN THEY TURN BACK,  
SAY: "BEAR WITNESS THAT WE (AT LEAST)  
ARE MUSLIMS (BOWING TO GOD'S WILL)."**

*(SÚRA AL-I-'IMRÁN) Holy Qur'an 3:64*

**"PEOPLE OF THE BOOK"** is the respectful title given to the Jews and the Christians in the Holy Qur'an. The Muslim is here commanded to invite — **"O People of the Book!"** — O Learned People! O People who claim to be the recipients of Divine Revelation, of a Holy Scripture; let us gather together onto a common platform — **"that we worship none but God"**, because none but God is worthy of worship, not because *"THE LORD THY GOD IS A JEALOUS GOD VISITING THE INQUITY OF THE FATHERS UPON THE CHILDREN UNTO THE THIRD AND FOURTH GENERATION OF THEM THAT HATE ME."* (Exodus 20:5). But because He is our Lord and Cherisher, our Sustainer and Evolver, worthy of all praise, prayer and devotion.

In the abstract the Jews and the Christians would agree to all the three propositions contained in this Qur'anic verse. In practice they fail. Apart from doctrinal lapses from the unity of the One True God, (**ALLAH subhanahu wa ta-ala**) there is the question of a consecrated Priesthood (among the Jews it was hereditary also), as if a mere human being — **Cohen**, or **Pope**, or **Priest**, or **Brahman**, — could claim superiority apart from his



learning and the purity of his life, or could stand between man and God in some special sense. **ISLAM DOES NOT RECOGNISE PRIESTHOOD!**

The Creed of Islam is given to us here in a nutshell:

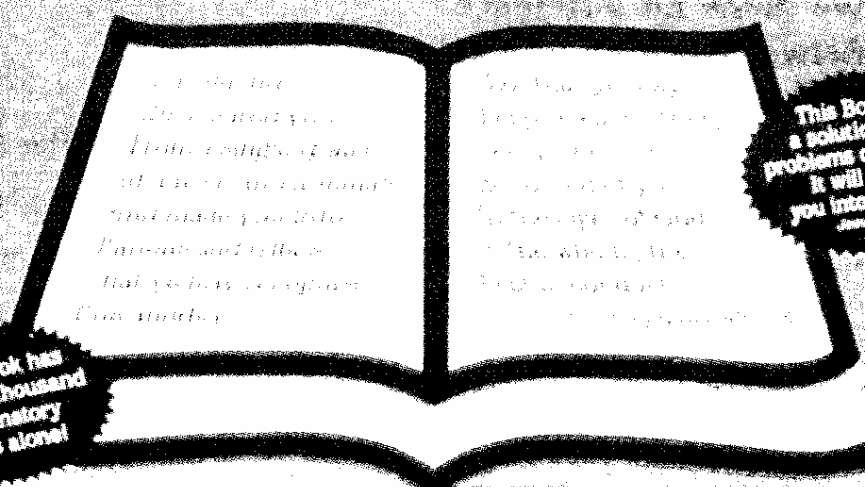
**Say ye: "We believe in Allah,  
And the revelation given to us,  
And to Abraham, Isma'il, Isaac,  
Jacob, and the Tribes,  
And that given to Moses and Jesus  
And that given to (all)  
Prophets from their Lord:  
We make no difference  
Between one and another of them:  
And we bow to Allah (in Islam)."**

*(SÚRA BAQARA) Holy Qur'an 2:136.*

The Muslim position is clear. The Muslim does not claim to have a religion peculiar to himself. Islam is not a sect or an ethnic religion. In its view all religions are one, for the Truth is one. **IT WAS THE SAME RELIGION PREACHED BY ALL THE EARLIER PROPHETS.** (Holy Qur'an 42:13). It was the truth taught by all the inspired Books. In essence it amounts to a consciousness of the Will and Plan of God and a joyful submission to that Will and Plan. **IF ANYONE WANTS A RELIGION OTHER THAN THAT, HE IS FALSE TO HIS OWN NATURE, AS HE IS FALSE TO GOD'S WILL AND PLAN.** Such a one cannot expect guidance, for he has deliberately renounced guidance.

Establish the "KINGDOM OF GOD" on earth  
 as prayed for by Jesus (Matthew 6:10)

# THE FUTURE WORLD CONSTITUTION



**This Book has a solution to the problems of mankind. It will "Guide you into all truth" Jesus Christ**

**This Book has over six thousand explanatory notes alone!**

You can now own this Encyclopedia of Islam. The Future World Constitution, consisting of 1824 pages for only £6 UK, \$6 USA, \$6 BSA and \$13 Middle East



**ISLAMIC PROPAGATION CENTRE INTERNATIONAL**  
 144 Spring Street, Dartford, Kent, DA10 1BA  
 Telephone: (0473 41) 800 (1240) Telex: 520010000000000000  
 Telex: 5207 411 3474 10326

**PLEASE SEND ME 47 POUNDS PER COPY OF THIS "FUTURE WORLD CONSTITUTION"**

Name: \_\_\_\_\_  
 Address: \_\_\_\_\_  
 City: \_\_\_\_\_  
 Country: \_\_\_\_\_  
 Telephone: \_\_\_\_\_

**PLEASE DON'T TEAR THIS COUPON**

**"FUTURE WORLD CONSTITUTION"**  
 Published by Islamic Propagation Centre International, 144 Spring Street, Dartford, Kent, DA10 1BA, England

PART TWO

# Muhammad

(PEACE BE UPON HIM)



THE NATURAL  
SUCCESSOR TO

# Christ

(PEACE BE UPON HIM)

BY AHMED DEEDAT

## CHAPTER ONE

### *The Final Messenger*

“... AND GIVING GLAD TIDINGS  
OF A MESSENGER  
TO COME AFTER ME,  
WHOSE NAME SHALL BE AHMED.”

وَمُبَشِّرًا بِرَسُولٍ يَأْتِي

مِنْ بَعْدِي

اسْمُهُ أَحْمَدٌ ط

(SÚRA ŞAFF) Holy Qur'an 61:6'

### MULTI-FACETED SUCCESSION

Successions are of many kinds like the birthright of the “**first-born**” as in Jewish law. Or the ascending of the eldest son or daughter to the kingly throne. Or by election, to select a candidate by the vote of the majority. Or Theologically, an appointment by Divine Decree of God's chosen Messengers. Like the call of Abraham, Moses, Jesus or Muhammed (May the Peace and Blessings of God be upon them all) who were appointed or “**anointed**”<sup>2</sup> in consecration to their office.

Muhummed's (pbuh) succession to Jesus Christ (pbuh) is multi-faceted.

1. Chronologically, in history as a sequence of event in time.
2. By being Chosen<sup>3</sup> by God.
3. In the fulfilment of the prophecies of his predecessors, and last but not least ...

- 
1. In this book as well as in my other publications, I quote extensively from the Arabic Qur'an not only for blessings or adornment. It presents a golden opportunity for my learned brethren to memorize these quotations with their meanings and to share their knowledge with others.
  2. “**ANOINTED:**” or appointed; Hebrew word “*Messiah*.” See my book “**Christ in Islam**,” for fuller explanation.
  3. “**CHOSEN:**” Arabic — **Mustafa**. A title of the Prophet of Islam.

4. By bringing the Guidance of God to perfection -

**“For he will Guide you into all Truth.”** *said, Jesus Christ*

## HISTORICALLY

The Holy Prophet Moses preceded Jesus Christ (pbuh) by some 1300 years and Muhammed (pbuh) succeeded to that high office vacated by Jesus some six centuries later.

It was the 12 of **Rabi I.**, in the year of the Elephant, or the 29th of August 570 of the Christian Era<sup>1</sup> that Muhammed the Praiseworthy, to whom all praise is due, was born in the sacred city of Makkah in pagan Arabia. His people the Quraish remembered the year of his birth as the **“Era of the Elephant”**, because just two months before the birth of the child Abraha al-Ashram, the Abyssinian viceroy of Yemen had attacked the sacred sanctuary at Makkah at the head of his troops riding a huge African elephant. A terrifying sight never to be erased from their memory and a still more shocking end to the invasion — the miraculous destruction of Abraha and his army as recorded in **Súra Fíl** or the Elephant —

**Seest thou not how thy Lord dealt  
with the Companions of the  
Elephant?**

**Did He not make their treacherous  
plan go astray?**

**And He sent against them  
flights of Birds,**

**Striking them with stones  
of baked clay.**

**Then did He make them like an  
empty field of stalks and straw,  
(of which the corn) has been  
eaten up.**

**(SÚRA FÍL) Holy Qur'an: 105:1-5<sup>2</sup>**

- 
1. Always use A.C. (After Christ) or C.E. (Christian Era) and not A.D. as Muslims often do unthinkingly.
  2. Consult Yusuf Ali's commentary on these verses. We will help you to own this encyclopaedia. See inside back cover for a most tempting offer.

## GOD'S OWN STANDARDS

God Almighty chooses His Own Messengers. He uses His Own Standards although we may not always understand the wisdom of it. Paul cries the anomaly -

***For the Jews require a sign***  
 (miracles to convince) ***and the***  
***Greeks seek after wisdom:***

(HOLY BIBLE) 1 Corinthians 1: 22

But worldly-wise as Paul was, he found that his wisdom was “**a stumbling-block**” to the Jews and “**foolishness**” to the Greeks.

God chose Moses (pbuh) a man who was a fugitive from justice and a stutterer. The Holy Bible calls him a man with “**uncircumcised lips.**” (Exodus 6: 12).

Despite his difficulties when commissioned to confront Pharaoh, the greatest tyrant of the age, Moses (pbuh) cries out to the God of Mercy —

(Moses) said: “O my Lord!  
 expand for me my breast;”<sup>1</sup>  
 Make my task easy for me;  
 “And remove the impediment from  
 my speech,  
 “So that they may understand what  
 I have to say:  
 “And give me a Minister from  
 my family,  
 “Aaron, my brother;  
 “Add to my strength through him,  
 “And make him share my task:  
 “That we may celebrate Thy praise  
 without stint,

---

<sup>1</sup> Meaning - give me courage, make me bold.

**“And remember Thee without stint:**

**“For Thou art He that (ever) regardeth us.  
(God) said: “Granted is thy  
prayer, O Moses!”**

(SÚRA TÁ-HÁ) Holy Qur'an 20: 25-36

### WHY “SUPPOSED”?

Then comes Jesus (pbuh) who was chosen by God. According to Christian teachings, he was a carpenter and the son of a carpenter, with a dubious genealogy as recorded in the Gospels —

***And Jesus himself began to be  
about thirty years of age, being  
(as was supposed) the son of  
Joseph ...***

(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 3: 23

Acknowledged today by a thousand million Muslims that Jesus Christ (pbuh) was born miraculously — without any male intervention; the followers of Christ created two separate genealogies for a man who had no genealogy. Between the Gospels of Matthew and Luke they give this mighty Messenger of God sixty-six fathers and grandfathers. And of these two separate lists only one name is common to these two lists and that is of Joseph the Carpenter, who does not fit in anywhere because, as Luke records above, he was only the “**SUPPOSED**” father of Jesus.<sup>2</sup>

### EVEN BISHOPS DOUBT

In a “SHOCK SURVEY OF ANGLICAN BISHOPS” in June 1984 it was revealed that 31 of their 39 Bishops thought that **“Christ’s miracles, the virgin birth and the resurrection might not have happened exactly as described in the Bible.”**

- 
- 1 The words you see here in brackets are the exact replica from the King James and the Roman Catholic Versions of the phrase “(as was supposed)” in brackets and all.
- 2 Consult — **“Is the Bible God’s Word?” VOL. II PART 2** for a fuller explanation of these anomalies.

In deference to the Bishops of the Church of England (the "Anglicans") the Church of Scotland most respectfully omitted any reference to the "Virgin Birth" from its most recent publication "A STATEMENT OF FAITH." The topic of the miraculous conception of Jesus (pbuh) is getting increasingly hotter for Western Christianity to handle as you see here:

## The Daily News

**DURIAN, TUESDAY, MAY 22, 1980**

### Virgin Birth omitted by Church of Scotland

**LONDON:** Direct reference to the Virgin Birth has been omitted from the Church of Scotland's new publication, *A Statement of Faith*, to "avoid potential division among the church's members".

The Rev David Beckett, secretary of the special working party that produced the publication, said the omission would move the Church of Scotland away from traditional Anglo-Catholic theology and towards the more liberal faction of the Church of England championed by the Bishop of Durham, David Jenkins.

The new document was debated by the Church of Scotland's annual General Assembly in Edinburgh. Designed to express the Westminster Confession, written in the 1640s, in a more up-to-date language, the church's Panel on Doctrine also took the opportunity to tailor the text on the Virgin Birth.

Said Mr Beckett: "We wanted to come up with a statement that was inclusive rather than divisive. One that would be welcomed by the whole church, not just those who accept the Virgin Birth as a historical fact, but also by those who regard it as mainly pictorial theology."

Leading churchmen claim the Westminster Confession has not been replaced, merely summarised and updated.  
— Family service



## AND GOD CHOSE JESUS (PBUH)

Jesus Christ (pbuh) though spiritually rich in wisdom, light and truth; philosophised light-heartedly about the beggars of the world, when he said:

***There came unto him (Jesus) a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head ...***

***But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste?***

***For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.***

***... he (Jesus) said unto them ... For ye have the poor always with you, but (poor) me ye have not always.***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Matthew 26: 7-11

But when destitution stared him in the face, when poverty, penury and need touched his own dear self; he cried pathetically:

***And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the son of man (referring to himself) hath not where to lay his head.***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Matthew 8: 20 also repeated in Luke 9: 58

And yet God chose him (Jesus pbuh): Unique and inscrutable are Thy ways O Lord!

## M-U-S-T-A-F-A THE CHOSEN ONE

It is He Who sent amongst the  
unlettered a messenger from  
among themselves, to rehearse to  
them His Signs, to sanctify  
them, and to instruct them in  
Scripture and Wisdom, —  
although they had been, before,  
in manifest error;-

(SÚRA JUMÚA) Holy Qur'an 62: 2

Amazing as it may seem, I am not amazed anymore! For this is His way — He chooses an *Ummi*<sup>1</sup> non-literate Prophet for an *Ummi* illiterate nation.

“A POOR SHEPHERD PEOPLE, ROAMING UNNOTICED IN ITS DESERTS SINCE THE CREATION OF THE WORLD: A HERO-PROPHET WAS SENT DOWN TO THEM WITH A WORD THEY COULD BELIEVE: SEE, THE UNNOTICED BECOMES WORLD-NOTABLE, THE SMALL HAS GROWN WORLD-GREAT; WITHIN ONE CENTURY AFTERWARDS, ARABIA IS AT GRENADA (Spain) ON THIS HAND, AT DELHI (India) ON THAT; — GLANCING IN VALOUR AND SPLENDOUR AND THE LIGHT OF GENIUS, ARABIA SHINES THROUGH LONG AGES OVER A GREAT SECTION OF THE WORLD. BELIEF IS GREAT, LIFE-GIVING. THE HISTORY OF A NATION BECOMES FRUITFUL, SOUL ELEVATING, GREAT, SO SOON AS IT BELIEVES. THESE ARABS, THE MAN MAHOMET, AND THAT ONE CENTURY, — IS IT NOT AS IF A SPARK HAD FALLEN, ONE SPARK, ON A WORLD OF WHAT SEEMED BLACK UNNOTICEABLE SAND; BUT LO, THE SAND PROVES EXPLOSIVE POWDER, BLAZES HEAVEN HIGH FROM DELHI TO GRENADA! I SAID, THE

---

1. *UMMI* : “Unlettered.” “One other circumstance we must not forget: that he had no school-learning; of the thing we call school-learning; none at all.” Thomas Carlyle in his “*HEROES AND HERO-WORSHIP*”

GREAT MAN WAS ALWAYS AS LIGHTNING OUT OF HEAVEN;  
THE REST OF MEN WAITED FOR HIM LIKE FUEL, AND THEN  
THEY TOO WOULD FLAME."

Thus concluded the speech of Thomas Carlyle, one of the  
greatest thinkers of the past century. It was Friday, the 8th of  
May 1840. His theme — "**The Hero as Prophet.**" His  
audience: were Anglicans — English Christians.

### THE CHOSEN PEOPLE

God chooses His Messengers and God chooses His People. In the  
realm of the Spirit no nation was as favoured as the Jews and  
yet Moses (pbuh) is made to bewail against his own people —

***Ye have been rebellious against the  
Lord from the day I knew you.***

(HOLY BIBLE) Deutronomy 9: 24

In this last will and testament of Moses (pbuh) the Israelites  
frustrate their "meek and gentle" Messenger who is forced to rail  
against their continual stubborn resistance and arrogant attitudes  
to God's guidance —

***For I knew thy rebellion, and thy  
stiff neck: behold, while I am yet  
alive with you this day, ye have  
been rebellious against the lord;  
and how much more after my death?***

(HOLY BIBLE) Deutronomy 31: 27

Alas how true! I am not going to philosophise on God's choice.  
But in the very next chapter the fire of God's anger is  
kindled to a blaze and He decries the Jews -

***They have moved me to jealousy  
with that which is not God; they  
(the Jews) have provoked me to  
anger with their vanities:  
and I will move them to jealousy***

*with those which are Not A  
People; I will provoke them to  
anger with a Foolish Nation.'*

(HOLY BIBLE) Deutronomy 32: 21

## JEW'S SUBSTITUTED

Anyone with a modicum of Scriptural knowledge will be able to guess who in the eyes of these arrogant, racist Jews is “**not-a-people**” — a nonentity and ‘**a foolish nation**’ if not their Ishmaelite cousins — the Arabs who in the words of Thomas Carlyle have been “**ROAMING UNNOTICED IN ITS DESERTS SINCE THE CREATION OF THE WORLD.**”!<sup>1</sup>

**THE ARABS.** Alexander the Great passed them by; the Persians passed them by; the Egyptians passed them by; and the Romans passed them by. It would have been an absolute liability for any nation to conquer and colonise them. But the Creator did not pass them by. He picked them up from the depths of darkness and transformed them into torchbearers of light and learning to the world. “**I will move them** (the Jews) **to jealousy.**”<sup>2</sup> This jealousy is a cultivated sickness. Remember, Sarah and Hagar the two wives of Abraham (pbuh) — the Friend of God. The jealousy of Sarah was bequeathed to her children and on to nations and tribes yet unborn.

Not so long ago I read a book on the discovery of medicine written by a Jewish medical man. I can unfortunately not remember the name of the author and failed to retrace the book. However, the wordings of the tribute paid by this Jewish author to his Semitic (Arab) cousins have made an indelible impression on my mind. And I quote from memory:

---

1 Emphasis are mine

2 If the Romans or the Greeks had displaced the Jews as the “Chosen of God” then the envy would not have been as acute or as intolerable to the Jews.

**“GOATHERDS AND CAMEL DRIVERS SITTING ON THE THRONE OF THE CAESARS.”**

Full of spite, venom and sarcasm, but how true! This is what God did and always does. He honours whom He wills. This is what He does to show His Mighty Hand (Power)!

**IF YE TURN BACK (FROM THE PATH),**

وَإِنْ تَوَلَّوْا

**HE WILL SUBSTITUTE IN YOUR STEAD,  
ANOTHER PEOPLE;**

يَسْتَبْدِلُ قَوْمًا غَيْرَكُمْ

**THEN THEY WOULD NOT  
BE LIKE YOU!**

ثُمَّ لَا يَكُونُوا أَمْثَالَكُمْ

(SŪRA MUHAMMAD) Holy Qur'an 47: 38'

IT IS SURELY ONE OF THE GREATEST MIRACLES OF HISTORY THAT FROM THE BACKWATER OF ARABIA THERE SHOULD HAVE EXPLODED A GROUP OF MEN, COMPANIONS OF A PROPHET, WHO WITHIN THE SPACE OF A FEW BRIEF DECADES WERE ABLE TO CREATE A MAGNIFICENT CIVILISATION EXTENDING FROM THE PYRENEES TO THE GATES OF CHINA

Abdul Wadod Shalabi in "Islam Religion of Life."

## THE LAST WARNING

The foregoing is the exact fulfilment of Jesus Christ's (pbuh), (the last of the great Jewish prophets) own prediction of the displacement of the Jewish race in the spiritual guidance of man. In the words of the Master himself —

**Therefore I say unto you (Jews),  
The kingdom of God<sup>2</sup> shall be  
taken away from you (Jews), and  
shall be given to a nation bringing  
forth the fruits thereof.**

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 21: 43

- 
1. With this book still in your hands, please memorize the Arabic words with their meaning phrase by phrase. For its commentary obtain your own volume of the Holy Qur'an, obtainable from the I.P.C.I.
  2. "Kingdom of God:" The honour, the privilege of being God's chosen people to guide mankind - "Ye (Jews) shall be unto me (God Almighty) a kingdom of priests, and a holy nation." (Exodus 19: 6). This grand commission ended with Jesus (pbuh).

## CHAPTER TWO

### *In The Words Of The Master*

#### JUST ONE FULL PROPHECY<sup>1</sup>

**AND REMEMBER, JESUS,  
THE SON OF MARY, SAID:**

**“O CHILDREN OF ISRAEL!  
I AM THE MESSENGER OF  
GOD (SENT) TO YOU,**

**CONFIRMING THE LAW  
(WHICH CAME) BEFORE ME,**

**AND GIVING GLAD TIDINGS OF  
A MESSENGER  
TO COME AFTER ME,**

**WHOSE NAME SHALL BE AHMED.”**

وَإِذْ قَالَ عِيسَى ابْنُ مَرْيَمَ

يَبْنِي إِسْرَائِيلَ إِنِّي رَسُولُ  
اللَّهِ إِلَيْكُمْ

مُصَدِّقًا لِمَا بَيْنَ يَدَيَّ مِنَ التَّوْرَةِ

وَمُبَشِّرًا بِرَسُولٍ يَأْتِي مِنْ بَعْدِي

اسْمُهُ أَحْمَدٌ ط

(SÚRA SAFF) Holy Qur'an 61: 6

#### A COMMON TRAIT

Just a cursory glance, a rapid reading, a hurried look at the previous verse will satisfy the Muslim that Jesus Christ (pbuh) did indeed prophesy the advent of Muhammed (pbuh), the Messenger of God. The Muslim is puzzled at the stubbornness, vanity and tunnel vision of the Christian which prevents him from seeing his own inner light and listening to his conscience so as not to recognise the obvious.

The Christian in turn is puzzled at the hardhearted obstinacy of the Jews, a nation endowed with such creative genius, which,

---

1. This section only expounds a single prophecy from the New Testament. Refer to Part 1 of this volume – “**What the Bible says about Muhammed (pbuh)**” for prophecies from the Old Testament.

despite a thousand and one prophecies in their own Bible (the Old Testament) regarding the coming of the “**Messiah**,” are totally incapable of recognising their lord and “**saviour**.” Are they both somewhat blind?

No! Neither the Jews nor the Christians are necessarily imperious to truth. The trouble is that we **all** pick up our prejudices from childhood. The Americans call it being “**programmed**.”

Simply reading the verses or listening to lectures and getting that smug satisfaction of being in the know will not help spreading the truth. This is the age of the “**EVERYMAN**.”<sup>1</sup> The age of the professionals is over. It is the duty of every Muslim — man, woman or child to get involved. Each according to his or her capacity. Memorize the above verse with its meaning as well as the quotations preceding and those that follow so that you may feel equipped to share our **Deen** with non-Muslims. There are no short cuts to **Da’wah** (propagation)!

### **PRODUCE YOUR PROOF!**

Perhaps this is not the first time you are reading or might have heard about the prophecies in the Jewish and Christian Scriptures regarding the advent of the last and final Messenger of God — Muhammed (pbuh) the Mercy unto all mankind. And perhaps you have at times made some half-hearted and skimpy efforts at suggesting that our **Nabi-e-Kareem** was prophesied in the Holy Bible. But when proof was demanded, you simply not able to, because you had not done any homework. Remember, there is no substitute for hard work. I believe what I say and I practise what I preach. **Insha-Allah!**

---

1. “**EVERYMAN**:” is a new series of books to equip every man or woman to learn an art or trade such as - plumbing, pottery, woodwork, etc by studying at home.

I have personally memorized various selections from the Bible in a dozen different languages, including Arabic and Hebrew. Not for show but because of the openings these snippets of religion create for me in propagating our faith to various language groups. Languages are the keys to people's hearts.

### **IN THE LAND OF THE PHARAOHS**

Notwithstanding many assurances, I got stranded in Cairo for lack of an entry visa.<sup>1</sup> A kind gentleman from the Al-Azhar, who was trying to help us obtain the relevant documents, got frustrated with the delay and in order to attend to his Friday prayers, handed me and my son Yousuf to a young Egyptian lady, well-groomed in Western attire.

After much effort and time she returned to us with the good news. "Forty dollars," she said. I asked, "For what?" "The visas," she answered. Twenty dollars for me and twenty for my son. "But I am a guest of the Government," I insisted. She said that she knew nothing about it, so I smiled and paid.

From the lady's speech and deportment, I had sensed that she was well-educated and a lady of culture, so undauntedly I asked her again what her name was in my broken Arabic. However, her name was too novel for me to remember. I asked her further: "Are you a Muslim?" She said, "No, I am an Egyptian Christian." This was the opening I was waiting for. I began, "Do you know that before Jesus Christ departed from this world, he told his disciples," and I started to quote, now in meticulous Arabic, a verse from the Arabic Bible, (see next page), which I had memorized for opportunities just like this particular one.

---

1. The Muslims of South Africa have a very rough time in all the O.A.U. and Arab countries. The poor ignorant customs officers do not know the difference between the oppressors and the oppressed of my country.



لَكِنِّي أَقُولُ لَكُمْ الْحَقَّ  
 إِنَّهُ خَيْرٌ لَّكُمْ أَنْ أُنْطَلِقَ.  
 لِأَنَّهُ إِنْ لَمْ أُنْطَلِقْ لَا يَأْتِيكُمْ الْمُعَزِّبُ.  
 وَلَكِنْ إِنْ دَعَيْتُ أَرْسَلُهُ إِلَيْكُمْ. *إنجيل يوحنا 17*

### THE TRANSLATION

I had no need to translate the above Arabic to her, because as an Arab she understood the verse perfectly. But for the benefit of those who do not know Arabic I give you its exact equivalent from the English Bible, which I had also taken the trouble to memorize in my spare time. You can create that spare time also if you have true love for Allah's **Deen** and wish to share it with others.

***Nevertheless, I tell you the truth;  
 it is expedient for you that I go  
 away: for if I go not away, the  
 Comforter will not come unto  
 you; but if I depart, I will send  
 him unto you.***

(HOLY BIBLE) John 16: 7

### “AL-MOOUZZI” THE COMFORTER

I implore my bretheren who can read the Arabic quotation to memorize it together with the English translation above and create opportunities for using it. Learn the verses in conjunction

with other languages that you know. There will be a definite all-round improvement in your fluency, and proficiency in preaching Islam to other people.

The word “**Comforter**” above is **الْمُرْتَبِي** “*al-Moouzzi*” in Arabic. I asked the lady, “Who is the **الْمُرْتَبِي** “*al-Moouzzi*” of this prophecy?” She said, “I do not know.” She was honest. She did not beat around the bush. So I said that we are told in the Holy Qur’an that Jesus Christ (pbuh) had told his disciples —

“... **AND GIVING GLAD TIDINGS  
OF A MESSENGER**

**TO COME AFTER ME,  
WHOSE NAME SHALL BE AHMED.”**

وَمُبَشِّرًا بِرَسُولٍ يَأْتِي  
مِنْ بَعْدِي  
اسْمُهُ أَحْمَدُ ط

(SÚRA SAFF) Holy Qur’an 61: 6

I continued that, “This **Ahmed** is another name for **Muhummed**, and **Muhummed** is **Moouzzi!**” “Very funny,” she exclaimed, “these Egyptians” (meaning the Muslim Egyptians) “take us to the cinema, they take us” (meaning Christian women) “to the dance, but no one ever tells us anything about this **Moouzzi!**” Through her Allah **soobha-nahoo-wa-ta-aalaa**, armed me with a fourteen-pound sledgehammer before leaving Cairo Airport. **Alhumdo-lillah!** And, did I use that sledgehammer!!

An integrated explanation of Comforter/Moouzzi of John 16: 7 and Ahmed/Muhummed of The Holy Qur’an 61: 6 will be slotted in place when explaining the **Ayat** (the verse) heading this chapter.

## BIBLICAL CONFIRMATION

Remember, that in the sixth century of the Christian Era, when Muhummed (pbuh) was chanting God’s words which was systematically “**put into his mouth,**”<sup>1</sup> the Arabic Bible had not

1. Muhummed (pbuh) fulfils yet another prophecy, see page 16 of Part 1 “**What the Bible says about Muhummed** (pbuh)” for this aspect.

yet been translated. He could never have known that he was fulfilling and confirming the utterances of his predecessor (Jesus pbuh) to the letter.

### ONLY FOR THE ISRAELITES

1. **AND REMEMBER, JESUS  
THE SON OF MARY, SAID:**

وَإِذْ قَالَ عِيسَى ابْنُ مَرْيَمَ

**“O CHILDREN OF ISRAEL!**

يَبْنِي إِسْرَائِيلَ

**I AM THE MESSENGER OF GOD  
(SENT) TO YOU”** (the Jews)

إِنِّي رَسُولُ اللَّهِ إِلَيْكُمْ

### JESUS FOR JEWS ONLY

***These twelve Jesus sent forth, and  
commanded them saying,***

***Go ye not into the way of the Gentiles,<sup>1</sup>***

***and into any city of the Samaritans  
enter ye not:***

***But go ye rather unto The Lost  
Sheep Of The House Of Israel.***

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 10: 5-6

### NOT FOR DOGS

***And behold a woman of Canaan<sup>2</sup>  
came ... and cried unto him saying,  
have mercy on me ... my daughter  
is seriously possessed with a devil.***

***But he answered her not a word.***

---

1. **Gentiles:** non-Jews.

2. Mark 7: 26 says that the woman was a **Greek**.

***And his disciples came and begged him, saying, Send her away: for she crieth after us.***

***But he answered and said, I am Not Sent But Unto The Lost Sheep Of The House Of Israel.***

***But she came and knelt before him, saying, Lord, help me.***

***But he answered her and said, It Is Not Fair To Take The Children's Bread And Cast It To The Dogs.***

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 15: 22-26

It goes to the credit of this Jewish prophet, that he practised what he preached. In his lifetime he never converted a single Gentile (non-Jew). And of his hand-picked elect (his twelve disciples), he made sure that they belonged to his tribe so that his other prophecy might find fulfilment: **“when the son of man (Jesus pbuh referring to himself) shall sit on the throne of his glory, ye (the disciples) also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel”** (Matthew 19: 28).

## NO NEW RELIGION

2. **“CONFIRMING THE LAW<sup>2</sup> (WHICH) CAME BEFORE ME,”** مُصَدِّقًا لِمَا بَيْنَ يَدَيَّ مِنَ التَّوْرَةِ

The Messiah was no mealy-mouthed Messenger among the Jews. Like his predecessors Amos and Ezekiel or Isaiah and Jeremiah, he was trenchant in his condemnation of Jewish formalism and hypocrisies. His novel approach and militant preaching had

1. Meaning non-Jews.

2. **“LAW”**: The word in the Arabic text here is “Taurat.” (Heb. “Torah.”)

created certain misgivings amongst the religious hierarchy. The Scribes and the Pharisees came to him again and again to test him as to his **bona fides**.<sup>1</sup>

To allay their suspicions that he had brought no newfangled religion, and that his was the confirmation of all the teachings that had gone before him. He says —

***Think not that I am come to destroy the law (Hebrew - Torah), or the prophets: I am come not to destroy, but to fulfil.***

***For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law (Torah), till all be fulfilled.***

***Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.***

HOLY BIBLE Matthew 5: 17-19

Compare this phrase “**CONFIRMING THE LAW (WHICH CAME) BEFORE ME,**” - these seven words at the beginning of this section on page 40 with the three verses of Matthew above, and you will not fail to note that there is no wordiness in the Qur'anic diction. It conveys God's Message concisely, with clarity and precision.

---

1. His Genuineness.

**“THE FATHER’ OF TRUTH CHOOSES HIS OWN PROPHETS, AND HE SPEAKS TO THEM IN A VOICE STRONGER THAN THE VOICE OF THUNDER.”**

Sayed Amir Ali in *“The Spirit of Islam.”*

The Qur’an had come to **Confirm, Correct** and **Complete** Divine Revelation, or whatever was left of it in unworthy hands.

**THIS QUR’AN IS NOT SUCH**

وَمَا كَانَ هَذَا الْقُرْآنُ

**AS CAN BE PRODUCED  
BY OTHER THAN ALLAH;**

أَنْ يُفْتَرَّ مِنْ دُونِ اللَّهِ

**ON THE CONTRARY IT IS A  
CONFIRMATION OF (REVELATION)  
THAT WENT BEFORE IT,**

وَلَكِنْ تَصْدِيقَ الَّذِي  
بَيْنَ يَدَيْهِ

**AND A FULLER EXPLANATION  
OF THE BOOK**

وَتَفْصِيلَ الْكِتَابِ

**WHEREIN THERE IS NO  
DOUBT FROM THE LORD OF THE WORLDS.**

لَا رَيْبَ فِيهِ مِنْ رَبِّ الْعَالَمِينَ ۝

(SÚRA Y-ÚNUS) Holy Qur’an 10: 37

### THE GOOD NEWS

3. **“AND GIVING GLAD TIDINGS OF  
A MESSENGER**

وَمُبَشِّرًا بِرَسُولٍ يَأْتِي

**TO COME AFTER ME,**

مِنْ بَعْدِي

**WHOSE NAME SHALL BE AHMED.”**

اسْمُهُ أَحْمَدُ ط

I will not apologise, nor am I called upon to apologise for reproducing here **verbatim** (a word for word) commentary on the word **“AHMED,”** from ABDULLAH YUSUF ALI’S English translation. But before I do that permit me to pay a fitting tribute to the **KING FAHD HOLY QUR’AN PRINTING COMPLEX** in

1. **FATHER:** The use of the word **“FATHER”** in relation to God was cut from Islamic terminology owing to the perversion of the idea among the Christians.

Al-Madinah Al-Munawwarah which is turning out millions of Holy Qur'ans in many different languages.

Their reason for using YUSUF ALI as a base for their reproduction is summed up in these words:

"A NUMBER OF INDIVIDUALS HAVE IN THE PAST VENTURED TO TRANSLATE THE QUR'AN, BUT THEIR WORKS HAVE GENERALLY BEEN PRIVATE ATTEMPTS, GREATLY INFLUENCED BY THEIR OWN PREJUDICES. IN ORDER TO PRODUCE A RELIABLE TRANSLATION FREE FROM PERSONAL BIAS, A ROYAL DECREE (No. 19888, DATED 16/8/1400 AH) WAS ISSUED BY THE CUSTODIAN OF THE TWO HOLY MOSQUES, KING FAHD IBN ABDUL AZIZ, AT THAT TIME THE DEPUTY PRIME MINISTER ... THE TRANSLATION OF THE LATE USTADH **ABDULLAH YUSUF ALI** WAS CONSEQUENTLY CHOSEN FOR ITS DISTINGUISHING CHARACTERISTICS, SUCH AS A HIGHLY ELEGANT STYLE, A CHOICE OF WORDS CLOSE TO THE MEANING OF THE ORIGINAL TEXT, ACCOMPANIED BY SCHOLARLY NOTES AND COMMENTARIES."

*The Presidency of Islamic Researches, Ifta.  
Call and Guidance*

Out of over six thousand profound explanatory notes in Yusuf Ali's translation, the following is just one of three explaining the prophecy in the words of Jesus (pbuh) regarding the advent of Muhammed (pbuh) the Messenger of God.

Note No: 5438:

"**Ahmed**", or "**Muhummed**", the Praised One is almost a translation of the Greek word **Periclytos**. In the present Gospel of John 14:16, 15:26, and 16:7, the word "Comforter" in the English version for the Greek word "**Paracletos**", which means "Advocate", "one called to the help of another, a kind friend", rather than "Comforter". Our doctors contend that Paracletos is a corrupt reading for

CONT. NEXT PAGE

Periclytos, and that in the original saying of Jesus there was a prophecy of our holy Prophet **Ahmed** by name. Even if we read Paraclete, it would imply to the Holy Prophet, who is "a Mercy for all creatures" (H.Q. 21:107) and "most kind and merciful to the Believers" (H.Q. 9:128) See also note 416 to H.Q. 3:81.<sup>1</sup>

4. **BUT WHEN HE CAME TO THEM  
WITH CLEAR SIGNS,**

فَلَمَّا جَاءَهُمْ بِالْبَيِّنَاتِ

**THEY SAID: "THIS IS  
EVIDENT SORCERY!"**

قَالُوا هَذَا سِحْرٌ مُّبِينٌ ۝

Thus concludes (*Ayat*) verse 6 of (*Súra*) chapter 61 under discussion. "The Prophet of Islam was foretold in many ways; and when he came he showed forth many Clear Signs, for his whole life from beginning to end was one vast miracle. He fought and won against odds. Without learning from men he taught the highest wisdom. He melted hearts that were hard, and he strengthened hearts that were tender and required support. In all his sayings and doings men of discernment could see the working of God's hand;" yet the sceptics called it *SORCERY* — jugglery — magic!

FORGER AND JUGGLER! NO, NO! THIS GREAT  
FIERY HEART, SEETHING, SIMMERING LIKE A  
GREAT FURNACE OF THOUGHTS, WAS NOT A  
JUGGLER'S.

Thomas Carlyle, page 88 in his book -  
"Heroes and Hero-worship"

And they called his miraculous fulfilment of prophecy magic, jugglery, enchantment — that which became the most solid fact of human history — **Islam!**

---

1. Obtain your own volume of the translation. Contact the I.P.C.I.



## CHAPTER THREE

### *Muhummed (pbuh) Is The "Paraclete"*

To the sincere seekers of Truth it is obvious that Muhummed (pbuh) is the promised **Paraclete** or Comforter, alternatively called Helper, Advocate, Counsellor, etc of the prophecies of Jesus (pbuh) in the Gospel of St. John. There are millions of Christians — men and women like our good lady at the Cairo Airport (see page 42) who are hungry for this simple straightforward Message. But alas, we can only weep with Jesus (pbuh) for our utter ineptitude —

*The harvest truly is plenteous, but  
the workers are few.*

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 9: 37

### LANGUAGE OF JESUS (PBUH)

In the Holy Qur'an God Almighty puts the name "**Ahmed**" which is another name for Muhummed (pbuh) in the mouth of Jesus (pbuh). The Christian controversialist, Bible-thumper, Hot-Gospeller flippantly scoffs at the suggestion. The Christian missionary does not deny that Jesus (pbuh) did make a prophecy about someone coming after him. But "Ahmed" to him seems too far-fetched.

The most commonly accepted name by Christendom is "**Comforter**." It does not really matter. Comforter or any other equivalent term will do. We will settle for Comforter as used in the most popular Bible Translation the "**King James Version**."

Ask your adversary, your disputant whether Jesus (pbuh) spoke the English language? "Most definitely not!" any Christian will say. If you are sharing this with an Arab Christian then you can ask him whether his "lord" used the word "MOOUZZI?" Surely

---

1 I take it that you have already memorized John 16:7 in Arabic from page 43

not, because Arabic was not his language. Did Jesus (pbuh) prophesy “**uMthokozisi?**” (Comforter in Zulu) or “**Trooster**” from the Afrikaans Bible? The answer again is a definite NO!”

The Christians are rightfully boasting that they now have translated the complete Bible into hundreds of different languages, and the New Testament (in which this prophecy abounds) into more than two thousand different languages and dialects. So the Christian genius has invented more than 2000 different names in 2000 different languages for this one candidate — Comforter!

### **PNEUMA: GHOST OR SPIRIT?**

The Church fathers had developed a sickness by translating names of people, for which they had no right to do. For example like **Esau** to Jesus, **Messiah** to Christ, **Cephas** to Peter<sup>1</sup> and so on.

The closest one can ever get to the original utterance of Jesus (pbuh) in the Christian Scriptures is the Greek word “**Paracletos**,” which also has to be rejected because the Master did not speak Greek! But let’s not be difficult for the purpose of this discussion and accept the Greek word Paracletos and its English equivalent Comforter.

Ask any learned Christian man as to who the Comforter is? You will unmistakably hear - “**The Comforter is the HOLY GHOST!**” from John 14: 26. This sentence is only part of verse twenty six. We will deal with the verse fully in due course. But first we must educate the Christian mind with regards to this misnomer — “**Holy Ghost.**” “Pneuma,” is the Greek root word for SPIRIT. There is no separate word for GHOST in the Greek manuscripts of the New Testament, and the Christians now boast 24,000 different manuscripts in their possession of which no two are identical!

---

1. Get your **FREE** copy of “**What is F’s Name?**” for a better clarification on this point.

The editors of the KJV (*The King James Version*) alternatively called AV (*The Authorised Version*) and the DOUAY (*The Roman Catholic Version*) of the Bibles gave preference to the word "GHOST" instead of the word SPIRIT when translating "pneuma."

The revisers of the RSV (*Revised Standard Version*),<sup>1</sup> the most up-to-date version of the Bible, are going back, as claimed, to the Most Ancient manuscripts. These revisers, described as "thirty-two scholars of the highest eminence, backed by fifty co-operating denominations," who courageously replaced the shady word "ghost" with the word "spirit." Hence from now on you will read in all modern translations — "The Comforter which is the Holy SPIRIT"! However, the Christian crusaders and the televangelists stubbornly cling to the spooky ("ghost"-ly) past. They will not opt for the Newer Versions. It's better fishing with the old bait - the KJV and the RCV (*Roman Catholic Version*).

With the new change in spirit, the verse under scrutiny will read:

***But the Comforter, Which Is The Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.*** (Emphasis added).

(HOLY BIBLE) John 14: 26

You do not have to be a Bible scholar of any calibre to sense that the expression "which is the Holy Spirit" is actually an interpolation. It ought to be in parenthesis, in brackets, like my words which have been interpolated in the quotation, i.e.

---

1. For greater detail on the RSV see "Is the Bible God's Word?" obtainable FREE from the IPCI.

“(emphasis added).” Although the editors of the RSV have expunged dozens of interpolations from their boasted Revised Standard Version, they have retained this jarring phrase which contradicts other explicit predictions of Jesus (pbuh) on the subject of the Comforter itself.

### “HOLY SPIRIT” IS HOLY PROPHET

(i) It may be noted that no Biblical scholar of any standing has ever equated the “**paracletos**” of John in the original Greek with the Holy Ghost. Now we can say with one breath that if the Comforter is the “Holy Spirit” then that Holy Spirit is the **Holy Prophet!**

As Muslims we acknowledge that every true prophet of God is Holy and without sin. But whenever the expression “The Holy Prophet” is used among Muslims it is universally accepted as referring to the Holy Prophet Muhummed (pbuh). So even if we accept the above incongruous saying — “**the Comforter which is the Holy Spirit,**” as Gospel truth, even then this prophecy will fit Muhummed (pbuh) like a glove, without any stretching of its meaning.

The same John, who is supposed to have authored the Gospel bearing his name, also penned three more Epistles which are also part of the Christian Bible. Amazingly he has used the same terminology of “Holy **Spirit**” for “Holy **Prophet.**”

***Beloved, believe not every Spirit,  
but try the Spirits whether they  
are of God; because many false  
Prophets are gone out into the  
world.***

(HOLY BIBLE) 1 John 4: 1

You can observe that the word spirit is used here synonymously with a prophet. A true spirit is a true prophet, and a false spirit

is a false prophet. But for the so-called "born-again" Christians who see only with eyes of emotion, I recommend that they lay their hands on C.I. Scofield's Authorized King James Version of the Bible who with an Editorial Committee of 9 D.D.'s adding their notes and comments. When they come to the first word "**spirit**" in the above verse they should give a notation to compare it with Matthew 7: 15 which confirms that false prophets are false spirits. So according to St. John the Holy **Spirit** is the Holy **Prophet**, and the Holy Prophet is Muhummed (pbuh) the Messenger of God.

### A VALID TEST

But St. John does not leave us in the air, guessing the true from the false. He gives us an acid test for recognising the true Prophet, he says —

***Hereby know ye the Spirit<sup>1</sup> of  
God: Every Spirit that con-  
fesseth that Jesus Christ is come  
in the flesh is of God.***

(HOLY BIBLE) 1 John 4: 2

According to John's own interpretation in verse one above the word "spirit" is synonymous with the word prophet. So verse two "**Spirit of God**" would mean Prophet of God and "**Every spirit**" would stand for every Prophet. You have a right to know as to what the Holy Prophet Muhummed (pbuh) says about "**Jesus Christ.**"<sup>2</sup>

Jesus Christ (peace be upon him) is spoken by name no less than 25 times in the Holy Qur'an. He is honoured as —

Isa ibn Maryam      **(Jesus, the son of Mary)**

- 
1. For **SPIRIT**, read **PROPHET**.
  2. See Vol. III Part 1 — "**Christ in Islam**" for detailed information of the high position that Jesus (pbuh) occupies in the house of Islam.

<u>As-saaliheen</u>	(The Righteous)
<u>Kalimatu-Llah</u>	(Word of God)
<u>Ruhu-Llah</u>	(Spirit of God)
<u>Masih-uLlah</u>	(Christ of God)

Behold the angels said:  
 "O Mary! God giveth thee  
 Glad tidings of a Word from  
 Him: his name will be Christ  
 Jesus, the son of Mary, held  
 In honour in this world and  
 The Hereafter and of (the  
 Company of) those nearest to God.

(SÚRA ÁL-I-'IMRÁN) Holy Qur'an 3: 45<sup>1</sup>

## MUHUMMED (PBUH) IS THE "OTHER"

(ii) The Comforter in John 14: 26 can never be the "Holy Ghost" because Jesus (pbuh) had already explained —

*And I will pray the Father, and he  
 shall give you Another Com-  
 forter, that he may abide with  
 you for ever.*

(HOLY BIBLE) John 14: 16

The emphasis here is on the word "ANOTHER" an other, a different one, an additional one, but of the same kind, yet distinctly different from the first. Who is then the first Comforter? The Christian world is unanimous that in this case the speaker himself — Jesus Christ (pbuh) is the **first** Comforter; **then the other**, the one to follow must be of like nature, subject to the same conditions of hunger, thirst, fatigue, sorrow and death.

---

1. You can do **no** better than get your Christian friends to read this verse with its commentary directly from the Holy Qur'an. See inside back cover for offer.

But this promised Comforter was to **"abide with you for EVER!"** No one lives for ever. Jesus (pbuh) was mortal so must the coming Comforter also be mortal. No son of man can ever be immortal!

**Every soul shall have a taste of death.**

(SÚRA AL-I-'IMRÁN) Holy Qur'an 3: 185

### ALIVE IN THEIR TEACHINGS

The soul does not really die, but when it separates from the body at the time of the death of the body, the soul will get a taste of death. But our Comforter was to **"ABIDE,"** continue, endure for ever. All Comforters abide with us for ever. Moses is here with us today in his **teachings**. Jesus is here with us today in his **teachings** and Muhummed also is here with us in his **teachings** today. (May the peace and blessings of God be upon them all). This is not my novel idea trying to justify the preposterous. I say this with conviction and on the authority of Jesus Christ (pbuh) himself.

In Luke, chapter sixteen, Jesus (pbuh) tells us the story of the **"Rich Man, Poor Man."** At death both find themselves at opposite ends — one in Heaven and the other in Hell. The rich man (Dives) simmering in Hell cries to Father Abraham to send the beggar (Lazarus) to assuage his thirst. But when every plea fails, he, as a last favour, requests that Father Abraham send the beggar back to earth to warn his living brothers against their impending doom if they heeded not the warnings of God.

***But Abraham said, "If they (those still alive on earth) won't listen to Moses and the prophets, they won't listen even though someone rises from the dead."*** (to warn them)

(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 16: 31

Jesus (pbuh) uttered the above fact centuries after the demise of the prophets of Israel like Jeremiah, Hosea, Zechariah, etc and over thirteen hundred years after Moses (pbuh). The Pharisees at the time of Jesus (pbuh) and we today can still listen to **“MOSES AND THE PROPHETS,”** for they are still alive, and with us here today in their **teachings.**

### **‘YOU’ OF THE TIME**

If it is said that the Comforter was promised to the immediate disciples of Jesus (pbuh) and not to a people six hundred years later:

***and he (God) shall give You another Comforter, that he may abide with You for ever.***

**(HOLY BIBLE) John 14: 16**

Surprisingly, the Christian sees no difficulty in justifying the fulfilment of prophecies **“since the world began,”**<sup>1</sup> and after over a millennium<sup>2</sup> when Peter in his second sermon to the Jews, reminds them:

***For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord Your God raise up unto You of Your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto You.***

**(HOLY BIBLE) Acts 3: 22**

All these **“YE, YOU and YOURS”** are from the Book of Deuteronomy, chapter 18,<sup>3</sup> when Moses (pbuh) addressed his

1. Acts 3: 21

2. **Millennium:** A thousand years.

3. This prophecy also refers to the Holy Prophet. Obtain **FREE** copy of the book — **“WHAT THE BIBLE SAYS ABOUT MUHUMMED (PBUH)”** from IPCI.



people and not the Jews at the time of Peter, thirteen hundred years later. The Gospel writers have put the same compromising words in the mouth of their Master which are begging for fulfilment for two thousand years. I think just one example will suffice:

***But when they persecute You in this city, flee Ye into another: for verily (most assuredly) I (Jesus) say unto You, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel till the son of man (Jesus) be come.***

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 10: 23

## SCANNING THE CLOUDS

These early followers of the Messiah, forever ran, forlornly fleeing persecution. They ran from one city to another in Israel, scanning every dark cloud for the descent of Jesus (pbuh) in his second coming. The missionaries see no anomaly in their millennium of unfulfilled prophecies. God Almighty did not keep them waiting for even a quarter of the time for the advent of the "**paracletos**," — the Comforter or **Ahmed** which is another name for the Praised One. Let them show gratitude to God by accepting this Last and Final Messenger of God — **Muhummed (pbuh)**!

## ADVENT OF COMFORTER CONDITIONAL

(iii) The Comforter is definitely not the "**Holy Ghost**" because the coming of the Comforter was conditional whereas that of the Holy Ghost was not as we observe in the prophecy —

***Nevertheless, I tell you the truth: It is expedient for you that I go for If I Go Not Away, The Comforter Will Not Come unto***

**you; but if I depart, I will send  
him unto you.**

*(HOLY BIBLE) John 16: 7*

**“If I don’t go he won’t come, but if I go, I will send him.”**

There are numerous instances in the Holy Bible about the coming and going of the HOLY GHOST, before the birth and departure of the Messiah. Do yourself a favour, please verify these references in your Bible -

### **B.C. BEFORE CHRIST’S BIRTH:**

1. **... and he (John the Baptist) *shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother’s womb.***

*(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 1: 15*

2. **... and Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost.**

*(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 1: 41*

3. **And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost.**

*(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 1: 67*

### **A.C. AFTER CHRIST’S BIRTH:**

4. **... and the Holy Ghost was upon him (Simeon).**

*(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 2: 26*

5. **And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him (Jesus).**

*(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 3: 22*

From the above quotations, before and after the birth of Jesus (pbuh), one cannot help admiring St. Luke who appears to be a

**specialist** on the Holy Ghost. We may well ask the Christians, after the descent of the "**dove**", with whose help did Jesus (pbuh) perform his many miracles if not with the help of the Holy Ghost? Let the Master himself tell us. When accused by his own people, the Jews, that he was working in league with Beelzebub (the chief of the devils) to work his miracles, Jesus (pbuh) rhetorically questions them, "**How can Satan cast out Satan?**" The Jews imputed that this spirit of holiness - the Spirit of God - which was helping him, was devilish. This was treason of the highest order. So he gives them a dire warning:

***... but the blasphemy against the  
Holy Ghost, it shall never be  
forgiven ...***

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 12: 31

This "Holy Ghost" is none other than what Matthew himself has described in three verses before quoting the Master:

***But if I (Jesus) cast out devils by  
the Spirit Of God, then the  
kingdom of God is come upon  
you.***

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 12: 28

Compare the same statement by another Gospel writer<sup>1</sup>

***But if I (Jesus) by the Finger Of  
God cast out devils, no doubt the  
kingdom of God is come upon  
you.***

(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 11: 20

You do not have to be a Bible scholar to understand that the expressions (a) "**Finger of God**" (b) "**Spirit of God**" and (c) "**Holy Ghost**" are all synonymous phrases. So the Holy Ghost

---

1. Give a second glance at the two verses, top and bottom and you cannot help concluding that they are almost identical. Why? The answer is in "**Is the Bible God's Word?**" See Vol. II Part 2.

was helping Jesus (pbuh) in his ministry. The Holy Ghost was also helping his disciples on their missions of preaching and healing. If there is still any doubt in your minds about the workings of the Holy Ghost then please read:

### EMPTY PROMISE

*... as my Father hath sent me, even  
so I send you* (the disciples of Jesus),

*And when he had said this, he  
breathed on them, and saith unto  
them, Receive Ye The Holy  
Ghost*

(HOLY BIBLE) John 20: 21-22

This was surely no empty promise. The disciples must have received the gift of the Holy Ghost. So if the "**Holy Ghost**" was with (1) John the Baptist, (2) Elizabeth, (3) Zacharias, (4) Simeon, (5) Jesus and (6) the Disciples of Jesus; then all this makes nonsense of the saying that "**if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you.**" Therefore the Comforter is not the Holy **Ghost**!

The verse under discussion is John 16: 7. I remember the thrill and joy I got out of it when quoting it in Arabic to the Coptic Christian lady in the land of the Pharaohs (Page 42). The pleasure is immense when expounding Biblical verses in the standard native language of a country or locality. I have done it in a dozen different vernaculars. Won't you master the above verse in a language or two of your choice for the good of Islam?

### AFRIKAANS A UNIQUE LANGUAGE

Of all the languages in which I have mastered the verse in question, I have derived the greatest excitement and benefit from Afrikaans. It is a language of the ruling race in South Africa. It

is the youngest of the world's languages. The language is unique. In fact every language is unique. But Afrikaans is in a class of its own. It also happens to be the mother tongue of half the Muslim population of South Africa who were brought here as prisoners of war and enslaved by the Christians; that is simply by force of circumstances. For **their** immediate benefit and for your information I reproduce the verse here:

***Maar ek sê julle die waarheid: dit is vir julle voordelig dat ek weggaan; want as ek Nie weggaan Nie, sal die Trooster<sup>1</sup> Nie na julle kom Nie; maar as ek weggaan, sal ek hom na julle stuur.***

Johannes 16: 7

Believe it or not! It is the genius of this language that it uses four negatives **NIE, NIE, NIE, NIE**, to prove a positive! The departure of Jesus is an absolute imperative for the coming of the "**Trooster**," the Comforter to come! This verse in this language has opened many doors for me, other than religious, and it locks the door against the idea of the "**Comforter which is the Holy Ghost**" (John 14: 26).

## DISCIPLES NOT FIT

We now come to the four most comprehensive and decisive verses in John, chapter sixteen to solve the enigma of the Successor to Christ. For Jesus (pbuh) did truly say:

***I have yet Many Things to say unto you, but Ye Cannot Bear Them Now.***

(HOLY BIBLE) John 16: 12

---

1. **Trooster**: Now changed to "**VOORSPRAAK!**" See page 80

We will later tie up the phrase “**many things**” from the above verse with “**guide you into all truth**” from the verse that follows, when discussing it.<sup>1</sup> For now, let us discuss the phrase — “**YE CANNOT BEAR THEM NOW**”

The truth of this statement “**ye cannot bear them now**” is repeated monotonously throughout the pages of the New Testament:

- **And he** (Jesus) **saith unto them** (the disciples), **Why are ye fearful,**  
**O Ye Of Little Faith?**  
(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 8: 26
- **And** (Jesus) **said unto him** (Peter)  
**O Thou Of Little Faith ...**  
(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 14: 31
- ... **he** (Jesus) **said unto them** (the disciples), **O Ye Of Little Faith,**  
**why reason among yourselves ...**  
(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 16: 8
- **And he** (Jesus) **said unto them** (his disciples), **Where Is Your Faith?**  
(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 8: 25

We must bear in mind that this is not the indictment of Jesus (pbuh) on the indecisiveness of the Jews, but on his very own elect. He stoops down to the level of little children to make things plain to his disciples but he is compelled to burst out in frustration —

- **And Jesus said,**  
**Are Ye Even Yet Without**  
**Understanding?**  
(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 15: 16

---

1. Discussed on page 68

And when he was provoked to breaking point, he rails against his chosen ones —

\* *... O Faithless And Perverse  
Generation, how long shall I  
be with you, how long shall I  
bear with you?*

(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 9: 41

### OWN FAMILY THOUGHT HIM MAD

If Jesus (pbuh) would have been a Japanese instead of a Jew, he would happily have committed that honourable "harakiri" (suicide). Sadly, he was the most unfortunate of God's Messengers. His family disbelieved him **For neither did his (Jesus') brethren believe in him** (John 7: 5). In fact they went to the extent of wanting to apprehend him, believing that he was mad.

***And when his relatives heard of it,  
they went out to lay hold on him  
(Jesus); for they said, he is beside  
himself.***

(HOLY BIBLE) Mark 3: 21

Who were these friends and relatives of Jesus (pbuh) which had concern for his sanity? Let Rev. J.R. Dummelow, M.A. in his One Volume Bible Commentary tell us. On page 726 he says —

"FROM V.31" (just 10 verses following the above quotation) "THEY APPEAR TO HAVE BEEN HIS MOTHER AND BRETHREN ... HIS FAMILY SAID '**HE IS BESIDE HIMSELF,**'" (meaning that he is not right in his head); "THE SCRIBES SAID, '**HE IS POSSESSED BY THE DEVIL HIMSELF.**' IT IS NOT, HOWEVER, IMPLIED AT ALL THAT HIS FAMILY WAS IN SYMPATHY WITH THE SCRIBES" (the learned men of the Jews),

---

\* Emphasis in all the six quotations are mine.

“THEIR APPREHENSION BEING SIMPLY THAT HIS MIND WAS UNSETTLED, AND THAT HE NEEDED TO BE PUT UNDER RESTRAINT.”

## JESUS — REJECTED BY HIS NATION

That was the verdict of the close relations of Jesus (pbuh). What then was the response of his own nation, the Jews, after all his beautiful preachings and mighty miracle workings? His disciple puts it very mildly:

*He came unto his own (the Jews) and his own received him (Jesus) not.*

(HOLY BIBLE) John 1: 11

Actually “his own” mocked him, scorned him and vehemently rejected him. To the extent of making an attempt to crucify him.<sup>1</sup> Despite two thousand years of Christian persecutions and pogroms, and now their overweening love and infatuation for them, so as to salve their own conscience, the Jews as a people and as a whole can never accept Jesus as their Saviour, their Deliverer, their God, simply because of their one sound judgement —

**“THAT NO JEW CAN EVER ACCEPT ANOTHER JEW AS A GOD!”**

It is only in Islam that the Jews, the Christians and the Muslims can find accommodation — all believing in Jesus Christ (pbuh) for what he really was — one of the mightiest Messengers of God; and not as **God** or **His son!**

## DISCIPLES DESERTED HIM

What was the response of the chosen twelve; of his own “**mother and bretheren!**” (Mark 3: 34), as he called them? I will allow Professor Momerie to describe it in his own inimitable words —

---

1. Get your **FREE** copy of the book — “**Crucifixion or Crucl-fiction?**” from the IPCI.



"HIS IMMEDIATE DISCIPLES, WERE ALWAYS MISUNDERSTANDING HIM AND HIS WORK: WANTING HIM TO CALL DOWN FIRE FROM HEAVEN; WANTING HIM TO DECLARE HIMSELF KING OF THE JEWS; WANTING TO SIT ON HIS RIGHT HAND AND ON HIS LEFT HAND IN HIS KINGDOM; WANTING HIM TO SHOW THEM THE FATHER, TO MAKE GOD VISIBLE TO THEIR BODILY EYES; WANTING HIM TO DO, AND WANTING TO DO THEMSELVES, ANYTHING AND EVERYTHING THAT WAS INCOMPATIBLE WITH HIS GREAT PLAN. THIS WAS HOW THEY TREATED HIM UNTIL THE END. (and) WHEN THAT CAME, THEY ALL FORSOOK HIM, AND FLED."

Quoted from Sayed Amir Ali in his "*The Spirit of Islam*" page 31.

It was most unfortunate that Jesus Christ (pbuh) had no real choice in selecting his disciples. They let him down as no other group of devotees had ever let down their prophet before. It was no fault of the Master. He bewailed his plight: "**The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh (clay) is weak**" (Matthew 26: 41). Truly, this is not the clay out of which a new Adam could be made. He passes on that responsibility to his Successor, whom he calls here — "**The Spirit of Truth,**" ie the Prophet of Truth, the Prophet of Righteousness!

## "SPIRIT" AND "PROPHET" SYNONYMOUS

*Howbeit when he, the Spirit Of  
Truth, is come, he will guide you  
into all truth*

(HOLY BIBLE) John 16: 13

It has already been established that, Biblically, the word "**Spirit**" is used synonymously for "**Prophet,**" by the same author in 1 John 4: 1 (see page 53).

Hence the "Spirit of Truth" would be the Prophet of Truth. A prophet in whom **Truth** is personified. He had walked through life so honourably and industriously that he had won for himself even from his pagan fellow countrymen the noble designation of **as-Saadiq** (the Truthful One) and **al-Amin**, "the Honest," "the Upright," "the Trustworthy;" the Man of Faith who never broke his word. His life, his personality, his teachings are the veritable proof of Muhummed (pbuh) being the embodiment of Truth (al-Amin) — the Spirit of Truth!

## CHAPTER FOUR

### *Total Guidance!*

#### **“MANY AND “ALL”**

As promised on page 62, we will now combine, **“I have yet MANY things to say unto you”** from verse twelve, with **“he will guide you into ALL truth.”** From John 16: 12 and 13.

If the Christian still persists that the Spirit of Truth of this prophecy is the Holy Ghost then ask him or her whether in their language does **“MANY”** means more than one? Also if **“ALL”** in the above verse means more than one? If you get a halting, wavering, hesistant **“y-e-s”** then close the book, it is not worth pursuing dialogues with opinionated fools. But if you get the answer **“yes!”** with alacrity then proceed ...

The one prophesied by Jesus (pbuh) was to unravel **many** things which he had left unsaid, as well as to guide humanity into **all** truth. There are many problems facing mankind today, for which we are fumbling for answers. Can you please give me one new thing that the alleged Holy Ghost gave to anybody in the past two thousand years, which Jesus Christ had not already given in so many different words? I don't want many, I am looking for **just one!**

#### **NO SOLUTION FROM HOLY GHOST**

Believe me, in my forty years of questioning, I have not come across a single Christian with a single “new Truth” inspired by the Holy Ghost, yet the promise **was** that the coming Comforter -**“he will guide you into all truth!”** If the Spirit of Truth of this prophecy is the Holy Ghost then every Church and denomination, and every **‘born-again’** Christian is claiming the gift of the Holy Ghost. The Roman Catholics claim that they

have the whole Truth because of the so-called "in-dwelling" of the Holy Ghost. The Anglicans make the same claim, and the Methodists, the Jehovah's Witnesses, the Seventh Day Adventists, the Baptists, the Christadelphians, etc, etc, not forgetting the '**born-again**' who claim to be numbering over 70 million in the United States alone.

You have the right to demand solutions from them, on the authority of the Holy Ghost, for the problems listed below:

1. **Alcohol**
2. **Gambling**
3. **Fortune Telling**
4. **Idol Worship, Devil Worship**
5. **Racism**
6. **Problem of Surplus Women etc etc.**

### **PROBLEM OF ALCOHOL**

The Republic of South Africa with a small "white"<sup>1</sup> population of 4 million among its total population of 30 million, has over 300,000 alcoholics. In neighbouring Zambia, Kenneth Kaunda calls such people "drunkards!" It is recorded that the "**coloureds**"<sup>2</sup> in South Africa have five times the amount of alcoholics as any other race in the country. For the Indians and the Africans no statistics are available for their respective drunkards.

Jimmy Swaggart the televangelist records in his book "ALCOHOL" that the United States has 11 million alcoholics<sup>3</sup> and 44 million "heavy drinkers!", and he, like a good Muslim, goes on to say that he sees no difference between the two. To him they are all **drunkards!** The rampant evil of drunkenness is universal. The Holy Ghost has not yet made its pronouncement on this evil through any Church. Christendom winks at drunkenness on three flimsy pretences based on the Holy Bible.

---

1. Of European extraction.

2. A mixture between the Black and White Races.

3. The Americans euphemistically call them "**Problem Drinkers.**"

- (a) ***Give strong drink*** (hard liquor) ***to him who is perishing*** (one who is dying) ***And wine to those who are bitter of heart.***

***Let him drink and forget his poverty, And remember his misery no more.***

(HOLY BIBLE) Proverbs 31: 6-7

A very good philosophy to keep the subject nations under subjugation, you will agree.

### HIS VERY FIRST MIRACLE

- (b) Jesus (pbuh) was no “killjoy,” the imbibers say, he turned water into wine in his very first recorded miracle in the Bible:

***Jesus saith unto them, Fill the waterpots with water. And they filled them up to the brim.***

***And he saith unto them, Draw out now ...***

***When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine ...***

***And saith ... (why) thou hast kept the good wine until now.***

(HOLY BIBLE) John 2: 7-10

Since this alleged miracle, wine continues to flow like water in Christendom.

### SOBER ADVICE

- (c) Saint Paul the thirteenth self-appointed disciple of Christ, the real founder of Christianity, advises his new convert protege —

Timothy, born of a Greek father and a Jewish mother:

***Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thine often infirmities.***

(HOLY BIBLE) 1 Timothy 5: 23

The Christians accept all the Bible quotations on stimulating and intoxicating drinks given above as the infallible word of God. They believe that the Holy Ghost inspired the authors to pen such dangerous advices. Rev. Dummelow (see page 62) seems to have some qualms about this verse. He says,

"IT TEACHES US THAT IF THE BODY NEEDS THE STIMULANT OF WINE, IT IS RIGHT TO TAKE IT IN MODERATION."

### **ABSTINENCE THE ONLY ANSWER**

There are thousands of Christian priests who have been lured into alcoholism by sipping the so-called mild wine in the Church rite of the Holy Communion. Islam is the only religion on the face of the earth which prohibits intoxicants in toto. The Holy Prophet (Spirit) Muhammed (pbuh) had said, "WHATEVER INTOXICATES IN GREATER QUANTITY, IS FORBIDDEN EVEN IN SMALLER QUANTITY." There is no excuse in the house of Islam for a nip or a tot. The ***Kitab-al-Haq***, the Book of Truth (***Haq***) one of the titles of the Holy Qur'an condemned in the strongest terms not only the evil of alcohol but also items 2, 3, and 4, namely "gambling," "fortune telling and "idol worship," with just a single stroke —

***O YE WHO BELIEVE!***

***MOST CERTAINLY INTOXICANTS  
AND GAMBLING,***

***(DEDICATION OF) STONES,***

***AND (DIVINATION) OF ARROWS,***

يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا

إِنَّمَا الْخَمْرُ وَالْمَيْسِرُ

وَالْأَنْصَابُ

وَالْأَزْلَامُ

**ARE AN ABOMINATION, -  
OF SATAN'S HANDIWORK**

رَجَسٌ مِّنْ عَمَلِ الشَّيْطَانِ

**SHUN SUCH (ABOMINATION),  
THAT YE MAY PROSPER.**

فَاجْتَنِبُوهُ لَعَلَّكُمْ تُفْلِحُونَ ۝

(SÚRA MÁIDA) Holy Qur'an 5: 93<sup>1</sup>

When this verse was revealed, wine barrels were emptied in the streets of Madinah, never to be refilled. This simple straight-forward directive has created of the Muslim **Ummah** (religious community) the biggest society of teetotallers<sup>2</sup> in the world.

### U.S.A. FAILS WITH "PROHIBITION"

The question arises, how is it that this Spirit of Truth — the Holy Prophet Muhummed (pbuh) succeeded with one verse whereas mighty America with the brain power of the nation and the money power of the Government, supported by its powerful propaganda machinery failed with "**Prohibition**," the law outlawing alcohol?

Who coerced the American nation to enact prohibition? Which Arab nation threatened this mighty power with if you do not prohibit alcohol in your country, we will not supply you with oil? Not the Arabs as there was no such thing as oil as a "**POLITICAL INSTRUMENT**"<sup>3</sup> in the hands of the Arabs during the twenties to egg the United States. It was an intellectual awareness among the American (founding) fathers, based on study and statistics which brought them to the conclusion that intoxicants must be banned. They failed, notwithstanding the fact that the overwhelming majority of the nation was Christian, and that it was they who had voted their Congressmen into power. It is rightly said that that which comes from the brain (intel-

1. See Yusuf Ali's commentary for further clarification. I hope you are heeding my plea to memorize these Qur'anic quotations with their meanings.

2. **Teetotaller**: A person who abstains completely from all alcoholic drinks.

3. From "**YAMANI — THE INSIDE STORY**" by Jeffrey Robinson.

lectually) tickles the brain, but that which comes from the heart and soul of a man, will move the heart. The verse just quoted above from the Holy Qur'an on prohibition, had and has the power for change; we will allow Thomas Carlyle to reveal the source of that power:

"IF A BOOK COME FROM THE HEART, IT WILL CONTRIVE TO REACH OTHER HEARTS; ALL ART AND AUTHORCRAFT ARE SMALL AMOUNT TO THAT. ONE WOULD SAY THE PRIMARY CHARACTER OF THE KORAN IS THIS OF ITS *GENUINENESS*, OF ITS BEING A *BONA FIDE* BOOK."

### **HIGH SPIRITUALITY — A SOURCE OF POWER**

All the beautiful thoughts, words and expressions, never mind how artistically constructed, remain like ringing bells or clanking cymbals unless they are backed up by a powerful personality charged with high spirituality. And that type of super spirituality comes only as Jesus (pbuh) put it through "***fasting and prayer***" (Matthew 17: 21).

Muhummed (pbuh) practised what he preached. After his demise someone asked his dear wife Ayeshá Siddiqá about the life-style of her husband. She said, "**He was the Qur'an in action.**" He was the walking Qur'an. He was the talking Qur'an. He was the living Qur'an.

"IF THESE MEN AND WOMEN, NOBLE, INTELLIGENT, AND CERTAINLY NOT LESS EDUCATED THAN THE FISHERMEN OF GALILEE, HAD PERCEIVED THE SLIGHTEST SIGN OF EARTHLINESS, DECEPTION, OR WANT OF FAITH IN THE TEACHER HIMSELF, MOHAMMED'S HOPES OF MORAL REGENERATION AND SOCIAL REFORM WOULD ALL HAVE BEEN CRUMBLED TO DUST IN A MOMENT."

**"Spirit of Islam"** by Sayed Amir Ali, page 21

## CRITIC'S HERO

If it is said that these are the words of a devoted Believer about his beloved, then let us hear what a sympathetic Christian critic had to say about HIS "**Hero Prophet!**"

"A POOR, HARD-TOILING, ILL-PROVIDED MAN; CARELESS OF WHAT VULGAR MEN TOIL FOR. NOT A BAD MAN, I SHOULD SAY; SOMETHING BETTER IN HIM THAN **HUNGER** OF ANY SORT, — OR THESE WILD ARAB MEN, FIGHTING AND JOSTLING THREE-AND-TWENTY YEARS AT HIS HAND, IN CLOSE CONTACT WITH HIM ALWAYS, WOULD NOT HAVE REVERENCED HIM SO!

"... THEY CALLED HIM PROPHET, YOU SAY? WHY, HE STOOD THERE FACE TO FACE WITH THEM; BARE. NOT ENSHRINED IN ANY MYSTERY; VISIBLY CLOUTING HIS OWN CLOAK, COBBLING HIS OWN SHOES; FIGHTING, COUNSELLING, ORDERING IN THE MIDST OF THEM: THEY MUST HAVE SEEN WHAT KIND OF A MAN HE **WAS**, LET HIM BE **CALLED** WHAT YOU LIKE! NO EMPEROR WITH HIS TIARAS WAS OBEYED AS THIS MAN IN A CLOAK OF HIS OWN CLOUTING. DURING THREE-AND-TWENTY YEARS OF ROUGH ACUTAL TRIAL. I FIND SOMETHING OF A VERITABLE **HERO** NECESSARY FOR THAT, OF ITSELF."

"*Hero and Hero-worship*" by Thomas Carlyle, page 93

## PROBLEM OF RACISM

... *For he* (the Spirit of Truth) *will guide you into all truth!*

(*HOLY BIBLE*) John 16: 13

## NOT WITHOUT A SYSTEM

It is very easy for the followers of any religion to talk glibly about "THE FATHERHOOD OF GOD AND THE BROTHERHOOD



OF MAN" but how is this beautiful idea to be implemented? How to devise a system to bring mankind into a single brotherhood? Five times a day, every Muslim is obligated to gather together at the local mosque to strengthen himself spiritually. The black and the white; the rich and the poor; people of different nationalities, of varying hues are made to rub shoulders in the daily **Salaat**, the Muslim at Prayer.<sup>1</sup> Once a week, that is on Fridays, he has to congregate at the cathedral Mosque (**the Jaame Musjid**) for a wider gathering from the surrounding districts. And twice a year during the two Eids at still a larger venue, preferably in the open air, for a vaster communion. A-n-d, at least once in a life-time at the **Kaaba**, the Central Mosque in Makkah, for an international gathering; where one can witness the blonde-haired Turk, the Ethiopian, the Chinese, the Indian, the American and the African, all get levelled-up in the same pilgrim's garb of two unsewn sheets. Where is there such a great leveller in the religious rites of other faiths?

The infallible precept as enunciated in the Book of God is that the only standard recognised by God is on the basis of one's conduct, one's behaviour towards one's fellow human beings and not because of one's race or riches. These are the only true bases on which the "**Kingdom of God**" can be established.<sup>2</sup> All this does not mean that the Muslim is immaculate, that he is altogether free from this sickness of racism, but you will find the Muslim the least racist of all the religious groupings strutting the world today.

- 
1. Take your non-Muslim friends to the Mosque to watch "The Muslim at Prayer." If you are too shy then show him the video - "**CHRISTIAN GUESTS IN YOUR MOSQUE**," V51 from the IPCI. You will not fail to learn a lot of easy entertaining ways of discussing Islam.
  2. See inside back cover for this "**The Future World Constitution**," obtain a volume for yourself and a copy for your non-Muslim friend. You can't give a better gift!

## PROBLEM OF SURPLUS WOMEN

Nature seems to be at war with mankind. It appears that it wants to take revenge for his cleverness. Man will not listen to the healthy, practical solution to his problems, which a Beneficial, Benevolent Providence offers him. So it says, “**go simmer in your SOUP!**” (in a manner of speaking).

It is an accepted fact that at birth the ratio of male and female is about equal everywhere. But in child mortality more males die than females. Amazing! The “**weaker sex**”? At any given time there are more widows in the world than widowers. Every civilized nation has a surplus of women. Great Britain 4 million. Germany 5 million. Soviet Russia 7 million, etc. But a solution acceptable to the problem of the mighty United States of America, will be a solution acceptable to nations everywhere. The statistics of this most sophisticated nation on earth is more readily verifiable.

## AMERICA, O AMERICA!

We learn that the U.S.A. has a surplus of 7,8 million women. It means that if every man in America got married, there would still be 7 800 000 women left over, women who would be unable to get their share of a husband. One thing we do know, and that is that every man will never get married for so many different reasons. Man gets cold feet and finds many excuses. A woman, even if frigid, would not mind getting married. She would marry, even if it is just for shelter and protection.

But the American problem of surplus women is compounded. Ninety-eight percent of its prison population is male. Then they have 25 million sodomites. Euphemistically they call them “**gays**” a once beautiful word meaning — **happy and joyous** — now perverted!

America does everything in a big way. She produces everything mighty. Mighty in promoting God and also mighty in promoting the Devil. Let us for once, join the mighty televangelist (now fallen) Jimmy Swaggart, in his prayer. In his well-researched book — **“HOMOSEXUALITY,”** he cries,

**“AMERICA — GOD WILL JUDGE YOU** (meaning that God will destroy you), **FOR IF HE DOES NOT JUDGE YOU** (destroy you), **HE** (God) **MIGHT HAVE TO APOLOGIZE TO SODOM AND GOMORRAH”** for their hasty, utter destruction because of their practice of homosexuality or their wanton gratification of unnatural lust.

### NEW YORK AS AN EXAMPLE

The City of New York has one million more women than men. Even if the total male population in this city mustered enough courage to unite with the opposite sex in matrimony; there would still remain 1 000 000 women without husbands.

But to make things worse, it is reputed that one third of the male population in this city is **“gay”** (homosexuals/sodomites). The Jews, a very vociferous lot in every controversy, remain quiet as mice, for fear of being labelled backward Easterners. The Church, with their millions of **born again** votaries claiming to be the dwelling houses of the Holy Ghost, are also silent on this topic.

The founders of the Mormon Church, Joseph Smith and Brigham Young, claiming a new revelation in 1830 preached and practised unlimited polygamy to solve the problem of surplus women. The present day prophets of Mormonism<sup>1</sup> have abrogated the teaching of their Church fathers to placate American prejudice on the subject of polygamy. What is the poor American/Western/European surplus women to do? They have literally gone to the dogs.<sup>2</sup>

---

1. The Mormons believe in an unbroken chain of living prophets in their Church.

2. Consult **“The life of the American Female,”** by Dr. Alfred Kinsey and the latest on the subject by Masters and Johnson.

## ONLY SOLUTION - RESTRICTED AND REGULATED POLYGAMY

**Al-Amín**, the Prophet of Truth, the Spirit of Truth, under inspiration of God supplies the solution to their unfortunate plight. God ordains —

... **Marry women of your choice,  
two, or three, or four;  
But if you fear that you will  
not be able to deal justly (with them)  
Then (marry) only one ...**

(*SÚRA NISÁA*) Holy Qur'an 4: 3

The Western world feigns tolerance towards the millions of sodomites and lesbians in their midst. It is a joking matter in the West for a man to keep a dozen mistresses, and beget a dozen bastard<sup>1</sup> children every year. Such lecherous creatures are proudly labelled as “**studs.**”<sup>2</sup> “**Let him sow his wild oats, but don't hold him responsible!**” says the West.

Islam says: “make man responsible for his pleasures.” There is a type of man who is prepared to take on extra responsibility, and there is a type of woman who is prepared to share a husband. Why place obstacles in their way? You mock at (polygamy), which was practised by the prophets of God as recorded in the Holy Bible, you forget that Solomon The Wise had a thousand wives and concubines as recorded in the Good Book (1 King 11: 3), a healthy solution to your momentous problem, and yet smugly wink at the gratification of unnatural lusts by sodomites and lesbians! What a perversion? Polygamy was practised by the Jews and the pagans in the time of Jesus (pbuh). He did not say a single word against it. Not his fault. The Jews gave him no peace to propound solutions. His was a natural cry, “**when he**

---

1. **Bastard**: is Biblical. The Holy Bible has used it **three** times: Deut. 23: 2, Zech. 9: 6 and Heb. 12: 8

2. **Stud**: a slang used for a man considered to be excessively virile. The term usually reserved for animal husbandry.

***the Spirit of Truth is come, he will guide you into All truth***" (John 16: 13).

### COMFORTER TO BE A MAN

If I take the liberty of quoting the prophecy under discussion, with an emphasis on the pronouns, you will agree without any persuasion that the coming Comforter was to be a **man** and not a **ghost**.

***Howbeit when He, the Spirit of Truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth:***

***for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear, that shall He speak: and He will show you things to come.***

(HOLY BIBLE) John 16: 13

Please count the number of **HE's** in the above verse. There are **s-e-v-e-n!** Seven masculine pronouns in a single verse! There is not another verse in the 66 books of the Protestant Bible or in the 73 Books of the Catholic Bible with seven masculine pronouns, or seven feminine pronouns, or with seven neuter genders. You will agree that so many masculine pronouns in one verse ill befits a **Ghost**, holy or not!

### NON-STOP INTERPOLATIONS

When this point of the seven masculine pronouns in a single verse of the Bible was mooted by the Muslims in India in their debates with the Christian missionaries, the Urdu version of the Bible had the pronouns presently changed to SHE, SHE, SHE! so that the Muslims could not claim that this prophecy referred to Muhammed (pbuh) — a **man!** This Christian chicanery; deception

I have seen in the Urdu Bible myself. This is a common trickery by the missionaries, more specially in the vernacular. The very latest ruse I have stumbled across is in the Afrikaans Bible, on the very verse under discussion; they have changed the word "**Trooster**" (Comforter), to "**Voorspraak**" (Mediator), and interpolated the phrase — "**die Heilige Gees**" — meaning THE HOLY GHOST, which phrase no Bible Scholar has ever dared to interpolate into any of the multifarious English Versions. No, not even the Jehovah's Witnesses.<sup>1</sup> This is how the Christians manufacture God's word!<sup>2</sup>

### NINE MASCULINE PRONOUNS

The only other place an author has unknowingly used so many masculine pronouns for this mighty Messenger Muhummed (pbuh) is given below:

**"HIS GENTLE DISPOSITION, HIS AUSTERITY OF CONDUCT, THE SEVERE PURITY OF HIS LIFE, HIS SCRUPULOUS REFINEMENT, HIS EVER-READY HELPFULNESS TOWARDS THE POOR AND THE WEAK, HIS NOBLE SENSE OF HONOUR, HIS UNFLINCHING FIDELITY, HIS STERN SENSE OF DUTY HAD WON HIM, AMONG HIS COMPATRIOTS, THE HIGH AND ENVIABLE DESIGNATION OF AL-AMIN, THE TRUSTY."**

*"Spirit of Islam,"* by Sayed Amir Ali, page 14

**"AL-AMIN,"** the Faithful, the Trustworthy, **"even the Spirit of Truth"** (John 14: 17). This expression is a figurative way of saying that SPEAKING TRUTH would be so characteristic of him that people would regard him as TRUTH PERSONIFIED: exactly as Jesus (pbuh) said about himself, **"I am the way, the truth and the life . . ."** (John 14: 6), that these noble qualities are

- 
1. **Jehovah's Witnesses:** an incorrigible Christian sect which has contrived its own Bible translation.
  2. See Vol. II Part 2 - **"Is the Bible God's Word?"** and learn, how the Christian has been interpolating his own prejudices in a Book he claims to be from God.

personified in me. Follow me! But **‘when he the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth’** (John 16: 13), then you must follow him! But prejudices die hard, therefore we must work harder. But believe me, with the laser truth that Allah has given us, we can change the world with only a fraction of the energy that the Christian is expending.

## SOURCE OF REVELATION

***Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth! For He Shall Not Speak From Himself But whatsoever He Shall Hear, That Shall He Speak.***

(HOLY BIBLE) John 16: 13

I have consistently been using the King James Version in my Biblical quotations, but for greater clarity, I give below, alternate rendering from some different versions of the above emphasised sentence:

1. ***for he will not speak on his Own Authority, But will tell only what he hears.***

The New English Bible

2. ***He will not speak On His Own; He will Speak Only What He Hears.***

New International Version

3. ***for he will not be presenting His Own Ideas, But He Will Be Passing On To You What He Has Heard.***

The Living Bible

This **“Spirit of Truth,”** this Prophet of Truth, “Al-Amin,” will not be speaking spiritual truths on his own impulse, but he will

Speak on the same basis as his previous Comforter — Jesus (pbuh) had spoken:

***For I speak not from myself; but the Father that sent me, he hath given me the commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.***

***... even as the Father hath saith unto me, so I speak.***

(HOLY BIBLE) John 12: 49-50

In an **identical** manner God Almighty testifies His revelation to His Messenger Muhummed (pbuh).

**Nor does He say (ought) of (His own) desire.**

**It is no less than, inspiration sent down to Him.**

**He was taught by one mighty in power.<sup>1</sup>**

(SÚRA NAJM) Holy Qur'an 53: 3-5

This is how God communicated with all His chosen Messengers, whether Abraham, Moses or Jesus. It would be absurd to think that this "**Spirit of Truth**" is the Holy Ghost, because we are told that "**he will not speak from himself, but what he hears,**" surely not from himself?

## **GOD — A TRINITY?**

It is universally accepted in Christendom, all orthodox Christians who believe in what they call the Holy Trinity; that the Father is God, the son is God and the Holy Ghost is God, but they are not

---

1. All Quranic Commentators understand this to refer to the archangel Gabriel. Call him the "Holy Ghost" if you like.



three Gods but one God. (?) Let an erudite Christian theologian, like the Rev. Dummelow tell us of this indivisibility, indissolubility of the Christian's "triune" God. Commenting on "**We will come**" of John 14: 23 he says —

WHERE THE SON IS, THERE OF NECESSITY IS THE FATHER ALSO, AS WELL AS THE SPIRIT, FOR THE **THREE ARE ONE**, BEING DIFFERENT FORMS OF THE SUBSISTENCE AND MANIFESTATION OF THE SAME DIVINE BEING. THIS PASSAGE ILLUSTRATES THAT THE PERSONS OF THE HOLY TRINITY **ARE INSEPARABLE, AND CONTAIN ONE ANOTHER.**

Please don't worry. You are not really expected to understand the above verbiage. In short the Christian believes that the "THREE" (I beg your pardon, the Christian says, "ONE!"), all the **three** are supposed to be Omnipresent and Omniscient and as such lead us to an amusing and ridiculous conclusion. Jesus (pbuh) according to the Christians agonized on the cross at Calvary. Being "**inseparable,**" the Father and the Holy Ghost also must have agonized with the Son, and when he died, the other two died with him! Little wonder we hear the cry in the West — "**God is Dead!**" Don't laugh. All this imposes on us a more sombre responsibility of extricating our Christian brethren from the spiritual quagmire into which they are wallowing.

## CHAPTER FIVE

### *Fulfilled Prophecies*

*And he will show you things to come.*

(HOLY BIBLE) John 16: 13

#### REFUGEE: ONLY FOR A WHILE

The Christians put great weight on the fulfilment of prophecies. Muhammed (pbuh) fulfilled many prophecies of the Old<sup>1</sup> and the New Testaments. To them, the prediction of events is considered to be the function of true prophecy — true prophethood.

The Prophet of Islam uttered many prophecies which are recorded for posterity in the Holy Qur'an. Here are a few taken at random.

1. **Verily, He Who** (God Almighty)  
**ordained the Qur'an for thee, (He)**  
**will bring thee back to the Place**  
**of Return ...**

(SÚRA QASAS) Holy Qur'an 28: 85

**“Place of Return,”** is a title of the Holy City of Makkah. During the *Hijrat* (Migration) when the Holy Prophet was fleeing from Makkah to Madinah. It was a hopeless situation. Most of his followers had already migrated to Madinah. Now it was his turn. Together with Abu Bakr (**as-Siddiq**) he had reached a place called Juhfa, when this assurance was given by God that once again he will return to his birthplace Makkah, and so he did.

He migrated as a refugee and God returns him as a conqueror, fulfilling yet another prophecy.<sup>2</sup>

- 
1. You will find some of these prophecies expounded in Part 1 — **“What the Bible says about Muhammed (pbuh)”** in this volume.
  2. For a detailed exposition of this prophecy read **“Muhammed (pbuh) in the Bible”** by ‘Abdul-Ahad Dawud, former Bishop of Uramiah obtainable from the Centre.

***And he (Moses) said, the Lord came from Sinai, and rose from Seir unto them; he shined forth from mount Paran (that is in Arabia), and he (Muhummed) came with Ten Thousand Saints:<sup>1</sup> from his right hand went a fiery law for them.***

(HOLY BIBLE) Deuteronomy 33: 2

## **SUPERPOWERS: IN CONFLICT**

### **2. The Roman Empire has been defeated**

**In a land close by;  
But they, (even) after (this)  
Defeat of theirs, will soon be  
victorious —**

**Within a few years. With God is  
the Decision,  
In the Past and in the Future:  
On that day shall the Believers  
rejoice —**

(SÚRA RÚM) Holy Qur'an 30: 2-4

The above prophecy was revealed to the Holy Prophet Muhummed (pbuh) in the year 615/16 of the Christian era. The Christian Empire of Rome had lost Jerusalem to the Persians, and Christianity had been humbled in the dust. In this holocaust between two of the superpowers of the day, the **Mushriks** (polytheists) of Makkah derived vicarious pleasure in the discomfiture of the Romans by the pagan Persians.

**“THE PAGAN ARABS NATURALLY SIDED WITH THE PERSIANS IN THEIR DESTRUCTIVE ZEAL, AND THOUGHT THAT THE**

---

1. The Holy Prophet was accompanied by 10 000 **SAHABÁS** (companions — veritable saints) at the conquest of Makkah.

DESTRUCTION OF THE CHRISTIAN POWER OF ROME WOULD ALSO MEAN A SETBACK TO THE MESSAGE OF THE PROPHET, **THE TRUE SUCCESSOR TO CHRIST.**<sup>1</sup> ... WHILE THE WHOLE WORLD BELIEVED THAT THE ROMAN EMPIRE WAS BEING KILLED BY PERSIA, IT WAS REVEALED TO HIM THAT THE PERSIAN VICTORY WAS SHORT-LIVED AND THAT WITHIN A PERIOD OF A FEW YEARS THE ROMANS WOULD CONQUER AGAIN AND DEAL A DEADLY BLOW AT THE PERSIANS."

**Abdullah Yusuf Ali**

Within ten years of the revelation of this Divine prediction, the prophecy was fulfilled!

### CHALLENGE OF THE QUR'AN

3. The Holy Prophet claimed that the Holy Qur'an was from God Almighty, and that it was revealed to him by inspiration. The proof of its Divine authorship is its own beauty and nature, and the circumstances in which it was promulgated. To prove the veracity of his claim, he has placed before you many Súras. Can the unbeliever produce one like it? This is a standing challenge! An eternal prophecy of mankind's inability to equal or excel, or to rival successfully any of its chapters.

Your plea, "I don't know Arabic," is useless. There are millions of Christian Arabs living today. The Christians boast that there are at least 10-15 million Coptic Christians in Egypt alone and these are not all **fellaheens**.<sup>2</sup> Here is the challenge of God in His Own words —

(a) **This Qur'an is not such as can be produced by other than Allah.**<sup>3</sup>

*Holy Qur'an 10: 37*

- 
1. The emphasis is mine. Though I own Yusuf Ali's translation for over half-a-century, I have only very recently come across the above phrase for the first time.
  2. **Fellaheen:** A peasant or agricultural labourer in Arab countries.
  3. **Allah:** A proper noun for God Almighty in the Semitic languages. See Vol III, Part 3 — "What is His name?" which explains this word in detail.

- (b) **Say: “If the whole of mankind and Jinns were to gather together to produce the like of this Qur’an, they could not produce the like thereof, even if they backed up each other with help and support.”**

*(SÚRA BANI ISRÁ-ÍL) Holy Qur’an 17: 88*

- (c) **Or do they say, “He forged it”? Say: “Bring then a Súra like unto it, and call (to your aid) anyone you can, besides Allah, if it be that ye speak the truth!”**

*(SÚRA Y-ÚNUS) Holy Qur’an 10: 38*

- (d) **And if ye are in doubt as to what We have revealed from time to time to Our servant, then produce a Súra like thereunto;**

**And call your witnesses or helpers (if there are any) besides Allah. If your (doubts) are true.**

**But if ye cannot —  
And of a surety ye cannot —**

**Then fear the Fire whose fuel is Men and Stones,— which is prepared for those who reject Faith.**

*(SÚRA BAQARA) Holy Qur’an 2: 23-24*

It is now fourteen hundred years since the above challenges, but mankind has singularly failed to produce anything similar or something better. This is an **Eternal Testimony** of the **Divine Origin** of the Holy Qur’an.

## CHRISTIAN ARABS HAD A TRY!

The Arab Christians in the Middle East, not to be outwitted, launched a sixteen-year project lately and produced selected portions of the New Testament in Arabic, with a wholesale borrowing<sup>1</sup> of words and phrases verbatim from the Arabic Qur'an. It is an ignoble attempt! In this unashamed plagiarism,<sup>2</sup> every chapter of this new Arabic New Testament of theirs begin with the first verse of the Holy Qur'an —

بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

In the name of Allah, Most Gracious, Most Merciful.

(SÚRA FÁTIHA) Holy Qur'an 1: 1

Can you beat that?

There are many more challenges and prophecies in the Holy Qur'an and in the **Ahádith** (traditions of the Prophet) which can be expounded. It is a neglected field. Perhaps books can be written on the subject. I trust that Muslim scholars will take up the challenge. But let me end this theme of prophecy with one last reference from Allah's **Kalaam** (the book of God).

## ISLAM TO PREVAIL

(e) **It is He who has sent His  
Messenger with Guidance and  
the Religion of Truth.**

**That he may proclaim it over all religion.**

**Even though the associators may  
detest (it).**

(SÚRA ŞAFF) Holy Qur'an 61: 9

- 
1. "He who goes a borrowing, goes a sorrowing!"
  2. **Plagiarism:** the act of stealing and using (the ideas or writings of another) as one's own. Stealing in literature.

Within decades the above promise became true. Islam prevailed. The two superpowers of the day, the Persian and the Roman Empires crumbled at the hands of the Muslims. And for centuries the power of Islam predominated — from the Atlantic to the Pacific.

Alas, the Muslims are in the doldrums today. But fear not, the world of Islam is arising. There is hope. Even non-Muslim Visionaries in the West have predicted its destiny to be in the skies.

“AFRICA IS A FAIR FIELD FOR ALL RELIGIONS, BUT THE RELIGION WHICH THE AFRICAN WILL ACCEPT, IS A RELIGION WHICH BEST SUITS HIS NEEDS: AND THAT RELIGION, EVERYONE WHO HAS A RIGHT TO SPEAK ON THE SUBJECT SAYS, IS ISLAM.”

“*The Shape of Things to Come*” H.G. Wells

“IF ANY RELIGION HAS A CHANCE OF CONQUERING ENGLAND, NAY EUROPE WITHIN THE NEXT HUNDRED YEARS, THAT RELIGION IS ISLAM.”

George Bernard Shaw

Without any real effort on the part of the Muslims, we are told by the Westerners themselves that Islam is the fastest growing religion in the world today. I hope, this pleasant news does not lull us to sleep. The promise of God is true, the destiny is there, only a little exertion is required on our part. Allah can transform nations and peoples by His Own Will, but He has given us the privilege of serving His **Deen** by personal self-sacrifice. To be an effective soldier in this battle, arm yourself with John 16: 7 in one or more languages (see page 43), and watch how Allah fills you with more knowledge. It is our destiny to master, supercede and bulldoze every **ism**, never mind how much the unbeliever may be averse to the Message of Islam.

## GLORIFYING JESUS (PBUH)

***He*** (the Spirit of truth) ***shall Glorify***  
***Me*** (Jesus): ***for he shall receive of***  
***mine, and shall shew it unto you.***

(HOLY BIBLE) John 16: 13

***But when the Comforter is come,***  
***whom I will send unto you***  
***from the Father, even the Spirit***  
***of truth, which proceedeth from***  
***the Father, he shall Testify***  
***of Me.***

(HOLY BIBLE) John 15: 26

This promised Comforter, **even** the Spirit of Truth in whom Truth is personified, when he comes, will bear witness to the truthfulness of the Messiah and absolve him from the calumnies of his enemies.

This, Muhummed (pbuh), ***Al-Amin***, the Prophet of Truth, eminently succeeded in doing. He made it possible that today, a **thousand million Muslims believe in Jesus Christ (pbuh) as one of the mightiest Messengers of God.** They believe in his miraculous birth, which many modern day Christians, even Bishops do not believe. And they also believe in his many miracles, including those of giving life to the dead by God's leave; and healing those born blind and the lepers by God's leave. What a mighty testimony! Listen to the moving terms of the story of his Annunciation:

## MIRACULOUS CONCEPTION

**And mention in the Book, the story of Mary, when she withdrew from her people to a place in the East.**



And she placed a screen to screen  
herself from them;  
Then we sent unto her Our  
Spirit, that appeared to her as  
a man in all respects.

She said, "I take refuge in the  
All-Merciful from you.  
If you fear Allah ..."

He said, "I am but a messenger  
come from your Lord, to  
announce to you the gift of a  
holy son."

She said, "How can I have a  
son, seeing that no man has  
touched me, and I am not  
unchaste?"

He said, "Even so your Lord has  
said:  
'Easy is that for Me, and that  
We may appoint him a sign unto  
men and a mercy from Us; it is  
a thing decreed'."

So she conceived him, and withdrew  
with him to a distant place ...

(*SÚRA MARYAM*) Holy Qur'an 19: 16-22

At the present moment a billion Muslims throughout the world accept the Immaculate Conception of Jesus (pbuh) on the authority of Muhammed (pbuh) alone. Jesus (pbuh), his mother Mary and the whole Christian world can never thank ***Al-Amin*** — the Spirit of Truth, enough.

## JEWISH RESPONSE TO JESUS

*O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou  
that killest the prophets, and  
stonest them which are sent  
unto thee, how often would I  
(Jesus) have gathered thy children  
together, even as a hen gathereth  
her chickens under her wings,  
but ye would not let me!*

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 23: 37

That mighty Messenger of God went after the Jews like a hen after her chickens, but they turned on him like vultures to tear him into pieces. Not satisfied with their relentless assaults and harassment and the eventual attempt on his life<sup>1</sup>; they charged his mother for having ill-begotten him in sin.

**That they (the Jews) rejected Faith;  
and they uttered against Mary a  
grave false charge.**

(SÚRA NISÁA) Holy Qur'an 4: 156

What was that “**grave false charge**”? — The nearest to uttering the actual calumny, Muhummed (pbuh) the true “**Glorifier**” of Jesus (John 16: 13) is made to record.

**“O sister of Aaron! thy father was  
not a man of evil, nor thy  
mother a woman unchaste!”**

(SÚRA MARYAM) Holy Qur'an 19: 28

## WHAT SAY THE TALMUDISTS

The Jewish charge of the illegitimacy of Jesus (pbuh) and the adultery of Mary is referred to here as an insinuation of the Jews, questioning Mary's **chastity**. The Holy Qur'an does not

---

<sup>1</sup> For a detailed record of how God foiled the Jewish plot on the life of the Messiah, consult Vol II, Part 3 - “**Crucifixion or Cruci-fiction?**”

stoop down to even reproducing the actual monstrous slander. Now compare this Qur'anic terminology with what the erudite and famous Rev. Dummelow, backed by no less than a team of sixteen Christian divines, all Reverends and D.D.s; as to **their** choice of words in recording the calumny of the enemies of Christ:

THE JEWISH TALMUDISTS SAID, 'THE SON OF THE **ADULTERESS**' (I.E. OF THE VIRGIN MARY) 'BROUGHT MAGIC OUT OF EGYPT, BY CUTTINGS WHICH HE HAD MADE IN HIS FLESH.' 'JESUS PRACTISED MAGIC AND DECEIVED, AND DROVE ISRAEL TO IDOLATRY.' **IT IS INTERESTING TO NOTICE THAT MAHOMET INDIGNANTLY REPUDIATED THESE JEWISH CALUMNIES.**" (Emphasis added)

*Dummelow's Bible Commentary page 668*

## EVANGELIST CORROBORATES JEWS

Josh Mc Dowell, described as a graduate of Wheaton College and magna cum laude graduate of Talbot Theological Seminary, and who is reputed to have spoken to more than five million students and faculty at over 550 universities in 53 countries, seems to have done more research than the whole galaxy of Biblical scholars, mentioned above, on the subject of the Jewish Talmud regarding the birth of his "Lord."

In his book — "***Evidence that Demands a Verdict***," just to prove that Jesus (pbuh) was not a myth but a historical person, he quotes extensively from the **Jewish Talmud** without any inhibitions. I give you below a few brief excerpts from pages 85/86 of his book.

**"*Tol'doth Yeshu*. JESUS IS REFERRED TO AS 'BEN PANDERA.'"**<sup>1</sup>

---

1. "**BEN PANDERA:**" means — son of Pandera. A Roman soldier alleged by the Jews to have raped Mary to produce her illegitimate offspring. (May God forbid!) May He forgive us for even reproducing such blasphemies.

**Yeb. IV 3; 49a:**

“R. SHIMEON BEN AZZAI SAID (CONCERNING JESUS): ‘I FOUND A GENEALOGICAL ROLL IN JERUSALEM WHEREIN WAS RECORDED, SUCH-AN-ONE IS A BASTARD OF AN ADULTERESS.’ ”

**Joseph Klausner** adds to the above:

“CURRENT EDITIONS OF THE *Mishnah*, ADD: ‘TO SUPPORT THE WORDS OF R. YEHOSHUA’ (WHO IN THE SAME *Mishnah*, SAYS: WHAT IS A BASTARD? EVERYONE WHOSE PARENTS ARE LIABLE TO DEATH BY THE BETH DIN), THAT JESUS IS HERE REFERRED TO SEEMS TO BE BEYOND DOUBT ...”

5/35

## MISSIONARY LOLLS HIS TONGUE

Josh McDowell, the great evangelist, “**born-again**” Christian; worshipper of Christ, filled with the Holy Ghost (?) lolls his tongue when quoting calumnies of the enemies against his Lord and God — Jesus! And the Christian world laps it up. His books are bestsellers in Christendom. A taste for filth and insults has been created in the votaries of Christ. I refuse to quote further from that filthy narration. If Jesus (pbuh) has such devoted friends (?), what need is there for him to have enemies.

Muhummed (pbuh) really was the true Friend, the Comforter, the Helper, the Advocate, the Glorifier, the Testifier of these prophecies in John chapters 14, 15 and 16. Let me repeat the ungrudging tribute of his enemies to this Benefactor of Jesus (pbuh), his mother Mary and humanity at large: “**It is interesting to notice that Mahomet' indignantly repudiated these Jewish calumnies.**” (Rev. Dummelow and his associates).

---

1. “**Mahomet**”: It is a pity that scholars of Christianity of the highest eminence still misspell the name of the Holy Prophet, even at the end of the twentieth century.

## CHAPTER SIX

### *Extremism Condemned*

We will now allow the Spirit of Truth to lay the Ghost of Jewish and Christian extremism, and put the records straight regarding their controversies about the Messiah. The Jews said that Jesus (pbuh) was the illegitimate son of Mary because he could not point a finger to a father. The Christians for the same reason made him into a God and the “**begotten**” son of God. Just one verse to debunk this lie!

**O People of the Book!**

**Do not go to extremes in your religion: nor say of Allah anything but the truth.**

**Verily, Christ' Jesus the son of Mary was no more than a messenger of Allah, and His Word which he bestowed upon Mary,**

**And a Spirit proceeding from Him: so believe in Allah and his messengers.**

**Say not “Trinity”: desist: it will be better for you:**

**For your Allah is One God:  
Glory be to Him:**

---

1. **Christ:** In the Arabic Text of the Holy Qur'an the word is **Masih**, which is the same as the Hebrew word Messiah.

**(Far Exalted is He) above having  
a son. To Him belongs all  
things in the heavens and the earth.**

**And enough is Allah as a Disposer of affairs.**

*(SÚRA NISÁÁ) Holy Qur'an 4: 171*

Note 657/6 on the above verse

Just as a foolish servant may go wrong by excess of zeal for his master, so in religion people's excesses may lead them to blasphemy or a spirit the very opposite of religion.

The Jewish excesses in the direction of formalism, racialism, exclusiveness, and rejection of Christ Jesus have been denounced in many places in the Holy Qur'an.

Here the Christian attitude is condemned, which raises Jesus to an equality with God; in some cases venerates Mary almost to idolatry; attributes a physical son to God; and invents the doctrine of the Trinity, opposed to all reason, which according to the Athanasian Creed, unless a man believes, he is doomed to hell for ever."

The attributes of Christ are mentioned here:

1. That he was the son of a woman, Mary, and therefore a man.
2. But an apostle, a man with a mission from God, and therefore entitled to honour.
3. A Word bestowed on Mary, for he was created by God's word "Be" (*kun*) and he was. H.Q. 3: 59.
4. A spirit proceeding from God, but not God: his life and his mission were more limited than in the case of some other apostles, though we must pay equal honour to him as a man of God.

CONT. NEXT PAGE

The doctrines of Trinity, equality with God, and sonship, are repudiated as blasphemies. God is independent of all needs and has no need of a son to manage His affairs.”

Abdullah Yusuf Ali<sup>1</sup>

## NOTHING FROM SELF

You give this Spirit of Truth (Muhummed pbuh) too much credit, when you allege that he wrote the preceding verses and further authored more than six thousand other verses of the Noble Qur'an.

He cries to us again and again in the Book of God, that this is not my handiwork — **“IT IS NO LESS THAN AN INSPIRATION SENT DOWN TO HIM (Muhummed)”** (Holy Qur'an 53: 4). Exactly as it was prophesied by Jesus (pbuh) —

*... for he shall not speak from himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak...*

(HOLY BIBLE) John 16: 13

## CHRISTIAN “TRILEMMA”

All the testification and glorification by this **“another Comforter,”** does not placate the Christians. Because Muhummed (pbuh) did not pander to their prejudices. To them glorification meant to deify Jesus (pbuh) — to make him into a God. Instead of solving their **dilemma**<sup>2</sup> whether Jesus (pbuh) “died” on the cross as a man, or as a God? They have now invented a **trilemma**. A word not to be found in any dictionary in the world. Josh McDowell the Travelling Representative for Campus

1. The above consists of just two notes out of over six thousand explanatory notes from Yusuf Ali's translation. See inside back cover for an irresistible offer.

2. **Dilemma:** A situation that requires one to choose between two equally balanced and often equally unpleasant alternatives.

Crusade for Christ International, in his book — **“Evidence that Demands a Verdict,”** actually uses his new inspired (by the “Holy Ghost”?) conundrum<sup>1</sup> for his chapter 7 — **“TRILEMMA - Lord, Liar or Lunatic?”** You have now guessed it! The three L’s! He wants his readers to answer whether Jesus Christ is your **LORD** (God), or was he a **LIAR**, or a **LUNATIC**? Very ingenious, you will agree! No Muslim could utter that Jesus Christ was a liar, or a lunatic: then what? It is more than any dilemma! It is actually blasphemy of the highest degree. But he is blinded by his preconceived notions. Roger Bacon, the philosopher who was born too soon, rightly said: **“IT IS EASIER FOR A MAN TO BURN DOWN HIS OWN HOUSE THAN TO GET RID OF HIS PREJUDICES.”**

### **WISDOM OF THE CHILD**

To say of any man that he is God, the **“begotten”** son of God, or that his father is God; is not an honour but an insult. A French peasant understood this distinction better than the millions of erudite Christian scholars walking the earth today.

It is reputed that Louis XV, King of France was a very lecherous person. No woman was safe from his debaucheries. After his death, when his son was well settled on the throne, a rumour spread around Paris that an exact duplicate of the young king was seen roaming about the capital. The King was naturally intrigued to see his double. It did not take the King’s men long to have the rustic from the countryside presented before the King. The King was amused by the stark resemblance to himself and his late father. He was tickled to have a dig at the poor farmer. He politely asked, “Did your mother ever visit Paris during my father’s reign?” **“No!”** the rustic replied, **“But my father did!”** This was a death-knell for the King, but he had asked for it!

---

1. **Conundrum:** A puzzling problem or question admitting of no satisfactory solution.



## DON'T GO TO EXTREMES

The rank hatred of the Jews which lead them to slander Jesus and his mother is bad, and the over-infatuation of the Christians for Christ is also bad. Muhammed (pbuh) the Messenger of God condemned both these extremes, and elevated Jesus (pbuh) to his true status, as the Messiah, a great prophet and reformer.

**Love him, respect him, revere him, follow him; but do not worship him! For worship is due to God alone, the Father in heaven: ALLAH!**<sup>1</sup>

This is true glorification — for,

***“He shall glorify me!”***

(HOLY BIBLE) John 16: 14

Historically, morally and prophetically, Muhammed (pbuh) the last and final Messenger of God, **“The Spirit of Truth,”** is the only one to guide mankind into all truth. He is pre-eminently **the Natural Successor to Christ.**

Your further inquiries, comments and criticisms are welcome. Don't just sit there, for the sake of God, act now!



**AHMED DEEDAT**  
(Servant of Islam)

## EPILOGUE

Dear reader, it has been suggested that some Christian propagandists might lure you from your exposition of the preceding pages, by dangling before you the “Pentecostal” experience.

Pentecost was a Jewish festival day, celebrated on the fiftieth day after the beginning of corn harvesting. The Jews gathered in

---

1. **ALLAH:** The name for God Almighty in the semitic languages See Vol. III, Part 3 — **“What is His Name?”** from the IPCI.

Jerusalem from far and wide for the feast. Peter with **“the Eleven,”**<sup>1</sup> together with others were in one place, when suddenly they heard the roaring of a mighty windstorm in the skies above them where they were sitting. This electrified the people and they began to **“speak in tongues,”** in dialects and languages foreign to themselves. Some marvelled while others mocked, saying, **“They’re drunk, that’s all!”** It reminded them of the **“babbling”** at Babel (Genesis 11: 9).

The Christian missionaries contend that that was the fulfilment of what Jesus (pbuh) had prophesied in John chapters 14, 15 and 16. Astounding as the whole drama may sound, Peter, the one, the Master had appointed to **“feed my lambs . . . feed my sheep”** (John 21: 15-16), rose to defend the disciples, saying, “These men are not drunk! It’s much too early for that! People don’t get drunk so early in the morning!”

***But this is that which was spoken  
by the prophet Joel . . .***<sup>2</sup>

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Acts 2: 16

Pentecost was the fulfilment of the prophecy of the prophet **Joel** and not of any predictions of Jesus (pbuh). Christendom believes that Peter was inspired to record the same. Both obviously tickled by the Holy Ghost! Not a **single word**<sup>3</sup> is recorded anywhere as to what these apostles of Christ had babbled or murmured on Pentecost day, yet as to the Comforter, he was to guide mankind **“into all Truth!”** Proving once again that the Comforter is **not the Holy Ghost!**

- 
1. **“The Eleven”** (Acts 2: 14). No Bible commentator dare discuss as to who these eleven were, because Judas the traitor was long since dead. The Holy Ghost failed to inform Luke. That at best there could only be ten beside Peter and not **eleven!**
  2. **“Prophet Joel:”** In **“The New English Bible,”** published by The Bible Societies in association with the Oxford University Press in their fourteenth impression of 1984, expunged the name **JOEL,** without an apology. He was too insignificant (?) a prophet, having written only two pages in a thousand of the Bible. If Christendom can edit out names of their own prophets, what will they not do to names like **Ishmael** and **Ahmed?**
  3. On the contrary, hear what Muhummed (pbuh) the Comforter uttered in his trances in fulfilment of the prophecies. Get your **“Future World Constitution”** today! See inside back cover.

# Muhammed

PEACE BE UPON HIM



## the Greatest

BY  
AHMED DEEDAT

## CHAPTER ONE

### *Everybody's Choice*

**AND MOST CERTAINLY,  
THOU (O MUHUMMED)  
ART OF MOST SUBLIME  
AND EXALTED CHARACTER.**

وَإِنَّكَ لَعَلَىٰ خُلُقٍ عَظِيمٍ ۝

(SŪRA QALAM) Holy Qur'an 68:4<sup>1</sup>

### HOW THE TOPIC AROSE

About ten years ago, a distant cousin of mine — Mr. Mohamed Mehtar (Farooki)<sup>2</sup> gave me a typed quotation by the French historian, Lamartine. The quotation<sup>3</sup> purported to prove that Muhammed (pbuh), the prophet of Islam, was the greatest man that ever lived. Mr. Mehtar was in the habit of passing information on to me, believing that I might put the same to some good use at the proper time and place. Before this he had presented me with “**The Call of the Minaret**” an expensive book written by (Bishop Kenneth Cragg). By analysing this book I discovered the masterful deceit of the Christian orientalist.

Lamartine's tribute to our prophet inspired me and I had a great desire to share his thoughts about our **Nabee** with my Muslim brethren. The opportunity to do so was not long in coming.

I received a phone call from the Muslim community in Dannhauser, a small town in Northern Natal, who were organising a birthday celebration of the Holy Prophet. They invited me to give a lecture on that auspicious occasion. So I deemed it an honour and a privilege, I readily agreed. When they inquired, in view of

- 
1. I urge my Muslim brethren to memorize the verse in Arabic and its meaning.
  2. Mr. Mehtar was for a long time editor of the Muslim newspaper “**The Indian Views**,” in South Africa.
  3. A detailed exposition of the quotation will be found on page 137.

their advertising needs, as to the subject of my lecture, I suggested on the inspiration from Lamartine, "**Muhummed (pbuh) the Greatest.**"

### REPEATED LET-DOWNS

On my arrival in Dannhauser, I noticed a lot of posters advertising the meeting which in essence said that Deedat would be lecturing on the subject "MUHUMMED THE GREAT." I was somewhat disheartened and, on inquiring was told that the change in the title was due to a printer's error.

Some two months later, I got another, similar invitation. This time from the Muslim community of Pretoria the administrative capital of South Africa. The subject I had mooted was the same — "**Muhummed (pbuh) the Greatest.**" To my dismay the topic was again changed to "MUHUMMED THE GREAT." Identical reasons and excuses were given. Both these incidents happened in South Africa, my own country. But, let me give you one more example of our inferiority complex — so much part of the sickness of the *Ummah*.

### USA NO DIFFERENT

On my lecture tour of the mighty United States in 1977, I discovered that our soldiers in the New World also had feet of clay. Out of the many sad experiences I have had, I think that this one will suffice to prove the point.

The Muslims of Indianapolis were advised to organise a lecture for me on the subject "**What the Bible says about Muhummed (pbuh)**".<sup>1</sup> They agreed to advertise just that, but their timidity did not permit them to do so. They thought the topic was too provocative, so they, in their wisdom (?), toned it down to "A PROPHET IN THE BIBLE." A lifeless, insipid title you will

---

1. A book with the same title is available absolutely **FREE** from the IPCI.

no doubt agree. Which Hindu, Muslim, Christian or Jew would be intrigued to attend? What does “**A PROPHET**” mean? To most A PROPHET means **ANY** PROPHET, and who would be interested in attending a meeting where just **any** prophet in the Bible was debated? Job, Joel, Jonah, Ezra, Elisha, Ezekiel are just a few of the many mentioned in the Bible. As was to be expected the attendance left much to be desired.

### INFERIORITY COMPLEX

What is the cause of this sickness? This inferiority complex? “**Yes!**” We are an emasculated people. Dynamism has been wrung out of us, not only by our enemies but by our own spiritless friends. We even dare not repeat Allah’s Own testimony regarding his beloved —

**And Most Certainly,  
Thou (O MUHUMMED)  
Art of most sublime  
And Exalted Character.**

*Holy Qur’an 68:4<sup>1</sup>*

### THE MOST INFLUENTIAL

Normally, it is quite, natural for anyone to love, praise, idolize or hero-worship one’s leader, be it a guru, saint or prophet: and very often we do.

However, if I were to reproduce here<sup>2</sup> what great Muslims have said or written about our illustrious prophet, it could be played down as exaggeration, fancy or idolization by the sceptics and the opponents of Islam. Therefore, allow me to quote unbiased historians, friendly critics and even avowed enemies of that mighty Messenger of God — Muhummed (pbuh). If the tributes of

---

1. This verse, together with its Arabic text heads this chapter; memorize the verse with its meaning.

2. For an example see Appendix “A” at the end of this book.

the non-Muslims do not touch your hearts, then you are in the wrong faith. Opt out of Islam! There is already too much dead-wood on the "ship" of Islam.

In recent times, a book has been published in America titled "**The 100**," or the Top One Hundred, or the Greatest Hundred in History. A certain Michael H. Hart, described as a historian, mathematician and astronomer has written this novel book. He has searched history, seeking for men who had the greatest influence on mankind. In this book he gives us the hundred most influential men, including Asoka, Aristotle, Buddha, Confucius, Hitler, Plato, and Zoroaster. He does not give us a mere chart of the topmost "**one hundred**" from the point of view of their influence on people, but he evaluates the degree of their influence and rates them in order of their excellence from No. 1, through to No. 100. He gives us his reasons for the placing of his candidates. We are not asked to agree with him, but we cannot help admire the man's research and honesty.

The most amazing thing about his selection is that he has put our **Nabee-e-Kareem**, the Holy Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) as No. 1,<sup>1</sup> the first of his "100!" Thus confirming, unknowingly, God's Own testimony in His Final Revelation to the World:

**MOST CERTAINLY, YOU HAVE  
IN THE MESSENGER OF ALLAH<sup>2</sup>  
AN EXCELLENT PATTERN (OF BEHAVIOUR)**

لَقَدْ كَانَ لَكُمْ فِي  
رَسُولِ اللَّهِ أُسْوَةٌ  
حَسَنَةٌ

(SÚRA AHZÁB) Holy Qur'an 33:21

### JESUS (PBUH) No. 3!

Hart placing the Prophet of Islam as No. 1, has naturally pleased the Muslims. But his choice has shocked the Non-Muslims, more

- 
1. With the kind permission of Mr. Hart, we have just reproduced the whole chapter on Muhammed (pbuh) from the "**Top 100**". Get your **FREE** copy now from the I.P.C.I.
  2. **Allah**: A proper noun for God Almighty in the Semitic languages; i.e. in the languages of Moses, Jesus and Muhammed (Peace be on them all). For more details obtain "**What is His Name?**" from the I.P.C.I.

specially the Jews and the Christians, who consider this as an affront. What? Jesus (pbuh) No. 3 and Moses (pbuh) No. 40! This is for them very difficult to stomach, but what says Hart? Let us hear his arguments —

**SINCE THERE ARE ROUGHLY TWICE AS MANY CHRISTIANS IN THE WORLD, IT MAY INITIALLY SEEM STRANGE THAT MUHAMMAD HAS BEEN RANKED HIGHER THAN JESUS.**

**THERE ARE TWO PRINCIPAL REASONS FOR THAT DECISION.**

**FIRST, MUHAMMAD PLAYED A FAR MORE IMPORTANT ROLE IN THE DEVELOPMENT OF ISLAM THAN JESUS DID IN THE DEVELOPMENT OF CHRISTIANITY.**

**ALTHOUGH JESUS WAS RESPONSIBLE FOR THE MAIN ETHICAL AND MORAL PRECEPTS OF CHRISTIANITY (INSOFAR AS THESE DIFFERED FROM JUDAISM), ST. PAUL WAS THE MAIN DEVELOPER OF CHRISTIAN THEOLOGY, ITS PRINCIPAL PROSELYTIZER, AND THE AUTHOR OF A LARGE PORTION OF THE NEW TESTAMENT.**

**MUHAMMAD, HOWEVER, WAS RESPONSIBLE FOR BOTH THE THEOLOGY OF ISLAM AND ITS MAIN ETHICAL AND MORAL PRINCIPLES.**

**IN ADDITION, HE PLAYED THE KEY ROLE IN PROSELYTIZING THE NEW FAITH, AND IN ESTABLISHING THE RELIGIOUS PRACTICES OF ISLAM.**

**Michael H. Hart in his book -- "THE 100" page 38/39**

- 
1. The latest estimate is that there are one thousand million Muslims in the world and one thousand two hundred million Christians.



## PAUL THE FOUNDER OF CHRISTIANITY

According to Hart, the honour for founding Christianity is to be shared between Jesus (pbuh) and St. Paul. The latter he believes to be the real founder of Christianity.

I cannot help agreeing with Hart. Out of the total of 27 Books of the New Testament, more than half is authored by Paul. As opposed to Paul, the Master has not written a single word of the twenty-seven books. If you can lay your hands on what is called "**A Red Letter Bible**," you will find every word alleged to have been uttered by Jesus (pbuh) — in red ink and the rest in normal black ink. Don't be shocked to find that in this so-called "**Injeel**," the Gospel of Jesus, over ninety percent of the 27 Books of the New Testament is printed in black ink!

This is the candid Christian confession on what they call the "**Injeel**." In actual confrontation with Christian missionaries, you will find them quoting one hundred percent from Paul.

## NO ONE FOLLOWS JESUS (PBUH)

Jesus (pbuh) said,

***"If you love me, keep my commandments"***

John 14:15

He said further,

***Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven ..."***

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 5:19

Every Christian controversialist you question, "Do you keep the laws and the commandments?" will answer, "**No!**" if you ask further, "Why don't you?" he will if he is a Bible-thumper, invariably reply, "**The law is nailed to the cross!**" Meaning the law is done away with. "**We are now living under grace!**"

Every time you prod him with what his Lord and Master Jesus (pbuh) had said, he will confront you with something from Corinthians, Galatians, Ephesians, Philippians, etc. If you ask, "Who are they?" You will hear, "Paul, Paul, Paul!" "Who is your master? you question, and he will say, "Jesus!" But he will ever and anon contradict his own Jesus (pbuh) by his Paul!

No learned Christian will ever dispute the fact that the real founder of Christianity is St. Paul. Therefore, Michael H. Hart to be fair, had to place Jesus (pbuh), in slot number three.

### WHY PROVOKE YOUR CUSTOMER?

This placing of Christ in the number three spot by Michael H. Hart poses a very serious question for us. Why would an American publish a book of 572 pages in America and selling in America for \$15 each, go out of his way to provoke his potential readers?

Who will buy his books? Surely, not the Pakistanis and the Bangladeshis, neither the Arabs nor the Turks! Except for a few copies here and there, the overwhelming number of his customers will be from the 250 million Christians and the 6 million Jews of America. Then why did he provoke his customers? Did he not hear the dictum — **"the customer is always right!"** Of course he did. Then why his daring choice. But before I close this episode of Hart, I will allow him to make his one last apology for his "temerity."

**"MY CHOICE OF MUHAMMAD TO LEAD THE LIST OF THE WORLD'S MOST INFLUENTIAL PERSONS MAY SURPRISE SOME READERS AND MAY BE QUESTIONED BY OTHERS, BUT HE WAS THE ONLY MAN IN HISTORY WHO WAS SUPREMEY SUCCESSFUL ON BOTH THE RELIGIOUS AND SECULAR LEVEL."**

**Michael H. Hart**

*"The 100: A Ranking of the Most Influential Persons in History"*, New York: Hart Publishing Company, Inc., 1978, p.33.

## WHO WERE HISTORY'S GREAT LEADERS TIME, JULY 15, 1974

The world famous "**Time**"<sup>1</sup> carried the above rubric on its front cover. Inside the magazine were numerous essays as to '**What makes a great leader?**' '**Throughout history, who qualifies?**' TIME asked a variety of historians, writers, military men, businessmen and others for their selections. Each gave his candidate according to his "light" as objectively as is humanly possible, depending on one's own awareness and prejudice.

### WHO KNOWS DR. SALAZAR?

It is my habit and pleasurable duty to take non-Muslims on a guided tour<sup>2</sup> of the largest mosque in the Southern Hemisphere — "**The Jumma Masjid**", Durban.

On one occasion I was hosting a Portuguese couple, a husband and wife team. At some stage during the discussion the Portuguese gentleman said that "**Dr. Salazar was the greatest man in the world!**" I did not debate the point with him as I personally knew little about Dr. Salazar except that he was a one-time dictator of Portugal albeit to many a great benefactor to his nation. My poor visitor was, however, speaking according to his own knowledge, point of view and prejudice.

### MUHUMMED (PBUH) CANNOT BE IGNORED!

Among the contributors to the "**Time**," it seems that none could ignore Muhummed (pbuh).

- 
1. "**Time**" We are at loggerhead with this magazine. Believe it or not; they have spurned our paid advertisement as shown on the last page of this volume. The words "**FUTURE WORLD CONSTITUTION**" was referred back to us in their correspondence as "The Future World **CONFRONTATION**."
  2. Obtain the Video Tape — "**NON-MUSLIMS IN YOUR MOSQUE**," available on Pal and NTSC systems from the IPCI.

**WILLIAM McNEILL**, a United States historian, of the University of Chicago, records:

“IF YOU MEASURE LEADERSHIP BY IMPACT, THEN YOU WOULD HAVE TO NAME JESUS, BUDDHA, MOHAMMED, CONFUCIUS, THE GREAT PROPHETS OF THE WORLD ...”

McNeill does not go into details, nor does he give us any explanation as to why he placed Jesus (pbuh) first and Muhummed (pbuh) number three. Perhaps it was by force of habit. It is very likely that McNeill is a Christian. However, we will not argue with him. Then comes —

**JAMES GAVIN**, described as a United States army man, a retired lieutenant general. He says —

“AMONG LEADERS WHO HAVE MADE THE GREATEST IMPACT THROUGH AGES, I WOULD CONSIDER MOHAMMED, JESUS CHRIST, MAYBE LENIN, POSSIBLY MAO. AS FOR A LEADER WHOSE QUALITIES WE COULD MOST USE NOW, I WOULD CHOOSE JOHN F. KENNEDY.”

The General does not say much more, yet we have to salute him. It calls for tremendous fortitude to pen the name Muhummed before that of Christ (peace be upon them both). It surely, was no slip of the pen.

**JULES MASSERMAN**, United States psychoanalyst and professor of the Chicago University, gives us, unlike the other contributors, the basis for making his selection. He gives us his reason for choosing his greatest LEADER of all times.

He wants us to find out, what we are really looking for in the man, the qualities that sets him apart. We may be looking for any sets of qualities. As in the case of Michael H. Hart, he was

looking for a person wielding the **MOST influence.**<sup>1</sup>

However, Masserman does not want us to depend on our fancies or prejudices: he wants to establish objective standards for judging, before we confer greatness upon anybody.

He says that "**Leaders must fulfil three functions - -**"

No. 1 THE LEADER MUST PROVIDE FOR THE WELL-BEING OF THE LEAD ...

The leader, whoever he is, must be interested in your welfare. He must not be looking for milking cows for his own greed like the Rev. Jim Jones of Jonestown, Guyana, of the "**Suicide Cult**" notoriety. You will remember him as the man who committed suicide together with 910 of his followers, all at the same time **EN MASSE!**

The United States Government was on his trail and he was on the verge of being caught for certain felonies. But before they could apprehend him, he thought it wise to eliminate himself, together with all his followers, so that no one would be left to testify against him. He laced lemonade with cyanide and inspired his devotees to drink it, and so they did and they all died in disgrace! In the meantime, it was discovered that the Rev. Jim Jones had salted away fifteen million dollars and stacked it in his own account in banks throughout the world. All his victims were his milking cows and he was exploiting them to satisfy his own lust and greed. Masserman's hero must be found to benefit his sheep, his flock, and not himself.

No. 2 THE LEADER OR WOULD BE LEADER MUST PROVIDE A SOCIAL ORGANIZATION IN WHICH PEOPLE FEEL RELATIVELY SECURE ...

---

1. Since Hart published his "**TOP 100**" many people have published books with the same theme. "**100 GREAT GOLFERS,**" or "**100 GREAT BATSMEN.**" Many more will no doubt follow.

Unlike the Marxist, the Fascist, the Nazi, the Neo-Nazi, the Ashkenazi,<sup>1</sup> the Zionist, and their fellow-travellers, Professor Masserman, in his brief essay in the TIME magazine, did not spell this out. But his beliefs and feelings are abundantly clear. He is in search of a Leader who will provide a social order free of selfishness, and greed and racism: for all these “isms” carry within them the seeds of their own destruction.

There's still with us much sorrow and sin,  
 Injustice, oppression, wrong and hate.  
 Still does Arrogance deaden Conscience,  
 Rob struggling souls of e'en the crumbs  
 Of Pity, and make, of loathsome flesh  
 And crumbling dust, fair-seeming Idols  
 For worship. Still does Ignorance blow  
 A mighty Horn and try to shame  
 True Wisdom. Still do men drive Slaves, - -  
 Protesting smoothly the end of Slavery!  
 Still does Greed devour the substance  
 Of helpless ones within her power.  
 Nay, more, - - the fine Individual Voice  
 Is smothered in the raucous din  
 Of groups and Crowds that madly shout  
 What they call Slogans New, - -  
 Old Falsehoods long discredited . . .

**Abdullah Yusuf Ali**

No. 3 THAT THIS LEADER MUST PROVIDE HIS  
 PEOPLE WITH ONE SET OF BELIEFS . . .

It is easy to talk of the Fellowship of Faith and the Brotherhood of Man, but in South Africa today, there are a thousand different

---

1. **Askhenazi**: the Jews from Germany, Central Europe and Eastern Europe, mostly from Russia who are in unlawful occupation of Palestine. There is something prophetic in the name itself – the Jews are doing to the people of the occupied territories exactly what the Nazis did to them. What an irony!

sects and denominations among the Whites (people of European descent) and three thousand among the Blacks (of African descent).

The White Churches in my country are spawning "Black" Bishops, fast, but in the first three hundred years of European conquest, they did not produce a single Black Bishop. Even now, the Black, the White, the Coloured and the Indian cannot pray together in most of the Dutch Reformed Churches. The hatred between the Christian sects was aptly described by the Christian Emperor Julian, who said:

"NO WILD BEASTS ARE SO HOSTILE TO MAN AS CHRISTIAN SECTS IN GENERAL ARE TO ONE ANOTHER."

Sayed Amir Ali in his "*Spirit of Islam*," page 1ii.

With the foregoing three standards, Masserman searches history and analyses Louis Pasteur, Salk, Gandhi, Confucius, Alexander the Great, Caesar, Hitler, Buddha, Jesus and the rest;<sup>1</sup> finally coming to the conclusion that —

PERHAPS THE GREATEST LEADER OF ALL TIMES WAS MUHAMMED, WHO COMBINED ALL THREE FUNCTIONS. (and) TO A LESSER DEGREE, MOSES DID THE SAME

We cannot help marvelling at Masserman, that as a Jew he condescends to scrutinize even Adolf Hitler, the arch-enemy of his people. He considers Hitler to be a great leader. His race, the mighty German nation of 90 million people, was ready to march to destiny or destruction at his behest. Alas, he led them to ruin.

Hitler is not the question. The question is why would Masserman, as an American Jew, a paid servant of the Government

---

1. For Masserman's full essay see Appendix "C" on page 160.

proclaim to his countrymen of over two hundred million Jews and Christians that **not** Jesus, **not** Moses **but** Muhummed<sup>1</sup> was **"The greatest Leader of all times!"** ACCOUNT FOR THAT!

### WHAT SAY THE SCEPTICS?

Michael H. Hart put Muhummed No. 1 on his list and his own Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ (pbuh) No. 3.

Why? **"Was he bribed!"** (?)

William McNeill considers Muhummed as worthy of honour in his list of the first three names of his.

Why? **"Was he bribed!"** (?)

James Gavin puts Muhummed (pbuh) before Christ (pbuh).

Why? **"Was he bribed!"** (?)

Jules Masserman adjudges Muhummed (pbuh) No. 1 and his own hero Moses (pbuh) a close second.

Why? **"Was he bribed"** (?)

"ARE WE TO SUPPOSE THAT ALL THE GLOWING ADULATION OF MUHUMMED (PBUH) WAS A MISERABLE PIECE OF INTELLECTUAL LEGERDEMAIN, HOCUS POCUS ... I, FOR MY PART, CANNOT FORM ANY SUCH SUPPOSITION ... ONE WOULD BE ENTIRELY AT A LOSS WHAT TO THINK OF MANKIND AT ALL IF QUACKERY SO GREW AND FLOURISHED IN THE WORLD."<sup>2</sup>

Yet the scoffers bemoan anyone who has anything good to say about Muhummed (pbuh) or Islam AS HAVING BEEN BRIBED by the Arabs! They are giving too much credit to my bretheren. I repeat: **"It is possible, but it is improbable!"**

During the Second World War, Norway produced only one "Quisling."<sup>3</sup> He was tried for treason and executed. It is unlikely

1. Blessings of God on all His Messengers.

2. With apologies to Thomas Carlyle and his **"Hero and Hero-worship."**

3. **"Quisling"** has come to mean a person who is a traitor to his nation and his country.



that America and the Western world have just reached puberty to spawn a breed of Quislings nurtured by hot petro-dollars from the Middle East. Please do not demean your honest, courageous men, who without fear or favour are prepared to suffer obloquy for their convictions. We must all admire them!

We can now justifiably conclude that the God of Mercy, Who forever recognises the sincere efforts of His servants, is only fulfilling His Promise to Muhummed (pbuh) His Chosen Messenger —

**AND HAVE WE NOT RAISED HIGH  
THE ESTEEM (IN WHICH) THOU  
(ART HELD)?**

وَرَفَعْنَا لَكَ ذِكْرَكَ ۝

(SÚRA INSHIRÁH) Holy Qur'an 94:4

Alternative renderings:<sup>1</sup>

- (a) **Have We not exalted thy fame?**
- (b) **And have We not raised thy name for thee?**
- (c) **Have We not given you high renown?**

Friends and foe alike, as if by some secret compulsion are made to pay unsolicited tributes to this mighty Messenger of God. But the Almighty enlists even the devil into His service, as He had done in the time of Jesus (pbuh), (Matthew 4:1-11). Even the devil sometimes speaks Gospel truths.

Professor K.S. Ramakrishna Rao, a Hindu philosopher, in his book "**MUHUMMED — The Prophet of Islam,**"<sup>2</sup> quotes the arch-devil himself, yes, Adolf Hitler, to prove the unique greatness of Muhummed (pbuh).

---

1. These quotes are from different translations of the Holy Qur'an. There are no separate "Versions" of the Holy Qur'an. For "**What is a Version,**" obtain my book — "**Is the Bible God's Word?**"

2. Obtainable **FREE** from the IPCI.

The Professor, like Jules Masserman who had evaluated the Prophet of Islam on three grounds (see appendix "C" on page 160) also saw in Hitler's "**Mein Kampf**" a three-faceted jewel, a rare commodity which he found in our hero under discussion. Quoting Hitler, he says:

"A GREAT THEORIST IS SELDOM A GREAT LEADER. AN AGITATOR IS FAR MORE LIKELY TO POSSESS THESE QUALITIES. HE WILL ALWAYS BE A BETTER LEADER. FOR, LEADERSHIP MEANS THE ABILITY TO MOVE MASSES OF MEN. THE TALENT TO PRODUCE IDEAS HAS NOTHING IN COMMON WITH THE CAPACITY FOR LEADERSHIP." Hitler continues, "THE UNION OF THE **THEORIST, ORGANISER, AND LEADER** IN ONE MAN IS THE RAREST PHENOMENON ON THIS EARTH; THEREIN CONSISTS GREATNESS." Professor Rao concludes, in his own words, "**IN THE PERSON OF THE PROPHET OF ISLAM THE WORLD HAS SEEN THIS RAREST PHENOMENON ON EARTH, WALKING IN FLESH AND BLOOD.**"

### SHARE THE ANGER

Before anyone assails the Professor of undue bias and "**bribery,**" let me give them a few more names of admirers of Muhummed (pbuh).

1. "MUHUMMAD WAS THE SOUL OF KINDNESS, AND HIS INFLUENCE WAS FELT AND NEVER FORGOTTEN BY THOSE AROUND HIM."

A Hindu scholar — *Diwan Chand Sharma* in his "**The Prophets of the East,**" Calcutta 1935, p.122.

2. "FOUR YEARS AFTER THE DEATH OF JUSTINIAN, A.D. 569, WAS BORN AT MAKKAH, IN ARABIA THE MAN WHO, OF ALL MEN EXERCISED THE

**GREATEST INFLUENCE<sup>1</sup> UPON THE HUMAN  
RACE . . . MOHAMMED . . .**

*John William Draper, M.D., LL.D., in his "A History of the  
Intellectual Development of Europe," London 1875.*

3. "I DOUBT WHETHER ANY MAN WHOSE EX-  
TERNAL CONDITIONS CHANGED SO MUCH EVER  
CHANGED HIMSELF LESS TO MEET THEM."

*R.V.C. Bodley in  
"The Messenger," London 1946, p.9.*

4. "I HAVE STUDIED HIM — THE WONDERFUL  
MAN — AND IN MY OPINION FAR FROM BEING  
AN ANTI-CHRIST, HE MUST BE CALLED THE  
SAVIOUR OF HUMANITY."

*George Bernard Shaw, in  
"The Genuine Islam," Vol. 1, No. 81936.*

5. "BY A FORTUNE ABSOLUTELY UNIQUE IN HIS-  
TORY, MOHAMMED IS A THREEFOLD FOUNDER  
OF A NATION, OF AN EMPIRE, AND OF A  
RELIGION."

*R. Bosworth-Smith in  
"Mohammed and Mohammedanism," 1946.*

6. "MOHAMMED WAS THE MOST SUCCESSFUL OF  
ALL RELIGIOUS PERSONALITIES."

**Encyclopedia Britannica, 11th Edition**

---

1. I wonder whether Michael H. Hart, as a historian, had stumbled across Draper's remark to inspire him to write his "**THE 100**," a ranking of the Most Influential Persons in History? See page 105. Have you written for your **FREE** copy of the chapter on Muhammed (pbuh) from the "**TOP 100**," yet?

## CHAPTER TWO

### *From the Historical Past*

It is not difficult to reproduce a further dozen or more eulogies by the admirers and critics of Muhammed (pbuh). Despite all their objectivity, jaundiced minds can always conjure up some aspersions. Let me take my readers deep down in past history.

It was Friday the 8th of May, 1840, that is about a hundred and fifty years ago, at a time when it was a sacrilege to say anything good about Muhammed (pbuh), and the Christian West was trained to hate the man Muhammed (pbuh) and his religion, the same way as dogs were at one stage trained in my country to hate all black people.<sup>1</sup> At that time in history, Thomas Carlyle, one of the greatest thinkers of the past century delivered a series of lectures under the theme — **“Heroes and Hero-worship.”**

#### DEVELOPED SICKNESS

Carlyle exposed this blind prejudice of his people at the beginning of his talk. He made reference to one of the literary giants a Dutch scholar and statesman, by the name of Hugo Grotius,<sup>2</sup> who had written a bitter and abusive invective against the prophet of Islam. He had falsely charged that the Holy Prophet had trained pigeons to pick out peas from his ears, so that he could by this trick bluff his people that the Holy Ghost in the shape of a dove was revealing God's Revelation to him, which he then had them recorded in his Bible the Qur'an. Perhaps Grotius was inspired into this fairy-tale from his reading of his own Holy Scriptures:

- 
1. By the way **“dogs are colour blind!”** Yet it can be done.
  2. From page 57 of the book — *“On Heroes Hero-worship and the Heroic in History”* by Thomas Carlyle, London 1959.

***Then Jesus, when he had been baptized*** (by John the Baptist in the Jordan River), ***came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to him, and he saw the Spirit of God Descending Like A Dove and alighting upon him.***

(Emphasis added)

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 3:16

## WHERE'S THE AUTHORITY

Pococke, another respected intellectual of the time, like “doubting Thomas” (John 20:25), wanted proof about Muhummed (pbuh), the pigeons, and the peas? Grotius answered “THAT THERE WAS NO PROOF!”

He just felt like inventing this story for his audience. To him and his audience the “pigeons and peas” theory was more plausible than that of the Archangel dictating to Muhummed (pbuh). These falsities wrung the heart of Carlyle. He cried:

“THE LIES, WHICH WELL-MEANING ZEAL HAS HEAPED ROUND THIS MAN, ARE DISGRACEFUL TO OURSELVES ONLY.”

*Thomas Carlyle*

## THE HERO PROPHET

Carlyle was a man of genius and God gifted him with the art of articulation. In his own way, he wanted to put the records straight. He planned to deliver a lecture and he chose a very provocative topic “**The Hero as Prophet.**” and he chose his hero-prophet to be the most maligned man of his time, “MUHUMMED (PBUH)!” Not Moses, David, Solomon, or Jesus but Muhummed!<sup>1</sup> To placate his overwhelming Anglican (belong-

---

<sup>1</sup> May the Peace and Blessings of God be upon all his servants.

ing to the Church of England) fellow countrymen, he apologised —

“AS THERE IS NO DANGER OF OUR BECOMING, ANY OF US, MAHOMETANS,<sup>1</sup> I MEAN TO SAY ALL THE GOOD OF HIM I JUSTLY CAN.”

In other words he, as well as his elite audience, were free from the fear of converting to Islam, and could take a chance in paying some compliments to Muhummed (pbuh). If he had any fears regarding the strength of their faith, he would not have taken that chance.

In an era of hatred and spite towards everything Islamic and to an audience full of scepticism and cynicism, Carlyle unfolded many a glowing truth about his hero — Muhummed (pbuh). To the “**praiseworthy**,” indeed be praise. For that is what the very name Muhummed means — the Praised One — the Praiseworthy. There are times when Carlyle uses words and expressions which might not be too pleasing to the believing Muslim, but one has to forgive him as he was walking a cultural tightrope, and he succeeded eminently.

He paid our hero many ardent and enthusiastic tributes, and defended him from the false charges and calumnies of his enemies; exactly as the Prophet had done in the case of Jesus (pbuh) and his mother.<sup>2</sup>

### HIS SINCERITY

- 1a. “THE GREAT MAN'S SINCERITY IS OF THE KIND HE CANNOT SPEAK OF : NAY, I SUPPOSE, HE IS CONSCIOUS RATHER OF **INSINCERITY**; FOR WHAT MAN CAN WALK ACCURATELY BY THE LAW OF TRUTH FOR ONE DAY? NO, THE

---

1. “Mahometans” means Muslims.

2. See “**Muhummed the Natural Successor to Christ**” by the author, Part 2 of this volume.

GREAT MAN DOES NOT BOAST HIMSELF SINCERE, FAR FROM THAT; PERHAPS DOES NOT ASK HIMSELF IF HE IS SO: I WOULD SAY RATHER, HIS SINCERITY DOES NOT DEPEND ON HIMSELF: HE CANNOT HELP BEING SINCERE!"

*Heroes and Hero-Worship, p.59*

- b. "A SILENT GREAT SOUL; HE WAS ONE OF THOSE WHO CANNOT **BUT** BE IN EARNEST; WHOM NATURE HERSELF HAS APPOINTED TO BE SINCERE. WHILE OTHERS WALK IN FORMULAS AND HEARSAYS, CONTENTED ENOUGH TO DWELL THERE, THIS MAN COULD NOT SCREEN HIMSELF IN FORMULAS; HE WAS ALONE WITH HIS OWN SOUL AND THE REALITY OF THINGS . . . SUCH **SINCERITY**, AS WE NAMED IT, HAS IN VERY TRUTH SOMETHING OF DIVINE. THE WORD OF SUCH A MAN IS A VOICE DIRECT FROM NATURE'S OWN **HEART**. MEN DO AND MUST LISTEN TO THAT AS TO NOTHING ELSE; - - - ALL ELSE IS WIND IN COMPARISON."

*Heroes and Hero-Worship, p.71*

In his lengthy speech Carlyle did not have the opportunity to inform his audience about the sources of his inferences. I may furnish just one incident from the life of the Prophet. An incident which reflects the highest degree of his sincerity in recording a Revelation in the Holy Qur'an even if it seems to reprove him for some natural and human zeal.

### **ADMONITION AS REVEALED**

It was in the early days of his mission in Makkah. Muhammed (pbuh) was deeply engrossed in trying to invite the leaders of the Pagan Quraish to his teachings. Apparently one of them was

giving him an attentive hearing when a poor blind man by the name of **Abdullah ibn Umm-i-Maktum** tried to barge in into the discussion and wanted to draw attention to himself. The blessed Prophet said nothing, but a thought went through his mind (why don't you have a little patience, can't you see (sense) that because of your impatience I might lose these customers). I believe that lesser men, sinners and saints, will not be questioned for such lapses, but not so for Muhummed (pbuh). Did not God choose him and honour him with that lofty status as recorded?

**And Most Certainly,  
Thou (O MUHUMMED)  
Art of most sublime  
And Exalted Character.**

(SÚRA QALAM) Holy Qur'an 68:4

### HE FROWNED

Whilst in the midst of the conversation with his pagan fellow tribesmen, God Almighty sends Gabriel, the Angel of Revelation, with this admonition:

**(THE PROPHET) FROWNED  
AND TURNED AWAY,**

عَبَسَ وَتَوَلَّى

**BECAUSE THERE CAME TO HIM  
THE BLIND MAN (INTERRUPTING).**

إِنَّ جَاءَهُ الْأَعْمَى

**BUT WHAT COULD TELL THEE  
THAT PERCHANCE HE MIGHT GROW  
(IN SPIRITUAL UNDERSTANDING)?**

وَمَا يُدْرِيكَ لَعَلَّه يُزَكَّى

**OR THAT HE MIGHT RECEIVE  
ADMONITION, AND THE TEACHING  
MIGHT PROFIT HIM?**

أَوْ يُذَكَّرُ  
فَتَنْفَعَهُ الذِّكْرُ

(SÚRA 'ABASA) Holy Qur'an 80:1-4

The holy Prophet (pbuh) had naturally disliked the interruption. Perhaps the poor man's feelings were hurt. But he whose gentle heart ever sympathised with the poor and the afflicted, got new



Light (Revelation) from his Lord, and without the least hesitation, he immediately published it for all eternity!

Subsequently, everytime he met this blind man, he received him graciously and thanked him that on his account the Lord had remembered him. During Muhammed's (pbuh) absences from Madinah, the blind man was made the Governor of the City twice. Such was the sincerity and gratitude of Carlyle's Hero Prophet.

### HIS FIDELITY<sup>1</sup>

2. "IT IS A BOUNDLESS FAVOUR. — — — HE NEVER FORGOT THIS GOOD KADIJAH. LONG AFTERWARDS, AYESHA HIS YOUNG FAVOURITE WIFE, A WOMAN WHO INDEED DISTINGUISHED HERSELF AMONG THE MOSLEMS, BY ALL MANNER OF QUALITIES, THROUGH HER WHOLE LONG LIFE; THIS YOUNG BRILLIANT AYESHA WAS, ONE DAY, QUESTIONING HIM: 'NOW AM NOT I BETTER THAN KADIJAH? SHE WAS A WIDOW; OLD, AND HAD LOST HER LOOKS: YOU LOVE ME BETTER THAN YOU DID HER?' — — — 'NO, BY ALLAH!' ANSWERED MAHOMET: 'NO, BY ALLAH! SHE BELIEVED IN ME WHEN NONE ELSE WOULD BELIEVE. IN THE WHOLE WORLD I HAD BUT ONE FRIEND, AND SHE WAS THAT!'"

*Heroes and Hero-Worship, p. 76*

It would have been easier to repel the temptation of the devil than to succumb to the ego of a young, loving, brilliant and beautiful wife like lady Ayesha Siddiqa. Why not let her hear the soft soothing balm of flattery; it will not harm anyone. Even the soul of Bibi Khadija, the mother of the Faithful, would look light-

---

1. A few poetic verses on fidelity will be found in Appendix "D" on page 160.

heartedly at the ruse. There is no shamming, no innocent “white lies” with Muhummed (pbuh). Traits of this kind show us the genuine man, brother of us all, brought visible through fourteen centuries, — — — the veritable son of our common mother.

### ‘AL AMEEN, THE FAITHFUL’

- 3a. “A MAN OF TRUTH AND FIDELITY; TRUE IN WHAT HE DID, IN WHAT HE SPAKE AND THOUGHT. THEY NOTED THAT **HE** ALWAYS MEANT SOMETHING. A MAN RATHER TACITURN IN SPEECH; SILENT WHEN THERE WAS NOTHING TO BE SAID; BUT PERTINENT, WISE, SINCERE, WHEN HE DID SPEAK; ALWAYS THROWING LIGHT ON THE MATTER. THIS IS THE ONLY SORT OF SPEECH **WORTH** SPEAKING!”

*Heroes and Hero-Worship, p. 69*

- b. “MAHOMET NATURALLY GAVE OFFENCE TO THE **KOREISH**, **KEEPERS** OF THE **KAABAH**, SUPERINTENDENTS OF THE IDOLS. ONE OR TWO MEN OF INFLUENCE HAD JOINED HIM: THE THING SPREAD SLOWLY, BUT IT WAS SPREADING, NATURALLY HE GAVE OFFENCE TO EVERYBODY.”<sup>1</sup>

*Heroes and Hero-Worship, p. 77*

- c. “NOT A MEALY MOUTHED MAN! A CANDID FEROCITY, IF THE CASE CALL FOR IT, IS IN HIM; HE DOES NOT MINCE MATTERS! THE **WAR OF TABUC** IS A THING HE OFTEN SPEAKS OF: HIS MEN REFUSED, MANY OF THEM, TO

1. The Jews hated the Prophet: the Christians hated the Prophet: the **Mushriks** (the Polytheists) hated the Prophet, and the **Munafiqeen** (the hypocrites) hated the Prophet. It is the nature of Falsehood to hate the Truth. Light eliminates Darkness, but darkness does not take kindly to Light.

MARCH ON THAT OCCASION; PLEADED THE HEAT OF THE WEATHER, THE HARVEST, AND SO FORTH; HE CAN NEVER FORGET THAT. YOUR HARVEST? IT LASTS FOR A DAY. WHAT WILL BECOME OF YOUR HARVEST THROUGH ALL ETERNITY? HOT WEATHER? YES, IT WAS HOT; 'BUT HELL WILL BE HOTTER!' SOMETIMES A ROUGH SARCASM TURNS UP: HE SAYS TO THE UNBELIEVERS, YE SHALL NOT HAVE SHORT WEIGHT!"

*Heroes and Hero-Worship*, p. 95/6.

Remember, Thomas Carlyle uttered these words, and many more to a shocked and bewildered Christian audience in England, a hundred and fifty years ago. History did not record for us the lively arguments and debates which his lecture must naturally have caused. He kept to his promise: "**I mean to say all the good of him** (his Hero Prophet) **I justly can,**" and he went on in his talk to defend Muhammed (pbuh) against the false charges, slander and calumnies of his enemies:

### CHARGE OF FALSITY

4a. "A FALSE MAN FOUND A RELIGION? WHY, A FALSE MAN CANNOT BUILD A BRICK HOUSE! IF HE DOES NOT KNOW AND FOLLOW **TRULY** THE PROPERTIES OF MORTAR, BURNT CLAY AND WHAT ELSE HE WORKS IN, IT IS NO HOUSE THAT HE MAKES, BUT A RUBBISH HEAP. IT WILL NOT STAND FOR TWELVE CENTURIES,<sup>1</sup> TO LODGE A HUNDRED-AND-EIGHTY MILLIONS;<sup>2</sup> IT WILL FALL STRAIGHT-AWAY . . . SPECIOSITIES ARE SPECIOUS<sup>3</sup> . . . IT

---

1. Now, fourteen centuries.

2. A thousand million today.

3. **Specious**: Having the ring of truth or plausibility but actually false.

IS LIKE A FORGED BANK NOTE; THEY GET IT PASSED OUT OF **THEIR** WORTHLESS HANDS: OTHERS, NOT THEY, HAVE TO SMART FOR IT. NATURE BURSTS-UP IN FIRE-FLAMES, FRENCH REVOLUTIONS AND SUCH-LIKE, PROCLAIMING WITH THE TERRIBLE VERACITY THAT FORGED NOTES ARE FORGED."

*Heroes and Hero-Worship*, p. 58

- b. "IT GOES GREATLY AGAINST THE IMPOSTER THEORY. THE FACT THAT HE LIVED IN THIS ENTIRELY UNEXCEPTIONABLE, ENTIRELY QUIET AND COMMON PLACE WAY, TILL THE HEAT OF HIS YEARS WAS DONE. HE WAS FORTY BEFORE HE TALKED OF ANY MISSION FROM HEAVEN . . . ALL HIS 'AMBITION,' SEEMINGLY, HAD BEEN, HITHERTO, TO LIVE AN HONEST LIFE; HIS 'FAME,' THE MERE GOOD OPINION OF NEIGHBOURS THAT KNEW HIM . . ."

*Heroes and Hero-Worship*, p. 70

- c. "AMBITION? WHAT COULD ALL ARABIA DO FOR THIS MAN; WITH THE CROWN OF GREEK HERACLIUS, OF PERSIAN CHOSROES, AND ALL THE CROWNS IN EARTH; — WHAT COULD THEY ALL DO FOR HIM? IT WAS NOT OF THE HEAVEN ABOVE AND OF THE HELL BENEATH. ALL CROWNS AND SOVEREIGNTIES WHATSOEVER, WHERE WOULD **THEY** IN A FEW BRIEF YEARS BE? TO BE SHEIK OF MAKKAH OR ARABIA, AND HAVE A BIT OF GILT WOOD PUT INTO YOUR HAND, — — — WILL THAT BE ONE'S SALVATION? I DECIDEDLY THINK, NOT, WE WILL LEAVE IT ALTOGETHER, THIS IMPOSTER HYPOTHESIS, AS NOT CREDITABLE; NOT VERY TOLERABLE EVEN, WORTHY CHIEFLY OF DISMISSAL BY US."

*Heroes and Hero-Worship*, p. 72/3

## CHARGE OF SINNING

5. "FAULTS? THE GREATEST OF FAULTS, I SHOULD SAY, IS TO BE CONSCIOUS OF NONE. READERS OF THE BIBLE ABOVE ALL, ONE WOULD THINK, MIGHT KNOW BETTER. WHO IS CALLED THERE 'THE MAN ACCORDING TO GOD'S OWN HEART'? DAVID, THE HEBREW KING HAD FALLEN INTO SINS ENOUGH; BLACKEST CRIMES; THERE WAS NO WANT OF SINS.<sup>1</sup> AND THEREUPON THE UNBELIEVERS SNEER AND ASK, IS THIS YOUR MAN ACCORDING TO GOD'S HEART? THE SNEER, I MUST SAY, SEEMS TO ME BUT A SHALLOW ONE. WHAT ARE FAULTS, WHAT ARE THE OUTWARD DETAILS OF A LIFE; IF THE INNER SECRET OF IT, THE REMORSE, TEMPTATIONS, TRUE, OFTEN-BAFFLED, NEVER-ENDED STRUGGLE OF IT BE FORGOTTEN? 'IT IS NOT IN MAN THAT WALKETH TO DIRECT HIS STEPS.' OF ALL ACTS, IS NOT, FOR A MAN, **REPENTANCE** THE MOST DIVINE? THE DEADLIEST SIN, I SAY, WERE THE SAME SUPERCILIOUS CONSCIOUSNESS OF NO SIN; THAT IS DEATH; THE HEART SO CONSCIOUS IS DIVORCED FROM SINCERITY, HUMILITY, AND FACT; IS DEAD: IT IS 'PURE' AS DEAD DRY SAND IS PURE."

*Heroes and Hero-Worship*, p. 61

## CHARGE OF "THE SWORD"

The greatest crime, the greatest "sin" of Muhammed (pbuh) in the eyes of the Christian West is that he did not allow himself to

---

1. This is the Jewish and Christian concept of God's prophets. They charge their prophets with incest, adultery and even murder. They impute horrendous crimes to them on the authority of the Holy Bible.

be slaughtered, to be "crucified" by his enemies. He ably defended himself, his family and his followers; and finally vanquished his enemies. Muhummed's (pbuh) success is the Christians' gall of disappointment: he did not believe in any vicarious sacrifice for the sins of others. He believed and behaved naturally. **"IN THE STATE OF NATURE, EVERYONE HAS A RIGHT TO DEFEND HIS PERSON AND POSSESSIONS, AND EXTEND HIS HOSTILITIES TO A REASONABLE AMOUNT OF SATISFACTION AND RETALIATION,"** says Gibbon, the master historian in his *"Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire."* His struggle and victory over the forces of unbelief and evil made the editors of the Encyclopedia Britannica to exclaim, Muhummed (pbuh) to be — — — **"THE MOST SUCCESSFUL OF ALL RELIGIOUS PERSONALITIES."**

How can the enemies of Islam account for Muhummed's phenomenal achievements except to decry that he spread his religion at the point of the sword? He forced Islam down peoples' throats!?

- 6a. "HISTORY MAKES IT CLEAR HOWEVER, THAT THE LEGEND OF FANATICAL MUSLIMS SWEEPING THROUGH THE WORLD AND FORCING ISLAM AT THE POINT OF THE SWORD UPON CONQUERED RACES IS ONE OF THE MOST FANTASTICALLY ABSURD MYTHS THAT HISTORIANS HAVE EVER REPEATED."

*De Lacy O'Leary* in  
"Islam at the Crossroads" London, 1923, p.8

You do not have to be a historian like O'Leary to know that the Muslims ruled Spain for 736 years. The longest the Christians ever ruled over Muslims was 500 years in Mozambique, a territory captured from an Arab governor by the name of **Musa-bin-baique**, a name they could not properly pronounce, hence the name Mozambique. Even today, after five centuries of Christian overlordship the country is still 60 percent Muslim.

However, after eight centuries in Spain the Muslims were totally eliminated from that country so that not even one man was left to give the **Azaan** (the Muslim call to prayer). If the Muslim had used force, military or economic there would not have been any Christian left in Spain to have kicked the Muslims out. One can blame the Muslim for exploitation if you like but one cannot charge them with using the sword to convert Spaniards to the Islamic religion.

**Today, Islam is still spreading all over the world – and Muslims have NO sword!!<sup>1</sup>**

The Muslims were also the masters of India for a thousand years, but eventually when the sub-continent received independence in 1947, the Hindus obtained three-quarters of the country and the Muslims the balance of the one-quarter. Why? Because the Muslims did not force Islam down the Hindus' throat! In Spain and in India, the Muslims were no paragons of virtue, yet they obeyed the Qur'anic injunction to the letter –

**LET THERE BE NO COMPULSION  
IN RELIGION:**

لَا كَرْهًا فِي الدِّينِ

**FOR TRUTH STANDS OUT  
DISTINCT FROM ERROR:**

قَدْ تَبَيَّنَ الرُّشْدُ مِنَ الْغَيِّ

(SÚRA BAQARA) Holy Qur'an 2:256

The Muslim conquerors understood from this command that "compulsion" was incompatible with true religion: because

- (a) Religion depends on faith and will, and these would be meaningless if induced by force. Force can conquer but cannot convert.
- (b) Truth and Error have been so clearly shown up by the Mercy of God that there should be no doubt in the minds of any person of goodwill as to the fundamentals of faith.

---

1. See chart on page 133, "the fastest growing faith on earth".

- (c) God's protection is continuous and His Plan is always to lead us from the depths of darkness into the clearest light.<sup>1</sup>

Except for some eccentrics here and there, the Muslims as a whole adhered to the commandment of God in the lands over which they held sway.

But what can the enemy say about countries where no single Muslim soldier had set foot?

- (i) **INDONESIA:** It is a fact that over a hundred million Indonesians are Muslim, yet no conquering Muslim army ever landed on any of its over two thousand islands.
- (ii) **MALAYSIA:** The overwhelming number of its people in this country are Muslims yet no Muslim soldier had landed there either.
- (iii) **AFRICA:** The majority of the people on the East coast of Africa as far down as Mozambique, as well as the bulk of the inhabitants on the West coast of the continent are Muslims, but history does not record any invading hoards of Muslims from anywhere. What sword? Where was the sword? The Muslim trader did the job. His good conduct and moral rectitude achieved the miracle of conversion.

"All what you say seems incontrovertible, Mr. Deedat," says the Christian controversialist, "but we are talking about Islam at its very beginning, the way in which your prophet converted the pagans to his faith! How did he do it if not with the sword?"

---

1. (a), (b) and (c) are Yusuf Ali's comments on verse 256. Obtain his translation with over 6000 explanatory footnotes from the IPCI.



## ONE AGAINST ALL?

We can do no better than to allow Thomas Carlyle himself to defend his Hero Prophet against this false charge; — — —

7. "THE SWORD INDEED: BUT WHERE WILL YOU GET YOUR SWORD! EVERY NEW OPINION, AT ITS STARTING, IS PRECISELY IN A **MINORITY OF ONE**. IN ONE MAN'S HEAD ALONE, THERE IT DWELLS AS YET. ONE MAN ALONE OF THE WHOLE WORLD BELIEVES IT; THERE IS ONE MAN AGAINST ALL MEN. THAT HE TAKE A SWORD, AND TRY TO PROPAGATE WITH THAT, WILL DO LITTLE FOR HIM. YOU MUST FIRST GET YOUR SWORD! ON THE WHOLE, A THING WILL PROPAGATE ITSELF AS IT CAN. WE DO NOT FIND, OF THE CHRISTIAN RELIGION EITHER, THAT IT ALWAYS DISDAINED THE SWORD, WHEN ONCE IT HAD GOT ONE. CHARLEMAGNE'S CONVERSION OF THE SAXONS WAS NOT BY PREACHING."

*Heroes and Hero-Worship*, p. 80

At the age of forty when Muhammed (pbuh) declared his Divine mission from heaven, there was no political party, or royalty, and certainly no family or tribe to back him up. His people — the Arabs, immersed in idol-worship and fetishism were not by any means a docile people, they were no easy meat. They were a very volatile people. given to internecine and fratricidal wars: subject to "**all kinds of fierce sincerities**" (Carlyle). One man, single-handed, to wean such a people from barbarism required nothing short of a miracle. A miracle did happen. God alone could have made Islam and Muhammed (pbuh) to triumph through with flimsy, gossamer support. God fulfilling His promise:

**And have We not raised high  
the esteem (in which) thou (O  
Muhammed art held)?**

(*SÚRA INSHIRÁH*) Holy Qur'an 94:4

## CHAPTER THREE

# *Fastest Growing Religion Today*

### THE SWORD OF THE INTELLECT

The enemy, the sceptic, the missionary and their passive camp followers will not stop bleating that "Islam was spread at the point of the sword!" but they will not venture to answer our question — — "WHO BRIBED CARLYLE!?" In 1840 when Carlyle defended Muhammed (pbuh) and refuted the allegation about the sword, there was nobody around to bribe. The whole Muslim world was in the gutters. The countries of Islam were all under subjugation by the Christians, except for a few like — Persia, Afghanistan and Turkey who were only nominally independent. There were no riches to flaunt and no petro-dollars to bribe with!

That was yesterday and many yesterdays ago, but what about today, in modern times? It is claimed **from the chart on the next page** that "Islam is the fastest growing religion in the world." The overall increase of all the sects and denominations of Christianity was a staggering 138 per cent with the incredible increase of Islam by 235 per cent in the same period of time of half-a-century. It is further affirmed that in Britain and the United States of America, Islam is the fastest growing faith. It is said that in Britain "**There are more Muslims than Methodists in the country.**" You have a right to ask, "What sword?" The answer is, "THE SWORD INDEED!" (Thomas Carlyle)<sup>1</sup> **It is the sword of the intellect!** It is the fulfilment of yet another prophecy;—

**IT IS HE** (God Almighty) **WHO HAS**  
**SENT HIS MESSENGER** (Muhammed)  
**WITH GUIDANCE**

هُوَ الَّذِي أَرْسَلَ  
رَسُولَهُ بِالْهُدَى

1. See full quote on page 131, No. 7.

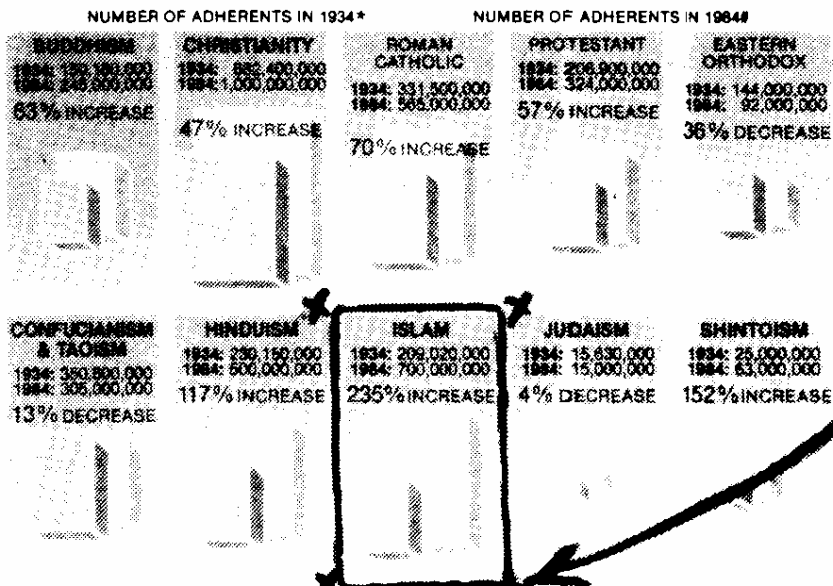
# A CRUCIAL HALF CENTURY OF *Islam* RELIGION

by Keith W. Stump

235%

We highlight the most significant developments.

## WORLD'S MAJOR RELIGIONS 1934/1984



\*Source: The World Almanac and Book of Facts, 1935  
#Source: The Reader's Digest Almanac and Yearbook, 1983

**AND THE RELIGION OF TRUTH** (Islam)

وَدِينِ الْحَقِّ

**THAT HE MAY MAKE IT PREVAIL  
OVER ALL RELIGIONS,**

لِيُظْهِرَهُ عَلَى الدِّينِ كُلِّهِ

**AND ENOUGH IS GOD FOR A WITNESS.**

وَكَفَى بِاللَّهِ شَهِيدًا

(SÚRA FAT-H) Holy Qur'an 48:28

The destiny of Islam is spelt out here in the clearest terms. Islam is to master, overcome and supersede every other faith —

**That He** (God Almighty) **make it** (Islam)  
**prevail over all religions . . .**

In Arabic the word is **Deen**<sup>1</sup> (literally meaning “Way of Life”), to supersede all, whether it be Hinduism, Buddhism, Christianity,<sup>2</sup> Judaism, Communism or any other “ism.” This is the destiny of Allah's **Deen**.

The same Qur'anic Verse is repeated in chapter 61 verse 9 which ends with this slight variation —

(Never mind) **Though the unbelievers  
might be averse to it** (Islam).

## TRIUMPH OF ISLAM

Islam will prevail. It is the promise of God, and His Promise is true. But how? With the sword? Not even if we had the laser gun! Could we use it? The Holy Qur'an forbids us to use force as a means of converting! Yet the verse prophesies that Islam would be the most dominant of all religions. The triumphs of its doctrines have already started and is gaining hold over the religious ideology and doctrines of the various schools of thought in the world. Though not in the name of Islam, but in the name of reformation and amendments, the doctrines of Islam are being

1. Usually translated as Religion, which literally Islam is not.

2. In the time of Thomas Carlyle this was the term applied to Christianity.

fastly grafted into the various religious orders. Many things which are exclusively Islamic and which were formerly unknown, or which were being opposed before with tooth and nail by the other creeds, are now part of their beliefs.

**The Brotherhood of man**

**The abolition of the Caste system and untouchability**

**The right of women to inherit**

**Opening the places of worship to all**

**Prohibition of all intoxicants**

**The true concept of the Unity of God**

**etc, etc.**

Just one word on the last subject above, before we proceed further. Ask any theist, polytheist,<sup>1</sup> pantheist,<sup>2</sup> or trinitarian: how many Gods he believes in? He will shudder to say anything other than ONE! This is the EFFECT of the strict monotheism of Islam.

THE CREED OF MOHAMED IS FREE FROM  
THE SUSPICIONS OF AMBIGUITY AND THE  
KORAN IS A GLORIOUS TESTIMONY TO  
THE UNITY OF GOD.

*Gibbon in his*  
**"Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire."**

## **VERDICT OF NON-MUSLIM ORIENTALS**

Almost all the defenders of Muhammed (pbuh) who spoke out against the false theory that he spread his religion at the point of the sword, were Westerners. Let us now hear what some non-Muslim Easterners have to say on the subject:

- 
1. **Polytheist:** One who believes in many gods.
  2. **Pantheist:** The one who believes that everything is god. Of course the "trinitarian," you already know.

- 8a. THE MORE I STUDY THE MORE I DISCOVER THAT THE STRENGTH OF ISLAM DOES NOT LIE IN THE SWORD.

*Mahatma Gandhi* — the father of modern India, in “**Young India.**”

- b. THEY (Muhummed’s critics) SEE FIRE INSTEAD OF LIGHT, UGLINESS INSTEAD OF GOOD. THEY DISTORT AND PRESENT EVERY GOOD QUALITY AS A GREAT VICE. IT REFLECTS THEIR OWN DEPRAVITY . . .  
THE CRITICS ARE BLIND. THEY CANNOT SEE THAT THE ONLY ‘SWORD’ MUHAMMAD WIELDED WAS THE SWORD OF MERCY, COMPASSION, FRIENDSHIP AND FORGIVENESS — THE SWORD THAT CONQUERS ENEMIES AND PURIFIES THEIR HEARTS. HIS SWORD WAS SHARPER THAN THE SWORD OF STEEL.

*Pandit Gyanandra Dev Sharma Shastri*, at a meeting in Gorakhpur (India). 1928

- c. HE PREFERRED MIGRATION TO FIGHTING HIS OWN PEOPLE, BUT WHEN OPPRESSION WENT BEYOND THE PALE OF TOLERANCE HE TOOK UP HIS SWORD IN SELF-DEFENCE. THOSE WHO BELIEVE RELIGION CAN BE SPREAD BY FORCE ARE FOOLS WHO NEITHER KNOW THE WAYS OF RELIGION NOR THE WAYS OF THE WORLD. THEY ARE PROUD OF THIS BELIEF BECAUSE THEY ARE A LONG, LONG WAY AWAY FROM THE TRUTH.

*A Sikh journalist* in “**Nawan Hindustan,**” Delhi, 17 November 1947.

It was Rudyard Kipling who said, “**East is East and West is West, never the twain shall meet!**” He was wrong! In the defence of Muhummed (pbuh), **all**, who are not blinded by prejudice will converge.

### THREE OTHER STANDARDS

Fourteen years after Thomas Carlyle had delivered his lecture on his **Hero Prophet**, a Frenchman by the name of Lamartine wrote the history of the Turks. Incidentally, the Turks being Muslims, Lamartine touched on some aspects of Islam and its founder. Like our Jules Masserman (see page 105) of current times, who had conceived three objective standards for discovering greatness of leadership; Lamartine had over a century ago thought of **three** other objective standards for conferring **GREATNESS**. We must give credit to the Westerner for this type of insight. Lamartine opines:

9. **IF GREATNESS OF PURPOSE, SMALLNESS OF MEANS AND ASTOUNDING RESULTS<sup>1</sup> ARE THE THREE CRITERIA OF HUMAN GENIUS, WHO COULD DARE TO COMPARE ANY GREAT MAN IN MODERN HISTORY WITH MUHUMMED? (Lamartine ends his lengthy segment of literary masterpiece with the words): ... PHILOSOPHER, ORATOR, APOSTLE. LEGISLATOR, WARRIOR, CONQUEROR OF IDEAS, RESTORER OF RATIONAL BELIEFS, OF A CULT WITHOUT IMAGES: THE FOUNDER OF TWENTY TERRESTRIAL EMPIRES AND OF ONE SPIRITUAL EMPIRE, THAT IS MUHUMMED. AS REGARDS ALL STANDARDS BY WHICH HUMAN GREATNESS MAY BE MEASURED, WE MAY WELL ASK, IS THERE ANY MAN GREATER THEN HE?**

*Lamartine, "Histoire de la Turquie," Paris 1854*

The answer to his question, "**Is there any man greater than he?**" is reposed in the question itself. By implication he is

---

1. The full quotation from Lamartine's book will be found in appendix "B" page 159.

saying . . . "THERE IS NO MAN GREATER THAN MUHUMMED. MUHUMMED IS THE GREATEST MAN THAT EVER LIVED!"

**And have We not raised high the  
esteem (in which) thou  
(O Muhummed art held)?**

(SÚRA ISHIRÁH) Holy Qur'an 94:4

MOST CERTAINLY THOU HAST, O, MY LORD!

Before we absolve Lamartine of any favouritism, partiality, or of the charge of being bribed, we will scrutinize his three standards, and whether they can be justified in the case of Muhummed (pbuh).

## 1. GREATNESS OF PURPOSE

History of the time will tell you that it was the darkest period in the history of mankind when Muhummed (pbuh) was commanded to declare his mission. The need was for the raising of prophets in every corner of the world, or the sending of one Master Messenger for the whole of mankind, to deliver them from falsehood, superstition, selfishness, polytheism, wrong and oppression. It was to be the reclamation of the whole of humanity. And God Almighty in His wisdom chose His prophet from the backwaters of Arabia as His universal Messenger. Thus He records in His Noble Book —

**AND WE SENT THEE NOT** (O Muhummed),  
**BUT AS A MERCY**  
**UNTO** (all) **THE WORLDS.**

وَمَا أَرْسَلْنَاكَ إِلَّا  
رَحْمَةً لِّلْعَالَمِينَ ﴿١٠٤﴾

(SÚRA ANBIYÁA) Holy Qur'an 21:107

"There is no question now of race or nation, of a "chosen people" or the "seed of Abraham,"; or the "seed of David"; or of Hindu Arya varta; of Jew or Gentile. Arab or 'Ajam (Persian), Turk or Tajik, European or Asiatic, White or Coloured; Aryan,



Semitic, Mongolian, or African; or American, Australian, or Polynesian. To all men and creatures who have any spiritual responsibility, the principles universally apply."

**Abdullah Yusuf Ali**<sup>1</sup>

## **JESUS (PBUH) DISCRIMINATES**

Muhummed's (pbuh) immediate predecessor advised his disciples, "**Give not that which is holy unto the dogs**" (meaning non-Jews), "**Neither cast ye your pearls before swine**" (meaning non-Jews, Matthew 7:6). The Gospel writers are unanimous in recording that Christ lived by the precepts which he preached. In his lifetime he did not preach to a single non-Jew. In fact he spurned a gentile woman who sought his spiritual blessings ("**the woman was a Greek**" Mark 7:26). Then during the "passover" season in Jerusalem when the master with his disciples had congregated for the occasion, certain Greeks hearing of his reputation sought an audience with him for spiritual enlightenment, but Jesus (pbuh) gave them the "cold shoulder"<sup>2</sup> as narrated by St. John:

***And there were certain Greeks  
among them that came up to  
worship at the feast:***

***The same came therefore to Philip  
... and desired him saying, Sir, we  
would see Jesus.***

***Philip cometh and telleth Andrew:  
and again Andrew and Philip tell  
Jesus***

**(HOLY BIBLE) Jchn 12:20-22**

- 
1. Get your copy now of Yusuf Ali's, English translation and commentary, with over 6000 annotations. Obtain a copy for your non-Muslim friend, also.
  2. Means: a deliberately unkind or unfriendly treatment; a slight; a snub.

## SELF-GLORIFICATION

The verses that follow do not even record the courtesy of “**Yea, yea;**” or “**Nay, nay;**” (Yes, yes or no, no of Matthew 5:37). They continue with his own praise —

***And Jesus answered them*** (Andrew and Philip), ***saying, The hour is come, that the son of man*** (referring to himself) ***should be glorified.***

(**HOLY BIBLE**) John 12:23

## HIGHEST STANDARDS

Muhummed (pbuh) could never afford any such latitudes. Remember, how the Almighty reminded him of the highest etiquette required from him. Even the thought of being ruffled by the untimely intrusion of a blind man, was not accepted from him (see page 117 “**He frowned**”). As a universal Messenger, God set for him the most lofty standards:

**And Most Certainly,  
Thou** ((O Muhummed)  
**Art of most sublime  
And Exalted Character.**

(**SÚRA QALAM**) Holy Qur'an 68:4

And his diocese, his field of mission? The whole of mankind!

**And We sent thee not  
(O Muhummed), but as  
a Mercy unto (all) the worlds.**

(**SÚRA ANBIYÁA**) Holy Qur'an 21:107

## UNIVERSAL MESSENGER

These are not mere platitudes; beautiful sentiments bereft of action. Muhummed (pbuh) practised what he preached. Among his first **Sahábás** (companions) and converts, beside the Arab

can be counted **Bilal** the Abyssinian, **Salman** the Persian and **Abdullah Bin-Salaam** the Jew. The sceptics may say that his outreach was simply incidental but what can they say about the historical fact that before his demise, he sent out five epistles, one to each of the five surrounding countries, inviting them to accept the religion of Islam.

1. The Emperor of Persia
2. The King of Egypt
3. The Negus of Abyssinia
4. The Emperor Heraclius at Constantinople, and
5. The King of Yemen

Thus he set the example for the fulfilment of his impelling mission, his “**greatness of purpose,**” the reclamation of the whole of humanity into the Master's fold. Is there another example of such universality in another religion? Muhummed (pbuh) was not out to set or to break any records, he was simply carrying out the trust that was reposed in him by the Lord of Creation!

## 2. SMALLNESS OF MEANS

Muhummed (pbuh) was born with no silver spoon in his mouth. His life begins with infinitesimal support. His father had died before he was born. His mother dies by the time he was six years old. He was doubly-orphaned at this tender age, his grandfather Abdul-Muttalib takes charge of the child, but within three years he also died. As soon as he was able, he began to look after his uncle Abu Talib's sheep and goats for his keep. Contrast this poor, doubly-orphaned Arab child with some of the great religious personalities that preceded him, and you must marvel at what Destiny had in store for him!

Abraham (pbuh) the spiritual father of Moses, Jesus and Muhummed (May the peace of God be upon them all), was the son of a very successful businessman of his time. Moses (pbuh)

was reared in the house of Pharaoh. Jesus (pbuh) though described as “**a carpenter and the son of a carpenter,**” was well endowed with learning as well as material means. Peter, Philip, Andrew, etc. all downed tools and followed him to be at his beck and call, not because he had any **halo**<sup>1</sup> on his head; there was no such thing, but because of his affluent attire and princely bearing. He could command mansions in Jerusalem for himself and his disciples even during the height of the festive season; and have sumptuous suppers arranged; and you could hear him reproach the materialistic Jews —

*And when they found him (Jesus) on the other side of the sea, they said to him, “Rabbi, when did you come here?”*

*Jesus answered them and said, “most assuredly, I say to you, you seek me, not because you saw the signs,<sup>2</sup> but because you ate of the loaves and were filled.*

(HOLY BIBLE) John 6:25-26

## NOTHING TO OFFER

Muhummed (pbuh) had no bread nor meat to offer; no sugar-plums of any kind, in this world or the next! The only thing he could offer his bedraggled, poor shepherd people was trial and tribulations and the strait-jacketing of their lives here on earth and the good pleasures of God in the Hereafter. The life of the Prophet was an open book before them. He had shown them as to what he was; the nobility of his character, his integrity of purpose, his earnestness and fiery enthusiasm for the truth he

---

1. **Halo:** An imaginary luminous ring or disc surrounding the head of saintly men and women in religious paintings.

2. The veracity of the Messiah's message and his mission.

had come to preach revealed the hero; and they followed him. Mr. Stanley Lane Poole's estimate of our hero is so beautiful and yet so truthful that I cannot resist the temptation of quoting it here:

HE WAS AN ENTHUSIAST IN THAT NOBLEST SENSE WHEN ENTHUSIASM BECOMES THE SALT OF THE EARTH, THE ONE THING THAT KEEPS MEN FROM ROTTING WHILST THEY LIVE.

ENTHUSIASM IS OFTEN USED DESPITEFULLY, BECAUSE IT IS JOINED TO AN UNWORTHY CAUSE, OR FALLS UPON BARREN GROUND AND BEARS NO FRUIT. SO WAS IT NOT WITH MOHAMMED. HE WAS AN ENTHUSIAST WHEN ENTHUSIASM WAS THE ONE THING NEEDED TO SET THE WORLD AFLAME, AND HIS ENTHUSIASM WAS NOBLE FOR A NOBLE CAUSE.

HE WAS ONE OF THOSE HAPPY FEW WHO HAVE ATTAINED THE SUPREME JOY OF MAKING ONE GREAT TRUTH THEIR VERY LIFE-SPRING.

HE WAS THE MESSENGER OF THE ONE GOD; AND NEVER TO HIS LIFE'S END DID HE FORGET WHO HE WAS, OR THE MESSAGE WHICH WAS THE MARROW OF HIS BEING. HE BROUGHT HIS TIDINGS TO HIS PEOPLE WITH A GRAND DIGNITY SPRUNG FROM THE CONSCIOUSNESS OF HIS HIGH OFFICE, TOGETHER WITH A MOST SWEET HUMILITY, WHOSE ROOTS LAY IN THE KNOWLEDGE OF HIS OWN WEAKNESS."

It may easily be conceded that Muhammed (pbuh) was blessed with the flimsiest of human resources. In fact the odds were loaded against him. But what about his fortune towards the end of his earthly sojourn? He was the overlord of the whole of

Arabia! What about the endless means at his disposal then? We will allow a Christian missionary to answer that —

HE WAS CAESAR AND POPE IN ONE; BUT HE WAS POPE WITHOUT THE POPE'S PRETENTIONS, AND CAESAR WITHOUT THE LEGIONS OF CAESAR: WITHOUT A STANDING ARMY, WITHOUT A BODYGUARD, WITHOUT A PALACE, WITHOUT A FIXED REVENUE; IF EVER ANY MAN HAD THE RIGHT TO SAY THAT HE RULED BY THE RIGHT DIVINE, IT WAS MOHAMMAD, FOR HE HAD ALL THE POWERS WITHOUT ITS INSTRUMENTS AND WITHOUT ITS SUPPORTS."

*R. Bosworth Smith*

"**Mohammad and Mohammadanism**", London 1874, p. 92

### HIS HANDICAPS

His "weakness" was his strength. The very fact that he had no material means of support made him to put his entire trust in God, and God the Merciful did not forsake him. His success was all the more staggering. May not the Muslims justly say, the entire work was the work of God? **And Muhummed (pbuh) His instrument?**

### 3. OUTSTANDING RESULTS

In the words of Thomas Carlyle — "**One man against all men,**"<sup>1</sup> to a hundred and twenty four thousand at the Farewell Pilgrimage alone. How many were left behind of men, women and children, believers all?

On the 12th of RABI 1., in the 11th year after the **Hijra**,<sup>2</sup> approximating to the 8th of June 632 of the Christian Era, whilst

---

1. See full quotation by Thomas Carlyle on page 131.

2. **Hijra**: literally means Migration.

praying earnestly in whisper, the spirit of the great Prophet took flight to the “**blessed companionship on high**” (*Ibn Hisham*).

Hazrat Omar (May Allah be pleased with him), on receiving the sad news of the demise of the Holy Prophet, lost his bearings. He was so shocked that he blurted out “If anyone says that Muhammed is dead, I will chop off his head!” Hazrat Abu Bakr As-Siddiq presently verified that the Master had indeed departed from this world; and coming out from the Prophet’s apartment announced to the gathering throng outside, that, “**Muhummed (pbuh) had indeed passed away. Those that worshipped Muhummed,**” he said, “**Let them know that Muhummed is dead, but those who worship Allah, let them know that Allah lives for ever!**”

This brought Omar al-Farooq (R.A.) back to his senses. Could this man who was to become the second great *Khaleefah* of Islam at this moment imagine that fourteen hundred years later there would be a **thousand million** followers of Muhammed (pbuh) at one time? Could he have visualized that the religion of the Prophet would be the fastest growing religion in the world?<sup>1</sup>

Christianity had a 600-year start on Islam. Numerically the Christians claim to outnumber the followers of any other faith; this is true but let us look at the picture in its true perspective —

THERE ARE MORE **PROFESSING** CHRISTIANS  
IN THE WORLD THAN **PROFESSING** MUS-  
LIMS, BUT THERE ARE MORE **PRACTISING**  
MUSLIMS IN THE WORLD THAN **PRAC-**  
**TISING** CHRISTIANS.

(Emphasis added)

R.V.C. Bodley (the American) in  
“**The Messenger: The Life of Mohammed.**” U.S.A. 1969

---

1. See chart on page 133

I understand from the above that Mr. Bodley is trying to tell us that there are people in the world who, when filling their census forms, will tick off the term **Christian** under "Religion." It is not necessarily that they believe in the dogmas of Christianity. They could actually be atheists or **bush-Baptists**,<sup>1</sup> as opposed to being a Jew or Hindu or Muslim; coming from a Christian background they would for the purpose of convenience label themselves "**Christian**." From that point of view, and from the point of view that a person who practises what he believes, there would be more Muslims in the world than Christians.

Chronologically, Islam is six hundred years behind Christianity, but amazingly it is a very close second, and is catching up fast — the fastest growing religion in the world today (see chart on page 133). "**One Billion**" The figure is outstanding and the sincerity and practice of the Believers astonishing!

Taking into account his own three objective standards: (a) "**greatness of purpose;**" (b) "**smallness of means;**" and (c) "**outstanding results;**" does Lamartine dare to produce another candidate greater than Muhummed (pbuh)? He further awes his readers with the multifarious roles of Muhummed (pbuh) in which he excelled, ie. "**Philosopher, Orator, Apostle, Legislator, Warrior, Conqueror of Ideas, the Restorer of Rational Beliefs, of a Cult without Images, the Founder of twenty Terrestrial Empires and of one Spiritual Empire, that is Muhummed. As regards ALL standards (I repeat "ALL") by which Human Greatness may be measured, we may well ask, "IS THERE ANY MAN GREATER THAN HE?"**" (Emphasis added).

No! Muhummed (pbuh) was the greatest man that ever lived! According to Lamartine the French historian. And God Almighty questions —

---

1. "**bush-Baptist**": There are forty different Baptist Churches in the United States of America. But bush-Baptists are people with strong religious feelings yet will not go to any Church; and will not affiliate with any sect or denomination.



**And have We not raised high  
the esteem (in which) thou  
(O Muhammed art held)?**

*(SÚRA ISHIRÁH) Holy Qur'an 94:4*

MOST ASSUREDLY THOU HAST, O MY LORD!

## **THE QUALITY OF MERCY**

The Christian propagandists make the wild boast that there is nothing in the history of mankind to compare with the merciful and forgiving cry of Jesus (pbuh) on the cross ...

***“Father, forgive them, for they know  
not what they do.”***

*(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 23:34*

Amazing as it may sound, of the four writers of the Canonical Gospels, only St. Luke was inspired by the Holy Ghost (?) to pen these words. The other three — Matthew, Mark and John never heard these words or they felt them to be too insipid or not important enough for recording. St. Luke was not even one of the twelve disciples selected by Jesus (pbuh). According to the revisers of the Revised Standard Version (RSV) of the Bible, these words are not in the most ancient manuscripts which by implication means that they are an interpolation.

In **“The New King James Version,”** (Copyrighted by the Thomas Nelson Publishers in 1984), we are told that these words are **“not in the original text”** of the Greek manuscripts of St. Luke. In other words they have been fabricated by some pious gentleman. Although the quotation is unauthentic, we will still entertain it because it demonstrates great piety of loving one's enemies and of unsurpassed forgiveness as preached by the Master himself.

For forgiveness to be of any worth, the forgiver must be in a position to forgive. If the victim of injustice is still in the clutches

of his enemies; in that helpless position and he would cry out, "I FORGIVE YOU!" it would be meaningless. But if the aggrieved party had turned the tables on his enemies and was in a position of taking revenge or exact retribution, and yet say "I forgive you!", only then would it mean something!

### MUHUMMED'S (PBUH) CLEMENCY

Contrast the alleged forgiveness from the "cross" with the historical bloodless conquest of Makkah by Muhummed (pbuh) at the head of ten thousand "saints"<sup>1</sup> (his companions).

"THE CITY WHICH HAD TREATED HIM SO CRUELLY, DRIVEN HIM AND HIS FAITHFUL BAND FOR REFUGE AMONGST STRANGERS, WHICH HAD SWORN HIS LIFE AND THE LIVES OF HIS DEVOTED DISCIPLES, LAY AT HIS FEET. HIS OLD PERSECUTERS RELENTLESS AND RUTHLESS, WHO HAD DISGRACED HUMANITY BY INFLECTING CRUEL OUTRAGES UPON INOFFENSIVE MEN AND WOMEN, AND EVEN UPON THE LIFELESS DEAD, WERE NOW COMPLETELY AT HIS MERCY. BUT IN THE HOUR OF HIS TRIUMPH EVERY EVIL SUFFERED WAS FORGOTTEN, EVERY INJURY INFLECTED WAS FORGIVEN, AND A GENERAL AMNESTY WAS EXTENDED TO THE POPULATION OF MAKKAH ..."

*Sayed Amir Ali in "The Spirit of Islam."*

Calling before him the populace of the vanquished city, he addressed them with "**What do you expect at my hands today?**" His people had known him too well, even from his childhood so they replied, "Mercy, O generous brother and nephew!" Tears came into the eyes of the Prophet, and he said,

---

1. A fulfilment of another prophecy in Muhummed (pbuh). "...He came from mount Paran (that is in Arabia). and he came with ten thousand saints ..." Deuteronomy 33:2.

**“I will speak to you as Joseph spoke unto his brethren, I will not reproach you today; go you are free!”**

And now a scene was enacted of which there is really no parallel in the history of the world. Hosts upon hosts came forward and adopted the religion of Islam. God almighty testifies as to the lofty and exalted behaviour of His Messenger —

**Ye have indeed in the Messenger  
of Allah a beautiful pattern (of  
conduct)**

(*SÚRA AHZÁB*) Holy Qur'an 33:21

How well has Lamartine<sup>1</sup> unknowingly echoed these sentiments —

**“AS REGARDS ALL STANDARDS BY WHICH  
HUMAN GREATNESS MAY BE MEASURED, WE  
MAY WELL ASK, IS THERE ANY MAN GREATER  
THAN HE?”**

In reply, we too can say once more, **“No! there is no man greater than Muhammed (pbuh). Muhammed (pbuh) was the greatest man that ever lived!”**

So far, our hero has earned the unsolicited and ungrudging tributes from many non-Muslims of different religious persuasions and from varying intellectual fields of endeavour. But all this still remains incomplete without the Master's verdict; Muhammed's (pbuh) predecessor — Jesus Christ (pbuh). We will now apply his own standard for evaluating greatness.

## **JOHN THE BAPTIST**

John the Baptist,<sup>2</sup> known throughout the Muslim world as Hazrat **Yahya** Alaihis-salaam (Peace be upon him) was, a contemporary

- 
1. Full quotation of Lamartine will be found in Appendix “B” on page 158.
  2. **“JOHN”** not to be confused with John the disciple of Jesus (pbuh). A very common name among the Jews and Arabs, even today, like Tarik Aziz the current Iraqi Minister of Foreign Affairs. Real name Tarik **Hanna** Aziz; **“Hanna”** short for Yuhanna meaning John. No one in the non-Arab Muslim world knowing that our friend is a Christian Marxist

prophet of the Messiah. They were also cousins. Here is what the Master has to say of him:

***Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist:***

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 11:11

Every son of man is “**born of women.**” By this very fact John the Baptist is greater than Moses, David, Solomon, Abraham or Isaiah; none of the Israelite prophets excluded. What gives John this ascendancy over every other prophet? It could not be any miracle, because the Bible records none to his credit. It could not be his teachings, because he brought no new laws or regulations. Then what makes him the greatest? Simply because he was the herald, a precursor, a harbinger of the happy news of the coming of the Messiah. This is what made John the greatest, but Jesus (pbuh) claims that he himself was even greater than the greatest (ie. John). Why?

***But I have greater witness than that of John (the Baptist): For The Works which the Father hath given me to finish:*** (Emphasis added)

(HOLY BIBLE) John 5:36

It is the “**witness,**” the commission which God Almighty had entrusted him with, which makes Jesus (pbuh) greater than even John. Applying these very standards as enunciated by the Master, we find that —

1. John the Baptist was the greatest of all the Israelite prophets, because he heralded the mighty Messiah (Jesus pbuh).

Similarly Jesus (pbuh) would be greater than even John because he heralded “**The Spirit**

**of Truth, the Comforter,"** who was to guide mankind into **all Truth** (of the Gospel of St. John, chapter 16).<sup>1</sup>

2. The diocese, the mission of Jesus (pbuh), or **"the works which God had given him to accomplish,"** was limited to the Lost sheep of the House of Israel (Matthew 15:24), whereas the mission of Muhammed (pbuh) was universal. He had been told —

**And we have sent thee not  
(O Muhammed), but as a  
Mercy unto (all) the worlds.**

(SÚRA ANBIYÁA) Holy Qur'an 21:107

In keeping with his grand commission, Muhammed (pbuh) consistently delivered his Message to one and all who would hear, irrespective of race, class or creed, He welcomed them all in the religion of God, without any discrimination. He had no thought of dividing the creatures of God into **"dogs and pigs"** (Matthew 7:6) or into **"sheep and goats"** (Matthew 25:32). He was the Messenger of the One True God, who was sent as a Mercy unto all mankind, nay, unto the whole universe (H.Q. 21:107 above). And, he never forgot this mission even right up to his dying day.

Towards the end of his earthly sojourn, when he could look back to a hectic and dangerous past, now crowned with success; he now feels that he could sit back and enjoy the fruits of his toil; he dreams of a life free from turmoil and full of satisfaction and relaxation. Not for him! There is no time to rest or relax. There is work still to be done. God Almighty reminds him --

**WE HAVE NOT SENT THEE  
(O MUHUMMED) BUT TO THE  
WHOLE OF MANKIND,**

وَمَا أَرْسَلْنَاكَ إِلَّا كَافَّةً لِّلنَّاسِ

1. For a detailed explanation about this prophecy, obtain today your FREE copy of the book **"MUHUMMED (pbuh) the Natural Successor to CHRIST (pbuh)"** from the IPCI.

**AS A GIVER OF GLAD TIDINGS  
AND AS A WARNER,**

بَشِيرًا وَنَذِيرًا

**BUT MOST OF MANKIND  
STILL DO NOT KNOW.**

وَلَكِنَّ أَكْثَرَ النَّاسِ لَا يَعْلَمُونَ ﴿٢٠﴾

(SÚRA SABÁ) Holy Qur'an 34:28<sup>1</sup>

How was he to respond to this new challenge in his ripening old age? There were no electronic gadgets of modern communication methods at his disposal; there were no telex and fax machines which he could exploit. What could he do? Being an **ummi** (unlettered), he called the scribes and dictated five letters, one each to the Emperor at Constantinople, the King of Egypt, the Negus of Abyssinia, the King of Yemen and to the Emperor in Persia. He called forth five **Sahaaba** (his holy companions) with five Arab steeds and set them out in five different directions inviting the nations of the world to the universal religion of God.

I had the good fortune of seeing one of those holy epistles in the Topkapi Museum in Istanbul (old Constantinople) Turkey. That letter is collecting dust! Materially the Turks have preserved the parchment. But the Message is collecting dust, as I have said.

The letter begins, "**From Muhummed the Messenger of God, to Heraclius the Emperor at Constantinople: Accept Islam and be benefited.**"

Followed by this exhortation from the Book of God — —

**SAY: "O PEOPLE OF THE BOOK!"<sup>2</sup>**

**COME TO COMMON TERMS  
AS BETWEEN US AND YOU:**

قُلْ يَا أَهْلَ الْكِتَابِ  
تَعَالَوْا إِلَى كَلِمَةٍ سَوَاءٍ بَيْنَنَا  
وَبَيْنَكُمْ

1. This is your last chance to memorize the text and the translation of this verse. If you are lackadaisical, we can only mourn your loss.
2. "**People of the Book**," stands for the Jews and the Christians. You will never have it so good for learning Allah's **Kalaam**. Don't ignore this opportunity. Memorize the verses as they occur.

**THAT WE WORSHIP  
NONE BUT GOD;**

أَلَّا نَعْبُدَ إِلَّا اللَّهَ

**THAT WE ASSOCIATE  
NO PARTNERS WITH HIM;**

وَلَا نُشْرِكُ بِهِ شَيْئًا

**THAT WE ERECT NOT,  
FROM AMONG OURSELVES,  
LORDS AND PATRONS  
OTHER THAN GOD."**

وَلَا يَتَّخِذَ بَعْضُنَا بَعْضًا أَرْبَابًا  
مِّنْ دُونِ اللَّهِ

**IF THEN THEY TURN BACK,  
SAY YE: "BEAR WITNESS  
THAT WE (AT LEAST) ARE  
MUSLIMS (BOWING TO GOD'S WILL)"**

فَإِنْ تَوَلَّوْا فَقُولُوا اشْهَدُوا  
بِأَنَّا مُسْلِمُونَ ﴿٦٤﴾

(SÚRA AL-I-'IMRÁN) Holy Qur'an 3:64

After the above Qur'anic insertion in the letter, it is concluded with felicitation in the Prophet's own words, ending with a seal on which is inscribed — **"There is no other object of worship but Allah, and Muhammed is His Messenger."**

The letter in Turkey arouses our curiosity; and interest with regards to its preservation, but the preservation itself is lost upon the sightseer. The same Qur'anic Message is in almost every Muslim home; being read and re-read a thousand times over without the reader being moved to deliver its Message to the addressees!

Glance once more at the above verse. It is addressed to the **"ahle-Kitaab,"** — the People of the Book, the Jews and the Christians. But, for over a thousand years we have utterly ignored that great directive at our own peril. We are sitting on that Message like a cobra on a pile of wealth, keeping the rightful heirs at bay. This utter neglect will continue to inflict untold suffering to the **Ummah** for generations to come.

After over fourteen hundred years of our reading, and chanting the Qur'an in every rhythmic style, we still hear this poignant cry:

**But Most of mankind still  
do not know.<sup>1</sup>**

(SÚRA SABA) Holy Qur'an 34:28

This is the concluding phrase of the verse revealed fourteen hundred years ago. It was the factual situation of the then religious world. The question which must be asked is: "Is it any different today?" **Not at all!** There are today more **Mushriks** in the world than there are believers in the One True God.

Is there any hope of changing this situation? Allah commanded His Prophet then as He is commanding us now through the first seven verses of Sura **Muddaththir** (chapter 74).

1. **O THOU WRAPPED UP  
(IN A MANTLE)!**

يَا أَيُّهَا الْمُدَّثِّرُ ۝

"As usual, there is these wonderful early mystical verses (including the ones that follow), a triple thread of thought:

- (a) A particular occasion or person is referred to;
- (b) a general spiritual lesson is taught, and
- (c) a more profound mystical reverie is suggested.

**As to (a)**, the Prophet was now past the stage of personal contemplation. Wearing his mantle; he was now to go forth and boldly deliver his Message and publicly proclaim Allah The One True God. His heart had always purified, but now all his outward doings must be dedicated to God, and conventional respect for ancestral customs or worship must be thrown aside. The work of his Messengership was the most generous that could flow from his personality, but no reward or

---

1. For the full context of this verse, see page 152.



appreciation was to be expected from his people, but quite the contrary; there would be much call on his patience, but his contentment would arise from the good pleasure of God.

**As to (b)**, similar stages arise in a minor degree in the life of every good man, for which the Prophet's life is to be a universal pattern.

**As to (c)**, the *Sufis* understand, by the mantle and outward wrappings, the circumstances of our phenomenal existence, which are necessary to our physical comfort up to a certain stage; but we soon outgrow them, and our inner nature should then boldly proclaim itself; not that it brings any credit or reward with men; the very hope of expectation of such would be inconsistent with our higher nature, which should bear all checks and rejoice in the favour of God."

- |    |   |                         |
|----|---|-------------------------|
| 2. | <b>ARISE AND DELIVER<br/>THY WARNING!</b>         | قُمْ فَأَنْذِرْ ۖ       |
| 3. | <b>AND THY LORD<br/>DO THOU MAGNIFY!</b>          | وَرَبِّكَ فَكَبِّرْ ۖ   |
| 4. | <b>AND THY GARMENTS<br/>KEEP FREE FROM STAIN!</b> | وَشِيَابَكَ فَاطْهَرْ ۖ |
| 5. | <b>AND ALL ABOMINATION<br/>SHUN! (a)</b>          | وَالرُّجْزَ فَاهْجُرْ ۖ |

“(a) **Rujz** or **Rijz** means abomination and is usually understood to mean idolatry. It is even possible that there was an idol called **Rujz**. But these days it has a wider significance as including a mental state opposed to true worship, a state of doubt or indecision.”

6. **NOR EXPECT, IN GIVING,  
ANY INCREASE (FOR THYSELF)! (b)** وَلَا تَمْنُنْ تَسْتَكْثِرُ ۝

“(b) The legal and commercial formula is that you give in order to receive what is worth **to you** a little more than you give, but expect nothing from the receiver. You serve God and God’s creatures.”

7. **BUT, FOR THY LORD’S (CAUSE)  
BE PATIENT AND CONSTANT! (c)<sup>1</sup>** وَلِرَبِّكَ فَاصْبِرْ ۝

(SÚRA MUDDATHHIR) Holy Qur’an 74:1—7

“(c) Our zeal for God’s Cause itself requires that we should not be impatient, and that we should show constancy in our efforts for His Cause. For we have faith, and we know that He is All-Good, All-Wise, and All-Powerful, and everything will ultimately be right.”

Abdullah Yusuf Ali<sup>2</sup>

To the Arabs in general and to our Holy Prophet in particular “**a mantle**” was the protective covering used for protection against the sun, wind and sand. He was so to say girding himself, rolling up his sleeves, to accomplish his task. Although most of the Muslims in the world do not cover themselves with shawls (mantles), in their day to day living, they carry a host of mantles in the way of inferiority complexes.

WHAT CAN WE DO TO MAKE GOD’S LIGHT  
SHINE FORTH THROUGH THE DARKNESS  
AROUND US?

WE MUST FIRST LET IT SHINE IN OUR OWN  
TRUE SELVES

- 
1. Remember to memorize Allah’s **Kalaam** with its meaning!
  2. The English translation and the commentaries was by Abdullah Yusuf Ali. Obtain your volume from the IPCI at a specially subsidised price. **Also order a volume for your non-Muslim friend.**

WITH THAT LIGHT IN THE NICHE OF OUR  
 INMOST HEARTS  
 WE CAN WALK WITH STEPS BOTH FIRM AND SURE:  
 WE CAN HUMBLY VISIT THE COMFORTLESS  
 AND GUIDE THEIR STEPS. NOT WE, BUT THE  
 LIGHT WILL GUIDE! BUT OH! THE JOY OF  
 BEING FOUND WORTHY TO BEAR THE TORCH,  
 AND TO SAY TO OUR BRETHREN: "I TOO WAS  
 IN DARKNESS, COMFORTLESS, AND BEHOLD, I  
 HAVE FOUND COMFORT AND JOY IN THE  
 GRACE DIVINE!"  
 THUS SHOULD WE PAY THE DUES OF  
 BROTHERHOOD, — —  
 BY WALKING HUMBLY SIDE BY SIDE,  
 IN THE WAYS OF THE LORD,  
 WITH MUTUAL AID AND COMFORT,  
 AND HEARTFELT PRAYER,  
 BACKED BY ACTION,  
 THAT GOD'S GOOD PURPOSE  
 MAY BE ACCOMPLISHED  
 IN US ALL TOGETHER!

Abdullah Yusuf Ali

وَلَكِنَّ أَكْثَرَ النَّاسِ لَا يَعْلَمُونَ ۝

**BUT MOST OF MANKIND  
 STILL DO NOT KNOW**

*Thus spake, inspired our Holy Prophet,  
 Muhammed (pbuh) on whom we invoke  
 God's blessings for ever and ever -*

**AAMEEN!**

APPENDIX "A"

بَلَغَ الْعُلَى بِكَمَالِهِ

He attained the height of eminence by his perfection;

كَشَفَ الدُّجَى بِجَمَالِهِ

He dispelled the darkness (of the world) by his grace;

حَسُنَتْ جَمِيعُ خَصَالِهِ

Excellent were all his qualities;

صَلُّوا عَلَيْهِ وَآلِهِ

Pray for blessings on him and his descendants.

Shaikh Sa'di Sheeraazi (RA)

APPENDIX "B"

## Muhummed (PBUH) The Greatest

"If greatness of purpose,  
smallness of means  
and astounding results

are the three criteria of human genius, who could dare to compare any great man in modern history with Muhummed?

The most famous men created arms, laws and empires only. They founded, if anything at all, no more than material powers

which often crumbled away before their eyes. This man Muhammed moved not only armies, legislations, empires, peoples and dynasties, but millions of men; and more than that the altars, the gods, the religions, the ideas, the beliefs and the souls.

On the basis of a Book, every letter of which has become law, he created a spiritual nationality which blended together peoples of every tongue and of every race . . .

The idea of the unity of God, proclaimed amidst the exhaustion of fabulous theologies, was in itself such a miracle that upon its utterance from his lips it destroyed all the ancient superstitions . . .

His endless prayers, his mystic conversations with God, his death and his triumph after death: all these attest not to an imposture but to a firm conviction which gave him the power to restore a dogma. This dogma was twofold, **the unity of God and the immateriality of God**; the former telling what God is, the latter telling what God is not . . .

. . . PHILOSOPHER, ORATOR, APOSTLE, LEGISLATOR, WARRIOR, CONQUEROR OF IDEAS, RESTORER OF RATIONAL BELIEFS, of a cult without images; the founder of twenty terrestrial empires and of one spiritual empire, that is Muhammed. **AS REGARDS ALL STANDARDS BY WHICH HUMAN GREATNESS MAY BE MEASURED, WE MAY WELL ASK, IS THERE ANY MAN GREATER THAN HE?"**

*(Lamartine, Histoire de la Turquie, Paris 1854, Vol II pp. 276-277).*

APPENDIX "C"JULES MASSERMAN, U.S. psychoanalyst:

TIME, JULY 15, 1974

Leaders must fulfil three functions — — — provide for the well-being of the led, provide a social organization in which people feel relatively secure, and provide them with one set of beliefs. People like Pasteur and Salk are leaders in the first sense.

People like Gandhi and Confucius, on one hand, and Alexander, Caesar and Hitler on the other, are leaders in the second and perhaps the third sense. Jesus and Buddha belong in the third category alone. **PERHAPS THE GREATEST LEADER OF ALL TIMES WAS MOHAMMED, WHO COMBINED ALL THREE FUNCTIONS.** To a lesser degree Moses did the same. (Emphasis added)

APPENDIX "D"

Fidelity is said to be a human attribute,  
Which makes the modern gentleman distinguished  
from the brute,  
But that supreme fidelity, inborn in every hound,  
Which is the mark of man's best friend,  
In man, it's rarely found!

A South African Poet.

PART FOUR

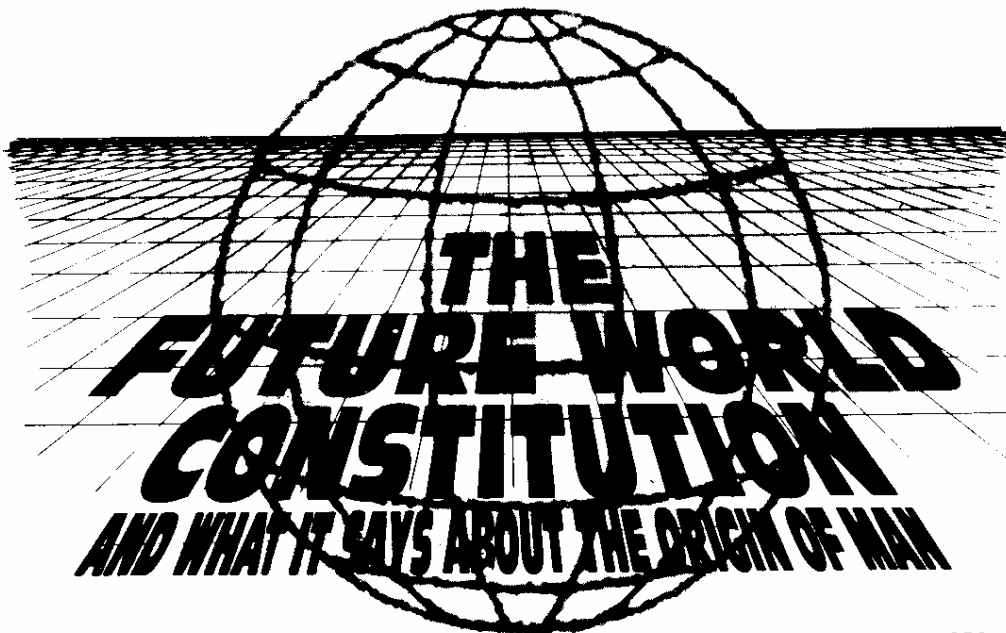
# AL-QURAN

*The Miracle  
of Miracles*



BY  
AHMED  
DEEDAT

Establish the "KINGDOM OF GOD" on earth  
 as prayed for by Jesus (peace be upon him)



*All mankind!  
 We created you  
 From a single (pair)  
 Of a male and a female,  
 And made you into  
 Nations and tribes,  
 That ye may recognise  
 one another*

*(Not that ye may  
 Despise each other).  
 Verily, the most  
 Honoured of you  
 In the sight of God  
 Is (he who is) the  
 Best in conduct.*

Holy Quran 49 : 13

This Book has  
 a solution to the  
 problems of mankind.  
 It will "Guide  
 you into all truth"  
 Jesus Christ

This Book has  
 over six thousand  
 explanatory  
 notes alone!

You can now own this Encyclopedia of Islam  
 "The Future World Constitution" consisting of  
 1824 pages for only £6 UK, \$10 USA, R10 RSA  
 and \$12 Middle East.



**ISLAMIC PROPAGATION CENTRE  
 INTERNATIONAL**

124 Queen Street, Durban, 4001, RSA  
 Telephone (027-31) 306-0028. Telex (095) 6-21815 IPCI SA  
 Telefax (027-31) 304-0328

KINDLY SEND ME MY PERSONAL COPY OF THIS "FUTURE  
 WORLD CONSTITUTION"

I enclose  £6  \$10  R10  \$12  \* My free copy of the book -  
 herewith  UK  USA  RSA  MID  LEAS "WAY TO THE QURAN"

Name (BLOCK LETTERS PLEASE) \_\_\_\_\_

Address \_\_\_\_\_

Telephone \_\_\_\_\_

\* You do not have to pay any money to receive the FREE book.  
 Simply fill in and return this coupon.

I reserve the right to return your "FUTURE WORLD CONSTITUTION" for  
 any reason whatsoever for a no-question-asked FULL refund, within 90 days  
 (3 months).

**PLEASE  
 DON'T TEAR  
 THIS COUPON**



## CHAPTER ONE

### *A Standing Challenge*

**SAY: IF THE WHOLE,  
OF MANKIND AND JINNS<sup>1</sup>  
WERE TO GATHER TOGETHER**

**TO PRODUCE  
THE LIKE OF THIS QUR'AN,**

**THEY COULD NOT PRODUCE  
THE LIKE THEREOF,**

**EVEN IF THEY BACKED UP  
EACH OTHER WITH  
HELP AND SUPPORT.<sup>2</sup>**

قُلْ لِّئِنِ اجْتَمَعَتِ الْإِنْسُ وَالْجِنُّ

عَلَىٰ أَنْ يَأْتُوا بِمِثْلِ هَذَا الْقُرْآنِ

لَا يَأْتُونَ بِمِثْلِهِ

وَلَوْ كَانُوا بِعِضِ

ظَهْرٍ آيَةً

(BANI ISRĀ-ĪL) Holy Qur'an 17:88

### WHAT IS A MIRACLE

I think it is necessary that we have a clear picture of what we mean by a miracle. Here are some definitions:—

**“An event that appears so inexplicable by the laws of nature, that it is held to be supernatural in origin or an act of God.”**

**“A person, thing or event that excites admiring awe.”**

- 
1. **Jinns** — “I think, from a collation and study of the Qur'anic passages, that the meaning is simply a **spirit, or an invisible or hidden force.**” A. Yusuf Ali. Obtain his text, translation and commentary from the IPCI. In his INDEX under “Jinns” he gives five Qur'anic references and as many annotations on the subject.
  2. The proof of the Qur'an is in its own beauty and nature, and the circumstances in which it was promulgated. **The doubters of the world are challenged to produce a Book like it and has produced none.** It is the only revealed Book whose text stands pure and uncorrupted today, after 1400 years!

**“An act beyond human power, an impossibility.”**

It is logical that greater the impossibility, greater the miracle. For example, should a person expire before our very eyes and is certified dead by a qualified medical man, yet later on a mystic or a saint commands the corpse to 'arise!', and to everybody's astonishment the person gets up and walks away, we would label that as a miracle. But if the resurrection of the dead took place after the corpse had been in the mortuary for three days, then we would acclaim this as a greater miracle. And if the dead was made to arise from the grave, decades or centuries after the body had been decomposed and rotted away, then in that case we would label it the greatest miracle of them all!

### **A COMMON TRAIT**

It has been a common trait of mankind since time immemorial that whenever a Guide from God appeared to redirect their steps into the Will and Plan of God; they demanded supernatural proofs from these men of God, instead of accepting the Message on its merit.

For example, when Jesus Christ (pbuh) began to preach to his people — “The Children of Israel” — to mend their ways and to refrain from mere legalistic formalism and imbibe the true spirit of the Laws and Commandments of God, his “people” demanded Miracles from him to prove his **bona fides**,<sup>1</sup> as recorded in the Christian Scriptures:

***Then certain of the Scribes and the Pharisees answered, saying Master, we would have a SIGN (Miracle) from thee.***

***But he answered and said unto them, “An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after***

---

1. **Bona fides** — his authenticity, his genuineness.

**a SIGN (Miracle) and there shall no SIGN  
(Miracle) be given to it, but the SIGN (Miracle)  
of the Prophet Jonas:<sup>1</sup> (Emphasis added)**

(Holy Bible) Matthew 12:38-39

Though on the face of it, Jesus (pbuh) refuses to pamper the Jews here, in fact, he did perform many miracles as we learn from the Gospel narratives.

The Holy Bible is full of supernatural events accredited to the Prophets from their Lord. In reality all those “**signs**” and “**wonders**” and “**miracles**” were acts of God, but since those miracles were worked through His human agents, we describe them as the Miracles of Prophets, i.e. Moses or Jesus (peace be upon them) by whose hands they were performed.

### QUIRK CONTINUES

Some six hundred years after the birth of Jesus Christ (pbuh), Muhammed (pbuh) the Messenger of God was born in Makkah in Arabia. When he proclaimed his Mission at the age of forty, his fellow countrymen, the *MUSHRIKS*<sup>2</sup> of Makkah made an identical request for Miracles, as had the Jews, from their promised Messiah. Textbook style, it was as if the Arabs had taken a leaf from the Christian records. History has a habit of repeating itself!

**AND THEY SAY:**

وَقَالُوا

**WHY ARE NOT SIGNS<sup>3</sup>  
SENT DOWN TO HIM  
FROM HIS LORD?**

لَوْلَا أَنْزَلَ عَلَيْهِ آيَاتٍ مِّن رَّبِّهِ

(SŪRA 'ANKABŪT) Holy Qur'an 29:50

- 
1. What was the outcome of the “**only sign**” that Jesus (pbuh) was prepared to give? Obtain your **FREE** copy of the Book — “**What was the Sign of Jonah?**” from the IPCI which furnishes a detailed exposition.
  2. **MUSHRIK** — pagans, idol worshippers, polytheists.
  3. “**Signs**” The Arabic word used is ‘**AAYAAH**’ which literally means ‘signs’, and which is really more to the point. The Holy Qur’an does not mention the word ‘**MU’JAZAH**’ (miracle).

## SIGNS! WHAT SIGNS?

"MIRACLES? CRIES HE, WHAT MIRACLES WOULD YOU HAVE? ARE NOT YOU YOURSELVES THERE? GOD MADE **YOU**, 'SHAPED YOU OUT OF A LITTLE CLAY.' YE WERE SMALL ONCE, A FEW YEARS AGO YE WERE NOT AT ALL. YE HAVE BEAUTY, STRENGTH, THOUGHTS, 'YE HAVE COMPASSION ON ONE ANOTHER.' OLD AGE COMES ON YOU, AND GREY HAIRS; YOUR STRENGTH FADES INTO FEEBLENESS: YE SINK DOWN, AND, AGAIN ARE NOT. '**YE HAVE COMPASSION ON ONE ANOTHER**' : THIS STRUCK ME MUCH: ALLAH MIGHT HAVE MADE YOU HAVING NO COMPASSION ON ONE ANOTHER, — HOW HAD IT BEEN THEN! THIS IS A GREAT DIRECT THOUGHT, A GLANCE AT FIRST-HAND INTO THE VERY FACT OF THINGS ..."

*"On Heroes and Hero-Worship and the Heroic in History"* by Thomas Carlyle

## "THIS STRUCK ME MUCH"

This, that — "**Ye have Compassion on one another,**" impressed Thomas Carlyle most from his perusal of an English translation. I presume, the verse that motivated this sentiment is:

1. **And among His signs is this, that He created for you mates from among yourselves,**

**That ye may dwell in TRANQUILLITY WITH THEM. and He has put love and mercy between your (hearts):**

**Verily in that are signs for those who reflect.**  
(Emphasis added)

(**SÚRA RÚM**) Holy Qur'an 30:21  
Translation by A. Yusuf Ali.

2. **And one of his signs it is, that he hath created wives for you or your own species**

**That YE MAY DWELL WITH THEM, and hath put love and tenderness between you.**

**Herein truly are signs for those who reflect.**  
(Emphasis added)

Translation by Rev. J.M. Rodwell (M.A.)

3. **By another sign he gave you wives from among yourselves,**

**That ye might LIVE IN JOY WITH THEM, and planted love and kindness into your hearts.**

**Surely there are signs in this for thinking men.** (Emphasis added)

Translation by N.J. Dawood

The first example is from the translation by A. Yusuf Ali, a Muslim. The second is by a Christian priest the Rev. Rodwell and the last example is by an Iraqi Jew, N.J. Dawood.

Unfortunately Thomas Carlyle had no access to any one of these because none of them had seen the light of day in his time. The only one available to him in 1840 was as he said on page 85 of his book under reference —

**'WE ALSO CAN READ THE KORAN<sup>1</sup>; OUR TRANSLATION OF IT, BY SALE, IS KNOWN TO BE A VERY FAIR ONE.'** (Emphasis added)

### **TAINT IS IN THE MOTIVE**

Carlyle is very charitable to his fellow countryman. The motives of George Sale who pioneered an English Translation of the Holy

---

1. The Arabic word is **Qur'an**, it starts with a "Q" and not a "K"

Qur'an, were suspect. He makes no secret of his antagonism to the Holy Book of Islam. In his preface to his translation in 1734 he made it known that it was his **avowed intention to expose the man Mohammed and his forgery**: He records:

“WHO CAN APPREHEND ANY DANGER FROM SO MANIFEST A FORGERY? ... THE PROTESTANTS ALONE ARE ABLE TO ATTACK THE KORAN WITH SUCCESS; AND FOR THEM, I TRUST, PROVIDENCE HAS RESERVED THE GLORY OF ITS OVERTHROW.”

George Sale

And he set to work with his prejudiced translation. You will be able to judge how “**fair**” and scholarly George Sale was from the very verse which “**Struck**” (Carlyle) “**much!**” Compare it with the three examples already given by a Muslim, a Christian and a Jew:

*And of his signs another is,  
that he had created for you, out of  
yourselves, wives that YE MAY  
COHABIT WITH THEM, and hath put  
love and compassion between you.*

(Emphasis added)

I do not think that George Sale was “a male chauvinist pig” of his day to describe our mates, wives or spouses as sexual objects. He was only keeping to his promise, which Carlyle overlooked. The Arabic word which he (Sale) perverted is “**li-tas-kunoo**” which means to find peace, consolation, composure or tranquility; and not “**cohabit**” meaning “**To live together in a sexual relationship when not legally married.**” (The Reader's Digest Universal Dictionary).

Every word of the Qur'anic text is meticulously chosen, chiselled and placed by the All-Wise Himself. They carry God's “finger-print”, and are the Signs of God. And yet, the spiritually jaundiced ...

## ASK FOR A SIGN

**What Signs?** They mean some special kinds of signs or miracles such as their own foolish minds dictate. Everything is possible for God, but God is not going to humour the follies of men or listen to their false demands. He has sent His Messenger to explain His Signs clearly, and to warn them of the consequences of rejection. Is that not enough? The trend of their demand is generally as follows:

In specific terms they asked that he — Muhammed (pbuh) — 'Put a ladder up to heaven and bring down a book from God in their very sight' — **"THEN WE WOULD BELIEVE,"** they said. Or "Ye see the mountain yonder, turn it into gold' — **"THEN WE WOULD BELIEVE."** or 'Make streams to gush out in the desert' — **"THEN WE WOULD BELIEVE."**

Now listen to the soft, sweet reasoning of Muhammed (pbuh) against the unreasonable and sceptical demands of the **MUSHRIKS** — **"Do I say to you, verily I am an angel? Do I say to you, verily in my hands are the treasures of God? Only, what is revealed to me do I follow."**

Listen further to the most dignified reply he is commanded by his Lord to give the Unbelievers.

**SAY (O MUHAMMED):**  
**'THE SIGNS (MIRACLES)**  
**ARE INDEED WITH ALLAH:**

قُلْ إِنَّمَا آيَاتُ عِنْدَ اللَّهِ

**AND MOST CERTAINLY**  
**I AM ONLY A CLEAR WARNER!'**

وَإِنَّمَا أَنَا نَذِيرٌ مُّبِينٌ ﴿٥٠﴾

(SŪRA 'ANKABŪT) Holy Qur'an 29:50

In the following **AAYAAH**<sup>1</sup> (verse) the Holy Prophet is made to point to the Holy Qur'an itself as an answer to their hypocritical

1. **AAYAAH** In the Holy Qur'an stands for "a sign" as well for "a verse." There are over six thousand **AAYAAHS** or verses in the Book of God, and every verse is a sign of God.

demand for some special kind of “**Sign**” or “**Miracle**” for which their foolish, pagan mentality craved. For indeed all miracles are “signs”; and it is their disbelief, their scepticism, their lack of faith which motivates their request for a sign. They are asked to — ‘Look at the Qur’an” And again, “**Look at the Qur’an!**”

**IS IT NOT ENOUGH FOR  
THEM**

أَوَلَمْ يَكْفِهِمْ

**THAT WE<sup>1</sup> HAVE SENT DOWN  
TO THEE (O MUHAMMED!)  
THE BOOK (AL-QUR’AN)**

أَنَّا أَنْزَلْنَا عَلَيْكَ الْكِتَابَ

**WHICH IS REHEARSED  
TO THEM?**

يُتْلَى عَلَيْهِمْ ؕ

**VERILY, IN IT (THIS  
PERSPICUOUS BOOK)**

إِنَّ فِي ذَلِكَ

**IS A MERCY AND  
REMINDER**

لرَّحْمَةٍ وَذِكْرٍ

**TO THOSE WHO  
BELIEVE.<sup>2</sup>**

لِقَوْمٍ يُؤْمِنُونَ ۝٤

SÚRA ‘ANKABÚT) Holy Qur'an 29:51

## TWO PROOFS

As proof of the Divine Authorship and the miraculous nature of the Holy Qur’an, two arguments are advanced by the Almighty Himself:

1. “**THAT WE**” (God Almighty) have revealed to **YOU** (O! Muhammed!) “**THE BOOK** to **YOU**” who art absolutely an

1. **WE** is a plural of respect and honour and not of numbers. In every Eastern language, including Hebrew, this is their method of grammar. In the English Language it is called the “Royal Plural.”

2. Memorize the verse with its meaning while the Book is still in your hands.



unlearned person. An “**UMMI**” Prophet. One who cannot read or write. One who cannot sign his own name. Let Thomas Carlyle<sup>1</sup> testify regarding the educational qualifications of Muhummed —

“ONE OTHER CIRCUMSTANCE WE MUST NOT FORGET: THAT HE HAD NO SCHOOL-LEARNING; OF THE THING WE CALL SCHOOL-LEARNING NONE AT ALL.”

Moreover the Divine Author (God Almighty) Himself testifies to the veracity of Muhummed’s (pbuh) claim that he could never have composed the contents of the Holy Qur’an; he could not have been its author:

**AND THOU (O MUHUMMED)  
WAS NOT (ABLE)  
TO RECITE A BOOK**

وَمَا كُنْتَ تَتْلُوا

**BEFORE THIS (BOOK  
CAME),**

مِنْ قَبْلِهِ مِنْ كِتَابٍ

**NOR ART THOU (ABLE)  
TO TRANSCRIBE IT  
WITH THY RIGHT HAND:**

وَلَا تَخْطُهُ بِيَمِينِكَ

**IN THAT CASE, INDEED,  
WOULD THE TALKERS OF  
VANITIES HAVE DOUBTED<sup>2</sup>**

إِذَا الْأَرْتَابَ الْمُبْطُلُونَ ﴿٢٠﴾

(SÚRA ‘ANKABÚT) Holy Qur’an 29:48

The Author of the Qur’an is reasoning with us, that had Muhummed (pbuh) been a learned man, and had he been able to read and write, then in that case the babblers in the market-places might have had some justification to doubt his

1. Already referred to on page 166.

2. Get into the habit of learning off by heart the verses with their meanings as they occur in this Book.

claim that the Holy Qur'an is God's Word. In the event of Muhammed (pbuh) being a literate person, the accusation of his enemies that he had probably copied his Book (Al-Qur'an) from the writings of the Jews and the Christians, or that perhaps he had been studying Aristotle and Plato, or that he must have browsed through the "Torat," the "Zabur" and the "Injeel"<sup>1</sup> and had rehashed it all in a beautiful language, might have carried some weight. Then, "THE TALKERS OF VANITIES" **might have had a point.** But even this flimsy pretence has been denied to the unbeliever and the cynic: a point hardly big enough to hang a fly upon!<sup>2</sup>

2. 'The Book'? Yes, the "**BOOK**" itself, carries its own evidence proving its Divine Authorship. Study the Book from any angle. Scrutinize it. Why not take up the Author's challenge if your doubts are genuine?

**DO THEY NOT CONSIDER  
THE QUR'AN (WITH CARE)?**

أَفَلَا يَتَدَبَّرُونَ الْقُرْآنَ

**HAD IT BEEN FROM  
OTHER THAN ALLAH,**

وَلَوْ كَانَ مِنْ عِنْدِ غَيْرِ اللَّهِ

**THEY WOULD SURELY  
HAVE FOUND THEREIN  
MUCH DISCREPANCY<sup>3</sup>**

لَوْجَدُوا فِيهِ اخْتِلَافًا كَثِيرًا ۝

(SÚRA NISÁA) Holy Qur'an 4:82

- 
1. **TORAT/ZABUR/INJEEL:** These are the Arabic terms of the original revelations God granted Moses, David and Jesus (peace be upon them all) respectively.
  2. The Bible was not translated into Arabic until the tenth century of the Christian Era, so no Arab living before the year 1000 would have had the opportunity to examine the written text of the Bible in his own language.
  3. If you cannot muster enough enthusiasm to learn the verses with their meanings, why not hand over the Book to someone who will make better use of it?

## CONSISTENCY

It is inconceivable that any human author would remain consistent in his teachings and his preachings for a period of over two decades. From the age of forty, when Muhammed (pbuh) received his first call from Heaven to the age of sixty-three when he breathed his last, for twenty-three years the Holy Prophet practised and preached Islam. In those twenty-three years, he passed through the most conflicting vicissitudes of life. Any man, during the course of such a mission, would be forced by circumstances to make "honourable" compromises, and cannot help contradicting himself. No man can ever write the same always, as the Message of the Holy Qur'an is: **CONSISTENT WITH ITSELF, throughout!** Or is it that the unbelievers' objections are merely argumentative, refractory, against their own better light and judgement?

Furthermore, the Holy Qur'an contains or mentions many matters relating to the nature of the universe which were unknown to man before but which subsequently through evolution and discoveries of Science have fully confirmed — a field where an untutored mind would have most certainly lost in wild and contradictory speculations!

## SELF-EVIDENT PROOF

Again and again when miracles were demanded from the Prophet of God by the cynical and frivolous few, he is made to point to the Qur'an — Message from High — as "**The Miracle.**" **THE MIRACLE OF MIRACLES!** And men of wisdom, people with literary and spiritual insight, who were honest enough to themselves, recognised and accepted Al-Qur'an as a genuine miracle.

Says the Holy Qur'an:

**NAY, HERE ARE  
SIGNS SELF-EVIDENT**

بَلْ هُوَ آيَاتٌ بَيِّنَاتٌ

**IN THE HEARTS  
OF THOSE ENDOWED  
WITH KNOWLEDGE:<sup>1</sup>**

فِي صُدُورِ الَّذِينَ أُوتُوا الْعِلْمَ

**AND NONE BUT  
THE UNJUST REJECT  
OUR SIGNS.<sup>2</sup>**

وَمَا يَجْحَدُ بِآيَاتِنَا إِلَّا الظَّالِمُونَ ﴿٢٠﴾

(SÚRA 'ANKABÚT) Holy Qur'an 29:49

- 
1. "**Knowledge**" ('ilm) means both power of judgement in discerning the value of truth and acquaintance with previous revelations. It implies both literary and spiritual insight. To men so endowed, God's revelations and Signs are self-evident. They commend themselves to their hearts, minds, and understandings, which are typified in Arabic by the word *sadr*, "breast".
  2. Now the argument is carried a stage farther. Such rejection is also a mark of injustice, a deliberate perversity in going against obvious Signs, which should convince all honest men.

## CHAPTER TWO

# *Science and the Qur'anic Revelations*

### UNGRUDGING TRIBUTES

Today, there are in the world some one thousand million Muslims who unhesitatingly accept that the Holy Qur'an is the "**WORD OF GOD**" and that it is a "**Miracle.**"

Why should they not, when even avowed enemies are paying unsolicited tributes regarding the miraculous nature of this Book of God. The Rev. R. Bosworth-Smith in his book "**Mohammed and Mohammedanism**"<sup>1</sup> opines about the Qur'an:

- (a) "A MIRACLE OF PURITY OF STYLE, OF WISDOM AND OF TRUTH.

Another Englishman — A.J. Arberry, in the preface of his English translation of the Holy Qur'an — says:

- (b) "WHENEVER I HEAR THE QUR'AN CHANTED, IT IS AS THOUGH I AM LISTENING TO MUSIC, UNDERNEATH THE FLOWING MELODY, THERE IS SOUNDING ALL THE TIME THE INSISTENT BEAT OF A DRUM, IT IS LIKE THE BEATING OF MY HEART."

From these words and the rest of his preface he sounds like a Muslim, but regretfully he died outside the pale of Islam. And yet another Briton, Marmaduke Picktall in the foreword to his translation of the Holy Qur'an, describes it as:

- (c) "THAT INIMITABLE SYMPHONY, THE VERY SOUND OF WHICH MOVE MEN TO TEARS AND ECSTASY."

---

1. There is no such thing as "**Mohammedanism**", and no such thing as a "**Mohammedan.**" The name of the Religion is **Islam** and its followers are **Muslims.**

This Author embraced Islam before translating the Qur'an, and we are not in a position to verify whether he wrote the previous effect before or after his conversion.

- (d) "NEXT TO THE BIBLE<sup>1</sup> IT (The Qur'an) IS THE MOST ESTEEMED AND MOST POWERFUL RELIGIOUS BOOK IN THE WORLD."

J. Christy Wilson in "*Introducing Islam*" New York 1950

- (e) "THE KORAN IS THE MOHAMMEDAN BIBLE, AND IS MORE REVERENCED THAN ANY OTHER SACRED BOOK, MORE THAN THE JEWISH OLD TESTAMENT OR THE CHRISTIAN NEW TESTAMENT."

J. Shillidy, D.D., in "*The Lord Jesus in the Koran*," Surat 1913, p.111

We can quite easily adduce a dozen more eulogies to the above list. Friends and foes alike pay ungrudging commendations to the Last and Final Revelation of God — the Holy Qur'an. The contemporaries of Muhammed (pbuh) saw in its beauty and majesty, the nobility of its Call and the magnanimity of its Message, the Sign and Miracle of God's Handiwork, and accepted Islam. To all the tributes and testimonies the unbeliever and the sceptic may say that these are all subjective feelings. He might further seek refuge in the pretext that he does not know Arabic. He is heard to say, "I do not see what you see, nor do I feel as you feel. How am I to know that God exists and that it is He Who inspired His Messenger Muhammed (pbuh) with that beautiful Message; the Qur'an?" He continues "I am not averse to the beauty of its philosophy, its practical ethics and high morality, I am prepared to concede that Muhammed (pbuh) was a sincere man and that he gave many beautiful precepts for human welfare. What I cannot subscribe to is what you Muslims claim, '**a supernatural authority for his dicta**'."

---

1. Coming from a Christian critic of Islam, we will not take exception to his placing the Qur'an in the second place.

## REASONED LOGIC

To this kind of sympathetic, yet sceptical mentality, the Author of the Book (Al-Qur'an) uses various types of arguments to resolve his doubts. To the atheists and agnostics, the cynics and the sceptics, who have a super-abundance of scientific knowledge and who consider themselves to be "intellectual giants," the point is driven home that they are in reality like stunted "dwarfs." They are like the dwarf who may have acquired abnormal development in any one particular direction at the expense of other parts of his faculty, like an oversized head on a puny body, the Supreme Creator questions him.

But before we pose God's question to him, let me satisfy my own curiosity. "You men of science who have studied astronomy and who study our Universe through your mighty telescopes as if scrutinising an object in the palm of your hand; tell me how did this Universe come into being?" This man of science though lacking in spiritual insight, is nevertheless most generous in sharing his knowledge. He readily responds. "Well," he begins, "Billions of years ago our Universe was a single piece of matter, and there happened a "**Big Bang**" in the centre of that huge lump of matter and mighty chunks of matter began flying in all directions. Out of that "big bang" our solar system came into being as well as the galaxies, and since there is no resistance in space to that primordial momentum generated by the initial explosion, the stars and the planets swim along in their orbits ..."

At this juncture, my memory tickles me — Our materialist friends appear to have been secretly imbibing their knowledge from the *Súra Yaa-Seen*:<sup>1</sup>

### AND THE SUN RUNS HIS COURSE

وَالشَّمْسُ تَجْرِي

1. **Yaa-Seen**: is the 36th chapter of the Holy Qur'an. The verses here are laid out for you to memorize in a very easy form, together with their meanings. Take advantage of it!

**FOR A PERIOD DETER-  
MINED FOR HIM:**

لِئَسْتَقِرَّ لَهَا

**THAT IS THE DECREE  
OF (HIM) THE EXALTED IN  
MIGHT THE ALL-KNOWING.**

ذَلِكَ تَقْدِيرُ الْعَزِيزِ الْعَلِيمِ

**AND THE MOON, WE HAVE  
MEASURED FOR HER MANSIONS  
(TO TRAVERSE)**

وَالْقَمَرَ قَدَّرْنَاهُ مَنَازِلَ

**TILL SHE RETURNS LIKE THE  
OLD (AND WITHERED) LOWER  
PART OF A DATE — STALK.**

حَتَّىٰ عَادَ  
كَالْعُرْجُونِ الْقَدِيمِ

**IT IS NOT PERMITTED  
TO THE SUN TO OVER  
TAKE THE MOON,**

لَا الشَّمْسُ يَنْبَغِي لَهَا أَنْ تُدْرِكَ الْقَمَرَ

**NOR CAN THE NIGHT  
OUTSTRIP THE DAY:**

وَلَا اللَّيْلُ سَابِقُ النَّهَارِ

**EACH (JUST) SWIMS ALONG  
IN (ITS OWN) ORBIT  
(ACCORDING TO LAW).**

وَ كُلٌّ فِي فَلَكٍ يَسْبَحُونَ

(SÚRA YÁ-SÍN) HOLY QUR'AN 36:38-40

The atheistic scientist continues. "Ours is an 'expanding' universe. The galaxies are receding away from us at a faster and faster rate, and once they reach the speed of light,<sup>1</sup> we will not be able to see them anymore. We must construct bigger and better telescopes as quickly as possible to study the sights, if not we will miss the bus!"

"When did you discover these fairy tales?" we ask. "No, these are not fairy tales but scientific facts!" our friend assures us. "All right, we accept your facts for what you say they are, but when

1. Light is said to travel at a speed of a hundred and eighty six thousand miles per second (7.5 times around the world in one second!).



did you really stumble upon these facts?" "Only yesterday!" he replies. Fifty years, after all; is only 'yesterday' in the history of the human race. "An unlettered Arab in the desert over 1400 years ago could never have had your knowledge of the 'big bang' and of your 'expanding universe,' could he?" we ask. "No never!" he retorts boastfully. "Well, then listen to what this *ummi*<sup>1</sup> Prophet uttered under inspiration:"

**DO NOT THE UNBELIEVERS  
(THE ATHEISTS AND THE  
AGNOSTICS) SEE**

أَوَلَمْ يَرَ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا

**THAT THE HEAVENS  
AND THE EARTH**

أَنَّ السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضَ

**WERE JOINED TOGETHER (AS  
ONE UNIT OF CREATION)  
BEFORE WE CLOVE THEM ASUNDER? ...**

كَانَتَا رَتْقًا فَفَتَقْنَاهُمَا

(SÚRA ANBIYÁA) HOLY QUR'AN 21:30

**AND IT IS HE (GOD AL-  
MIGHTY) WHO CREATED  
THE NIGHT AND THE DAY,**

وَهُوَ الَّذِي خَلَقَ اللَّيْلَ وَالنَّهَارَ

**AND THE SUN AND THE  
MOON:**

وَالشَّمْسَ وَالْقَمَرَ

**ALL (THE CELESTIAL BODIES)  
SWIM ALONG, EACH IN ITS  
ROUNDED COURSE.**

كُلٌّ فِي فَلَكٍ يَسْبَحُونَ

(SÚRA ANBIYÁA) HOLY QUR'AN 21:33

## 'BIG BANG' THEORY

Can't you see that the words "The Unbelievers" in the first quote above are specifically addressed to **You** — the men of

1. *Ummi*: means unlettered, unlearned. "And the Book is given to him that is NOT LEARNED, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he sayeth, I am not learned" Isaiah 29:12. See how this prophecy finds fulfilment in Muhammed (pbuh). Obtain your FREE COPY OF "What the Bible says about Muhammed (pbuh)" from the IPCI.

science — the geographers, the astronomers, who, after having made amazing discoveries and conveyed these discoveries to mankind, still remain so 'BLIND' as not to 'SEE' its Author? **“With our Sciences and Encyclopaedias, we are apt to forget the Divineness, in those laboratories of ours”**<sup>1</sup> says Thomas Carlyle.

Where on earth could a camel driver in the desert have gleaned **'Your facts' fourteen hundred years ago**, except from the Maker of the **'Big Bang'** Himself?

### ORIGIN OF LIFE

“And **You** biologists who seem to have your fingers on all organic life, and yet have the temerity to deny the existence of the Source of that Life, i.e. God: tell me, according to your vaunted research; **where and how did life originate?**”

Like his 'unbelieving' astronomer companion in science, he too begins — “Well, billions of years ago primaeval matter in the sea began to generate protoplasm out of which came the amoeba; and out of that mire in the sea came all **living** things. In one word ALL LIFE came from the sea, i.e. **Water!**”

“And when did you discover this fact that all living things came from water?” The answer is no different from that of his fellow scientist the astronomer — **“Yesterday!”** “No man of learning, no philosopher or poet could ever have guessed your biological discovery fourteen centuries back, could he?” we ask, and our biologist is as emphatic as the astronomer. **“No, never!”** says he. “Well, then, you just listen to this untutored son of the desert!”

**AND WE MADE FROM WATER<sup>2</sup>**

**EVERY LIVING THING**

وَجَعَلْنَا مِنَ الْمَاءِ كُلَّ شَيْءٍ حَيٍّ

- 
1. From **“Heroes and Hero Worship”** by Thomas Carlyle.
  2. Protoplasm is the basis of all living matter, and “the vital power of protoplasm seems to depend on the constant presence of water” (Lawson's Text Book of Botany, London 1922). Textbooks on Zoology are also clear on this point. For further explanation see Yusuf Ali's translation and commentary, available from the IPCI.

**WILL THEY (THE UNBELIEVERS,  
THE ATHEISTS AND THE AGNOSTICS)  
THEN NOT BELIEVE?**

أَفَلَا يُؤْمِنُونَ ﴿٢٠﴾

(SÚRA ANBIYÁA) Holy Qur'an 21:30

The above statement is further elaborated in the Book of God:

**AND ALLAH HAS CREATED  
EVERY ANIMAL FROM  
WATER:<sup>1</sup>**

وَاللَّهُ خَلَقَ كُلَّ دَابَّةٍ مِّن مَّاءٍ ۚ

**OF THEM THERE ARE  
SOME THAT CREEP ON  
THEIR BELLIES;**

فِيْنَهُمْ مَّن يَمْشِي عَلَى بَطْنِهِ ۚ

**SOME THAT WALK ON  
TWO LEGS;**

وَمِنْهُمْ مَّن يَمْشِي عَلَى رِجْلَيْنِ ۚ

**AND SOME THAT WALK  
ON FOUR.**

وَمِنْهُمْ مَّن يَمْشِي عَلَى أَرْبَعٍ ۚ

**ALLAH CREATES WHAT  
HE WILLS;**

يَخْلُقُ اللَّهُ مَا يَشَاءُ ۚ

**FOR VERILY ALLAH HAS  
POWER OVER ALL THINGS.**

إِنَّ اللَّهَ عَلَىٰ كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٌ ﴿٢١﴾

(SÚRA NÚR) Holy Qur'an 24:45

It will not be difficult for you to note that these words of the Omnipotent, Omniscient Creator of the Universe were addressed to YOU men of knowledge in answer to your scepticism TODAY. Their real import was beyond the dwellers of the desert fourteen centuries ago. The Author (God Almighty) is reasoning with YOU, you men of science, how can YOU not believe in God? YOU should be the LAST to deny His existence and yet you are the FIRST! What sickness has overtaken YOU that you allow your egos to overshadow your sense of logic?

1. See Note No. 2 at bottom of page 180

AND to the botanists and the zoologists and the physicists who, despite their amazing insight into the nature of things, refuse to acknowledge a Master Creator. Let them then account for these utterances of Muhammed (pbuh) the mouthpiece of God.

**GLORY BE TO HIM  
(GOD ALMIGHTY)**

سُبْحَانَ الَّذِي

**WHO CREATED IN  
PAIRS \* ALL THINGS**

خَلَقَ الْأَزْوَاجَ كُلَّهَا

**THAT WHICH THE EARTH PRODUCES  
(THE VEGETABLE KINGDOM),**

بِمَا تُنْبِتُ الْأَرْضُ

**AS WELL AS THEIR OWN (HUMAN)  
KIND (THE ANIMAL KINGDOM)**

وَمِنْ أَنْفُسِهِمْ

**AND (OTHER) THINGS OF WHICH  
THEY HAVE NO KNOWLEDGE  
(LIKE OF PHYSICS)<sup>1</sup>**

وَمِمَّا لَا يَعْلَمُونَ

(SÚRA YÁ-SÍN) Holy Qur'an 36:36

\* "CREATED IN PAIRS" *"The mystery of sex runs through all creation, — in man, in animal life, in vegetable life, and in other things of which we have no knowledge. Then there are pairs of opposite forces in nature, e.g. positive and negative electricity, etc. The atom itself consists of a positively charged nucleus or proton, surrounded by negatively charged electrons. The constitution of matter itself is thus referred to as pairs of opposite energies."*  
(Comment by A. Yusuf Ali)<sup>2</sup>

- 
1. Here is another verse from YÁ-SÍN. Further to footnote No. 1 on page 171, a special plea is made to Muslim readers who already know the Sura in Arabic, to now master its English meaning as well. Equip yourself for all the good work!
  2. Obtain your volume of Yusuf Ali's translation with over 6000 such explanatory notes at a subsidised price from the IPCI.

## SIGNS OF GOD

The verses of this “**Perspicuous Book**,” the Holy Qur'an are evidently self-explanatory. Students of the Qur'an saw the unmistakable Finger of God in every discovery that man made. These were the “**Signs**,” the “**Miracles**” from his Beneficent Lord and Cherisher so as to remove his doubts and strengthen his faith.

... **IN THESE ARE SIGNS FOR  
A PEOPLE OF LEARNING.**

إِنَّ فِي ذَلِكَ لَآيَاتٍ لِّلْعَالِمِينَ ﴿٢٢﴾

(SÚRA RÚM) Holy Qur'an 30:22

What an irony! It is the ‘**people of learning**’ who are actually rebellious! Their vast material knowledge has inflated them with pride. They lack the genuine humility which goes together with all true knowledge.

In the words of a modern Frenchman:

“THE ABOVE OBSERVATION (HIS OWN THESIS) MAKES THE HYPOTHESIS ADVANCED BY THOSE WHO SEE MUHAMMAD AS THE AUTHOR OF THE QUR'AN UNTENABLE. HOW COULD A MAN, FROM BEING ILLITERATE, BECOME THE MOST IMPORTANT AUTHOR, IN TERMS OF LITERARY MERITS, IN THE WHOLE OF ARABIC LITERATURE?”

“HOW COULD HE THEN PRONOUNCE TRUTHS OF A SCIENTIFIC NATURE THAT NO OTHER HUMAN BEING COULD POSSIBLY HAVE DEVELOPED AT THAT TIME, AND ALL THIS WITHOUT ONCE MAKING THE SLIGHTEST ERROR IN HIS PRONOUNCEMENT ON THE SUBJECT?”

See “**The Bible, the Qur'an and Science**” p. 125 by Maurice Bucaille

## EARLY INSPIRATION

The seeds of this booklet, "**AL-QUR'AN — The Miracle of Miracles,**" was probably sown by the Roving Ambassador of Islam, the silver-tongued orator — Maulana Abdul Aleem Siddiqui. I was only a schoolboy when he visited South Africa on a lecture tour in 1934. Among his many erudite speeches, I heard him talk on '**Cultivation of Science by the Muslims.**' Subsequently, a booklet under the same title was published by the World Federation of Islamic Missions, Karachi, Pakistan, which brings back the earlier joy and thrill of the discourse I heard in my teens. In memory of that great servant of Islam, I reproduce here, for posterity, a few words of what the Maulana had to say on the relationship between the Holy Qur'an and the branches of scientific knowledge:

## EXHORTATIONS TO THE SCIENCES

**"The stress which the Holy Qur'an has laid on the scientific study of the universe is a phenomenon unique in the religious literature of the world. Repeatedly it calls our attention to the multifarious phenomena of nature occurring around us. Repeatedly it exhorts the Muslims that the pursuit of scientific knowledge is one of their religious duties. Repeatedly it emphasises the great truth unknown to the pre-Qur'anic world that everything in nature is for the service of man and should be harnessed by him for his use. It exhorts us to study the structure and function of the human organism, the structure, functions and distribution of animals, the form, structure, functions, classification and distribution of plants, and these are problems of BIOLOGY.**

**"It exhorts us to study the order of nature and the general properties of matter as affected by energy, which is the problem of modern PHYSICS.**

**“It exhorts us to study the properties of substances both elementary and compound and the laws of their combination and action one upon another which is the problem of modern CHEMISTRY.**

**“It exhorts us to study the structure and mineral constitution of the globe, the different strata of which it is composed, the changes that take place in its organic and inorganic matter, etc., etc., which are the problem of modern GEOLOGY.**

**“It exhorts us to study the general description of the earth, its physical divisions into seas, rivers, mountains, plains, etc., and the minerals, plants and animals in each, and its political divisions which are the problems of modern GEOGRAPHY.**

**“It exhorts us to study the causes which bring about the alternation of day and night, the variation of the seasons, the movement of the planets and other celestial phenomena, which are the problems of modern ASTRONOMY.”**

**“It exhorts us to study the movements of winds, the formation and evolution of clouds and the production of rain, and other similar phenomena, which are the problems of modern METEOROLOGY.”**

For centuries, Muslims were world leaders in the field of scientific learning. Then slowly, the leadership began to slip away from their hands. Muslims had failed in their leadership role and materialistic Europe moved forward to fill the vacuum in leadership created by the Muslims.

Further, the Maulana records the contribution made by the Muslims as follows:

**“The intellectual upheaval created by Islam was a gigantic one. There is not a single department of learning which the Muslim scholars have left untouched and which they**

have not carved out a high position for themselves.

**“In truth, Islam intends the Muslim community to be a community of intellectuals, and the cultivation of science and all other forms of learning is one of the primary aims of Islam. Had it not been for the Muslims, Europe would never have seen its way to the Renaissance and the modern scientific era would never have dawned. Those nations who have received their knowledge of science from Europe are in fact indirectly the disciples of the Islamic community of the past. Humanity owes to Islam a debt which it can never repay and gratitude which it can never forget.”**

The silver-tongued orator (the Maulana) ended his masterful exposition of the topic — **“CULTIVATION OF SCIENCE BY THE MUSLIMS,”** with the words:

“Before I conclude, let me affirm once more that the Muslim community is out and out a creation of Islam which in its turn is rooted in Divine revelation. Nothing but belief in and the practice of Islam can make an individual a Muslim. Islam has laid it down as a religious duty that a Muslim should enquire into the reality of objects around him, so that his scientific enquiry may lead him to the knowledge of his Creator. Scientific enquiry in Islam is not an end but a means to the attainment of a higher end. And this is really the true end of humanity. **‘TO ALLAH WE BELONG AND TO ALLAH IS OUR RETURN’**

*Holy Qur'an 2:156*

### **MY ABORTED LECTURE**

I had the privilege of hearing the above speech in 1934 from the lips of the master himself. In the late thirties I had the speech in my hands as a booklet. I memorized it with some changes and modifications, whilst still working in a Muslim shop at Adams Mission Station. I was so enthused that I made arrangements



with Adam's College to speak to the students and their lecturers on the same subject. At that time I might not have fully grasped the enormity of my task but I will never know for sure as my Muslim Boss came to my rescue? He threatened me with dismissal if I did not cancel my first public lecture. I backed out. My employer was no doubt ignorant of Allah's warning. I too, knew no better. I cannot say what stand I would have taken then if I was programmed with this admonition:

**SAY: IF IT BE YOUR FATHERS;**

**OR YOUR SONS,**

**OR YOUR BROTHERS,**

**OR YOUR MATES,  
OR YOUR RELATIONS;**

**OR THE WEALTH THAT  
YE HAVE AMASSED;**

**OR THE LOSSES YE FEAR  
IN YOUR BUSINESSES:**

**OR THE DWELLINGS IN  
WHICH YOU TAKE DELIGHT —**

**IF YOU LOVE (ANY OF THESE)  
MORE THAN YOU LOVE ALLAH,**

**OR HIS MESSENGER,**

**OR THE STRIVING IN  
HIS CAUSE;**

**THEN WAIT UNTIL ALLAH  
BRINGS ABOUT HIS DECISION:**

**AND ALLAH GUIDES  
NOT A REBELLIOUS  
PEOPLE<sup>1</sup>**

قُلْ إِنْ كَانَ آبَاؤُكُمْ

وَ أبنَاءُكُمْ

وَ إِخْوَانُكُمْ

وَ أَزْوَاجُكُمْ وَ عَشِيرَتُكُمْ

وَ أَمْوَالٌ اقْتَرَفْتُمُوهَا

وَ تِجَارَةٌ تَخْشَوْنَ كَسَادَهَا

وَ مَسْكِنٌ تَرْضَوْنَهَا

أَحَبَّ إِلَيْكُمْ مِنْ اللَّهِ

وَ رَسُولِهِ

وَ جِهَادٍ فِي سَبِيلِهِ

فَتَرَبَّصُوا حَتَّى يَأْتِيَ اللَّهُ بِأَمْرِهِ

وَ اللَّهُ لَا يَهْدِي الْقَوْمَ الْفَاسِقِينَ ﴿٢٥﴾

(SÚRA TAUBA) Holy Qur'an 9:24

1. (a) A video tape on the topic — “Da’wah or Destruction?” is available from the IPCI
- (b) Write for your FREE video catalogue.
- (c) Memorize the verse together with its meaning. If you are rightly programmed, you will have the right responses in every challenging situation. **Insha-Allah!**

Thanks (?) to our timid brother, my first ever lecture to Christian missionaries and trainee priests which I had so assiduously planned, memorized and rehearsed came to nothing. Perhaps I was set back ten years in my career in public speaking. There are millions like my Muslim boss who are just as terrified by material considerations enumerated in the above verse who not only will not deliver the Message of Islam themselves but obstruct those prepared to do the job. Yet they display in their bearing the utmost piety: to no avail — Allah describes such as **“Perverted transgressors!”**

### TAKE UP THE CHALLENGE

In the foregoing speech the Maulana had drawn our attention to the Qur'anic exhortations for us to ponder on, Biology, Physics, Chemistry, Geology, Meteorology etc. Scholars like Maurice Bucaille, Keith Moore and Sheikh Zindani have written on different scientific aspects of the Holy Qur'an in recent times. But the scope is limitless. The noble Qur'an is an ocean of Knowledge. In this world of specialization Muslim scientists must take up the challenges hinted at by the Maulana in the mid-thirties. They do not have to dabble in every field. To each his own particular speciality. The youth of Islam is hungry for information and articles and small tracts on different scientific subjects in order to whet their appetites. Encyclopaedias may follow. **Insha-Allah!**

I do not have to apologise for leaving the exposition of Qur'anic sciences to Muslim scientists. Even non-Muslims should be encouraged to explore the depths of Wisdom as enshrined in the book of God. For my part, as a layman, I will share with you the miraculous nature of the Holy Qur'an in what appears to me to be in simple, ordinary facts.

## CHAPTER THREE

# *Al-Qur'an Absolutely Unique In Its Recording*

Among all the extant religious literature of the world, the Holy Qur'an is absolutely unique. Its recording and preservation are miraculous! Because it stands out distinctly from the ordinary human pattern of narration; the short-sighted and the inimical say that it is incoherent or incongruous. The pattern definitely is different. It is unique. It is miraculous. Let me substantiate what I assert.

### HUMAN STYLE

Every other religious book is set on the pattern of, "**Once upon a time ...**" or "**The fox and the grapes ... the wolf and lamb,**" etc, etc. i.e.

- 1a. **IN THE BEGINNING** (Once Upon a Time)  
**God created the heaven<sup>1</sup> and the earth ...**  
(Emphasis added) (HOLY BIBLE) Genesis 1:1<sup>2</sup>
  
- b. **IN THE BEGINNING** (Once Upon a Time)  
**was the word, and the word was with God, and the word was God<sup>3</sup> ...** (Emphasis added)  
(HOLY BIBLE) John 1:1

- 
1. The first verse of the Bible speaks about "the heaven and the earth" in the singular. In the Holy Qur'an the word earth is always singular whereas the word heavens is in the plural. Some thing to ponder upon!
  2. The word "**Genesis**" itself means the beginning, this is, after all how every human tale ought to start. It should begin with the "beginning!"
  3. In the original Greek manuscripts of the new Testament there is no such thing as a capital letter and a small letter. The Christian theologians have contrived capitals according to their religious prejudices into their translations of the Bible i.e. God and god.

- c. **THIS IS THE GENEALOGY** (The Origin, The Beginning) **of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham ...** (Emphasis added)  
(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 1:1
2. **NOW AFTER THE DEATH OF MOSES THE SERVANT OF THE LORD IT CAME TO PASS** (So It Happened, Once Upon a Time), **that the Lord spake unto Joshua ...** (Emphasis added)  
(HOLY BIBLE) Joshua 1:1
3. **NOW AFTER THE DEATH OF JOSHUA IT CAME TO PASS** (So It Happened, Once Upon a Time), **the children of Israel asked the Lord ...** (Emphasis added)  
(HOLY BIBLE) Judges 1:1<sup>1</sup>
4. **NOW IT CAME TO PASS** (So It Happened, Once Upon a Time) **in the days when the judges ruled, that there was famine in the land ...** (Emphasis added)  
(HOLY BIBLE) Ruth 1:1<sup>2</sup>
5. **NOW THERE WAS A CERTAIN MAN** (Once Upon a Time) **of Ramathaimzophim, of the mount Ephraim ...** (Emphasis added)  
(HOLY BIBLE) 1 Samuel 1:1<sup>3</sup>
6. **NOW IT CAME TO PASS** (So It Happened, Once Upon a Time) **after the death of Saul ...** (Emphasis added)  
(HOLY BIBLE) 2 Samuel 1:1

- 
1. The editors of the RSV (the Revised Standard Version) of the Bible; supported by 32 scholars of the highest eminence; backed by 50 co-operating denominations, concluded their verdict regarding its authorship — NOT God but "**Possibly** Samuel!"
  2. Their verdict again — "Not **definitely** known, **perhaps** Samuel!" Most definitely NOT God!
  3. Amazingly, the inspired editors of the RSV say about the authorship of the Book of Judges — "**Possibly** Samuel," and for the Book of Ruth — "**Perhaps** Samuel", but when they come to the Book of Samuel (?) himself they declare — Author — "**Unknown!**"

7. **NOW** (Once Upon a Time) **King David was old** (Gone Cold) **and stricken in years, and they covered him with clothes, but he gat no heat.**  
(HOLY BIBLE) 1 King 1:1<sup>1</sup>
8. **NOW** (Once Upon a Time) **in the first year of Cyrus King of Persia ...**  
(HOLY BIBLE) Book of Ezra 1:1<sup>2</sup>
9. **NOW IT CAME TO PASS** (So It Happened Once Upon a Time) **in the days of Ahasuerus ... (Emphasis added)**  
(HOLY BIBLE) Book of Esther 1:1
10. **NOW IT CAME TO PASS** (So It Happened, Once Upon a Time) **in the thirtieth year, in the fourth month, in the fifth day of the month ... (Emphasis added)**  
(HOLY BIBLE) Ezekiel 1:1

If these examples do not confuse and bewilder you, then nothing else will! You are inevitably struck with the “**once upon a time**” syndrome. You have cultivated a predilection for man made stories, even if they be true. The style, the pattern, the narration is what I am speaking about. This is how humans think, talk and write. No blame on them for humans will be humans!

All the above references are from the authorised King James Version (KJV) which is the most popular version among the Christians of the world. You must have noted that every verse in the above quotations is 1:1, 1:1, meaning the **first** chapter and the **first** verse of **every book** of the Bible. Which start with **NOW, NOW, now!**. Try it out, see for yourself how many more

---

1. The same (editors' verdict) — Author — “**Unknown!**”  
 2. Again they unashamedly confess — Author — “**Probably** written or edited by Ezra!”  
 Note their guarded semantics — “Possibly, perhaps, probably, etc.” Get my book “**Is the Bible God's Word?**” from the IPCI for a fuller insight.

such beginnings you can find in the “**Book of Books**,”<sup>1</sup> I must, however warn you that your Bible Concordances will not help you. You will have to page through the Bible the same way as I did.

### CONCORDANCES WON'T HELP

I consulted two Bible Concordances. The one was published by the Jehovah's Witnesses — The fastest growing Christian sect in Christendom. The second is “**Young's Analytical Concordance to the Bible**.” Both these concordances boast over 300 000 entries each. The latter has no less than 277 **now's** listed, but there is not a single “NOW” (once upon a time) of the examples given above. You can guess the reason!<sup>2</sup>

I do not want to tax your patience any further. I realise that you will want proof. “**Alright now**, please tell us **your** story about **your** Qur'anic revelation!”:

“It was the night of the 27th of the month of Ramadaan that Muhammed (pbuh) the prophet of Islam, was in cave of Hira, in the outskirts of the City of Makkah. He used to retire to Mount Hira for peace, quiet and contemplation. He used to worry about the problems of his people — their drunkenness, adulteries, idolatries, wars, their rank injustices and cruelties. So much so that Gibbon, the master historian, was constrained to record in his “**Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire**”:

“THE HUMAN BRUTE (THE ARAB), ALMOST WITHOUT SENSE, IS POORLY DISTINGUISHED FROM THE REST OF THE ANIMAL CREATION.”

The recluse of Hira was yearning for a solution. He was wont to retire to his retreat often alone, but sometimes with his dear wife **Umm-ul-Mo'mineen** (Mother of the Faithful) **Khadija-tul-Kubra**.

- 
1. **Book of Books**: A title of the Holy Bible.
  2. Because they represent childish redundancies (“**ONCE UPON A TIME**”), which ill-befits the word of God even according to their own standards.

## THE FIRST CALL

One night — the night of *Lailatul-Qadr* — (the Night of Power and Excellence) when Divine peace rests on creation, and all nature is lifted up towards its Lord — in the middle of that night the book of God was opened to the thirsting soul. Gabriel, the angel of God, appears to him, and commands him in his mother tongue. **اقْرَأْ** *Iqra'*, which mean “read!” or “recite” or “re-hearse!” or “proclaim” aloud! Muhammed (pbuh) was too terrified and was totally unprepared for this shock. This was no graduating or gowning ceremony. In fear and trepidation he cries out **مَا أَنَا بِتَارٍ** *Maa-ana-beqaa-Ri'in* “I am not learned!” The angel repeats the command *Iqra'* for the second time, with the identical response from Muhammed (pbuh). Gabriel embraces him hard and commands him the third time:

**READ! IN THE NAME OF  
THY LORD AND CHERISHER  
WHO CREATED ...**

**اقْرَأْ بِاسْمِ رَبِّكَ  
الَّذِي خَلَقَ ۝**

Muhammed (pbuh) now grasps that what he was required to do, was repeat what was being said, since this Arabic word *Iqra'* means all these things — read, recite or repeat! Following the above first verse of *Súra Al-'Alaq* (Chapter 96 of the Holy Qur'an), four more verses were repeated and recited on Muhammed's (pbuh) first call and subsequently recorded in written form in the Holy Qur'an ... (see page 194).

“Hold it, Mr Deedat!” I can almost hear you shriek. All this that you are telling us about your ‘**Qur'anic revelation**’ is no different from the other numerous examples you have to prove to have had a human hand in it. Were they all fallible and not divine?”

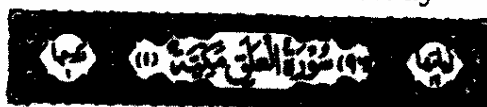
Exactly! I am happy that you see clearly how the subjective mind of man thinks, talks, and records. From the time you asked me (above page 192) “**please tell us your STORY about your**

Qur'anic revelation," and I began to respond — "It was the night of the 27th of the month of Ramadaan ..." up to — "and subsequently recorded in written form in the Holy Qur'an" were my own words, borrowed from the Holy Qur'an, from the Books of Tradition, from history and from the lips of learned men, I heard over the decades. The Qur'anic Scripture has no such taint from the hands of men. This is how it is preserved. I list below the **first** five verses of the first revelation to Muhammed (pbuh), for your critical observation and study —

*Iqraa*, or Read ! or Proclaim !

Or '*Alaq*, or The Clot of Congealed Blood.

*In the name of God, Most Gracious, Most Merciful.*



بِسْمِ اللّٰهِ الرَّحْمٰنِ الرَّحِیْمِ

1. **Proclaim !** (or Read !)<sup>96:1</sup>  
In the name<sup>96:2</sup>  
Of thy Lord and Cherisher,  
Who created —

۱- اِقْرَأْ بِاسْمِ رَبِّكَ  
الَّذِي خَلَقَ ۝

2. Created man, out of  
A (mere) clot  
Of congealed blood :<sup>96:3</sup>

۲- خَلَقَ الْاِنْسَانَ مِنْ عَلَقٍ ۝

3. Proclaim ! And thy Lord  
Is Most Bountiful,—

۳- اِقْرَأْ وَرَبُّكَ الْاَكْرَمُ ۝

4. He Who taught  
(The use of) the Pen,—<sup>96:4</sup>

۴- الَّذِي عَلَّمَ بِالْقَلَمِ ۝

5. Taught man that  
Which he knew not.<sup>96:5</sup>

۵- عَلَّمَ الْاِنْسَانَ مَا لَمْ يَعْلَمُ ۝

(SURA 'ALAQ) Holy Qur'an 96:1-5

## A UNIQUE RECORD

Every Qur'anic text, in Arabic or in a **translated** form in any language will follow this pattern. There are no ifs and buts. You will **NOT** find in the text or translation that Muhammed (pbuh) "WAS FORTY YEARS OLD WHEN HE RECEIVED HIS FIRST CALL." You will **NOT** find that "HE WAS IN THE CAVE OF



MOUNT HIRA." You will **NOT** find that "HE SAW THE ANGEL GABRIEL." Or that "HE WAS TERRIFIED," or how he reacted and responded to the command "*Iqra'*!" That when the angel departed after having completed the first five verses, "MUHUMMED RAN HOME SOME THREE MILES SOUTH TO MAKKAH TO HIS DEAR WIFE KHADIJA AND RELATED WHAT HAD HAPPENED AND REQUESTED HER TO COVER HIM UP, COVER HIM UP!" All this is what I call a "**Once upon a time!**" style. The Holy Qur'an narrates nothing of this, it is absolutely unique in its narration and its preservation. In short it is **Miraculous!**

Further, unlike any human endeavour of literary art, where every thing begins with the beginning: the first word and the first verse of the Qur'anic inspiration is **not** the **first chapter** and the **first verse** of the Holy Qur'an — IT OCCUPIES THE NINETY-SIXTH CHAPTER OF THE HOLY QUR'AN, as the divine Author (GOD ALMIGHTY) had instructed His Chosen Messenger Muhammed (pbuh). No religious Book on earth is like it or follows this pattern, because no alleged Revelation was preserved in its pristine purity when it was **revealed!**

### A CANADIAN PSYCHOLOGIST

I had the privilege of sharing my thoughts on the first call of Muhammed (pbuh), as contained in the first five verses of *Súra Al-'Alaq* (chapter 96) as seen on page 194, with a young man from Canada. I was taking him on a guided tour of the largest Mosque in the southern hemisphere. Whilst chatting, I enquired as to his occupation. He said that he was doing a post-graduate course, majoring in psychology. "Psychology?" I said, and immediately drew his attention to the first five verses of the chapter under discussion. I asked him as to how he would account for the Message and experience of Muhammed (pbuh), speaking about "**Reading, Writing and learning things unknown before,**" things which were not his immediate problem

nor the problem of his people. How could the subjective mind of man, as if out of the blue<sup>1</sup> rehearse these words. I said, "Account for it!" He said that he could not. He confessed that he had already grappled with that problem. I said, "In that case we would have to accept the man at his word." And I quoted the first verses from *Súra Najm*:

**BY THE STAR**<sup>2</sup>

**WHEN IT GOES DOWN, —**

وَالنَّجْمِ إِذَا هَوَىٰ ۝

**YOUR COMPANION**<sup>3</sup> **IS**  
**NEITHER ASTRAY NOR**  
**BEING MISLED.**

مَا ضَلَّ صَاحِبُكُمْ وَمَا غَوَىٰ ۝

**NOR DOES HE SAY (AUGHT)**  
**OF (HIS OWN) DESIRE.**

وَمَا يَنْطِقُ عَنِ الْهَوَىٰ ۝

**IT IS NO LESS THAN INSPIRATION**<sup>4</sup>  
**SENT DOWN TO HIM:**

إِنْ هُوَ إِلَّا وَحْيٌ يُوحَىٰ ۝

**HE WAS TAUGHT BY ONE**  
**MIGHTY IN POWER.**<sup>5</sup>

عَلَّمَهُ شَدِيدُ الْقُوَىٰ ۝

(SÚRA NAJM) Holy Qur'an 53:1-5

And Muhammed (pbuh) is repeatedly made to tell the people:

**SAY: I AM BUT A MAN**  
**LIKE YOURSELVES,**

قُلْ إِنَّمَا أَنَا بَشَرٌ مِّثْلُكُمْ

**(BUT) THE INSPIRATION**  
**HAS COME TO ME,**

يُوحَىٰ إِلَيَّ

- 
1. **Blue:** as from nowhere!
  2. "**By the Star**": an oath, an adjuration.
  3. Meaning Muhammed (pbuh) the Messenger of God.
  4. **Inspiration:** Our concept of the revelation to Muhammed (pbuh) is a verbal inspiration. The words of the Holy Qur'an were so to say "**put into his mouth**" (Deut. 18:18). Get your FREE copy of "**What the BIBLE says about MUHAMMED (pbuh)**" from the IPCI
  5. This is referred to by the Commentators to the archangel Gabriel through whom the revelation came.

**THAT YOUR  
GOD IS ONE GOD ...**

أَسْمَاءُ الْهَيْكُلِ إِلَهٌ وَاحِدٌ

(SURA KAHF) Holy Qur'an 18:110

The young Canadian politely responded, "I will have to give this matter serious thought."

If only we would familiarize ourselves with the facts from the Holy Qur'an, we would be able to open a conversation with the specialists in any science.

### MIRACLE OF JOURNALISM

Being a beehive of activity, the IPCI Centre attracts a lot of people for dialogue and discussions, including the journalist and the newspaperman. As soon as I discover that my interviewer's field of activity is journalism, I tell him that I would like to show him the Holy Qur'an as a "**Miracle of Journalism!**" No one refuses to hear. I begin with the story of the Holy prophet Moses (pbuh), in the style and pattern of "**Once upon a time.**" It can't be helped. Yet we cannot afford the luxury of the details of "**Moses and the Bulrushes,**" or even the details of "his childhood, mother, and his sister," (Holy Qur'an 20:38-40 and 28:7-13). We have to skip the details. I begin with —

### HIS MISHAP IN THE CITY

Moses (pbuh) came upon two men fighting, a man belonging to his own tribe and the other an enemy of his people. He went to help the Jew against the Egyptian and in the altercation slapped the tyrant too hard so that he died.

Moses (pbuh) then fled the country into the Sinai Desert and found himself among the Midianites. Here he helped two damsels in distress and was offered a job by their father Jethro. After having completed his indenture for a period of over eight years, Moses (pbuh) was beginning to get bored with his rustic

existence. For a man who had grown up with royalty in the midst of the hustle and bustle of the city, he was getting restless. He wanted a change and asked for permission to become independent from his in-laws. Jethro was a very reasonable, and a practical man. He grants Moses (pbuh) leave.

### MOSES PIONEERS A TREK

Moses (pbuh) left with his wife and children, together with his share of the sheep and the goats which he used to herd for his father-in-law.

After some time he found himself with his family in the Sinai. He had lost direction from the last habitation with whom he had rested. He had run out of stocks of the braised meat that he was carrying. There was still enough Matzos the dried unleavened bread of the Jews. The problem was the meat. He had to slaughter a sheep or a goat. That would be easy. The difficulty was to start a fire which was a laborious task. It could take as long as half a day of rubbing two dissimilar materials. Obviously there were no matches or lighters in those days. He was procrastinating. Putting things off for today, or tomorrow and his meat problem would be solved, he thought ... **“Where is the promised miracle!”** Mr. Deedat?

So far I have given only the background to the story. The miracle is to condense all the above and more in just four terse verses — four short sentences in the most beautiful prose. But to appreciate the feat, I must draw your attention to what I would like you to notice in what is to me, the acme of journalism.

### NEWSPAPER PLACARDS

I live some thirty kilometres north of the City of Durban, where I have my offices. Prior to the construction of the N2 (Freeway) linking the City of Durban, I usually took the beach (seaside)

road to Durban. This route took me past the amphitheatre on the Durban beachfront. At the intersection of the amphitheatre I regularly observed a news vendor offering the morning paper — “**The Natal Mercury**,” for sale. He had a placard daily with headline to attract buyers. Again and again on reading the placard, I made up my mind not to buy the newspaper that day, but on parking my car in central Durban on passing other news vendors, I nevertheless bought the paper.

After numerous such changes of decision, I began to question myself as to the reasons for my change of mind. I discovered that though the same newspaper was being offered for sale the placards were different. On the beachfront the placards were made appealing to European clientele whereas the placards in the area I passed were directed to the Asian community. By extension the placard for the African and the Coloured areas would be slanted to induce them to buy the same paper.

So the master journalist would be the one who could invent a single placard that would appeal to the four major race groups<sup>1</sup> each day.

**That would be the masterpiece of journalism!** Journalists no doubt all agree with this reasoning. Let us then analyse the Holy Qur'an on this basis.

## UNIVERSAL APPEAL

Muhummed (pbuh), the prophet of Islam is in Madeenah, and is surrounded by Jews, Christians, Muslims, **Mushriks**<sup>2</sup> and **Munaafiqs**<sup>3</sup> in the City. The Holy Prophet is to broadcast his news (Divine Revelation) to all these various people. What must he write on his placard to attract the attention of each of these varied groups? He is made to proclaim:

- 
1. Under the “**Apartheid**” system, the four groups live in separate areas.
  2. “**Mushriks**”: the pagans, the idolators of Makkah.
  3. “**Munaafiqs**”: the hypocrites, running with the hare and hunting with the hounds.

**HAS THE STORY OF  
MOSES REACHED YOU? <sup>1</sup>**

وَهَلْ أَتَاكَ حَدِيثُ مُوسَىٰ

(SÚRA TÁ-HÁ) Holy Qur'an 20:9

Can you imagine the excitement? The Christians and the Jews would be waiting to hear further, wanting Muhammed (pbuh) to make a fool of himself, for they reason within themselves what could this Arab know about Moses (pbuh) since he is an *ummi* (unlettered). The Muslims are thirsty for knowledge, they would be yearning — please tell us everything you can about Moses (pbuh).

The *Mushriks* (The polytheists) and the *Munaafiqs* (the hypocrites) were lolling their tongues to enjoy the three-sided debate on Moses (pbuh): between the Muslims, the Christians and the Jews. Everybody is “**all-ears**” (acutely attentive)! Muhammed (pbuh)<sup>2</sup> continues

**BEHOLD,  
HE SAW A FIRE!**

إِذْ رَأَىٰ نَارًا

Dramatisation! You can almost visualize the scene. Muhammed (pbuh) is talking telegraphically. It took about two thousand years after the birth of Jesus Christ (pbuh) for the largest Christian and Jewish nations on earth (the mighty United States)<sup>3</sup> to reach the height of perfection in the advertising field to formulate the slogan, in the words of the Western Union Telegraph Company, “**Don't Write — Telegraph!**” Which school of journalism did Muhammed (pbuh) attend to master this super American sizzlemanship?<sup>4</sup> He is made to carry on:

- 
1. I urge my Muslim brethren to memorise the Qur'anic text with its meaning.
  2. Actually, these are not the words of Muhammed (pbuh) but the veritable Words of God as dictated to the Prophet. We say, “**Muhammed continues,**” because this is what the unbeliever is thinking. Then let him give **full credit** to God's human mouthpiece.
  3. The mightiest Christian nation on earth is the USA because it boasts a Christian population of over 200 million. The USA is also the largest Jewish nation because there are more Jews in America than in Israel or in any other country.
  4. **Sizzlemanship:** The art of American high-pressure salesmanship.

**SO HE SAID TO HIS  
FAMILY,**

فَقَالَ لِأَهْلِهِ امْكُثُوا

**"TARRY YE;  
I PERCEIVE A FIRE;**

إِنِّي أَنَسْتُ نَارًا

**PERHAPS I CAN BRING YOU  
SOME BURNING BRAND  
THEREFROM,**

لَعَلِّي آتِيكُمْ مِنْهَا بِقَبَسٍ

**OR FIND SOME GUIDANCE  
AT THE FIRE."**

أَوْ آجِدُ عَلَى النَّارِ هُدًى ﴿١٠﴾

(SÚRA TÁ-HÁ) Holy Qur'an 20:10

## Dictating Shorthand

Please compare the above with any other English translation of the Holy Qur'an by friend or foe, and you will find the same brevity and economy of words. Muhammed (pbuh) was not doing any exercise in precis writing. He was only articulating God's Words as they were whispered into his heart and mind through the medium of the Archangel Gabriel. We must remember that there was no Arabic Bible, in the sixth century of the Christian era, when the Holy Prophet dictated the Qur'an.

Now do yourself a favour. Please contrast this Qur'anic Revelation with the Biblical story as contained in the second Book of the Holy Bible, the **Book of Exodus**, chapters 1, 2 and 3 which discusses this very aspect of the life of the Holy Prophet Moses (pbuh) we are dealing with here. I quote the beginning of the story from the Bible —

***NOW<sup>1</sup> these are the names of the children of  
Israel, which came into Egypt; every man  
and his household came with Jacob.***

1. "NOW!" Here we start again — the "Once upon a time" story! Give another glance to all the other examples on the preceding pages 189 to 191.

**Reuben, Simeon, Levi, and Judah, Is-sa-char,  
Ze-bu-lun, and Benjamin, Dan, and Naph-ta-  
li, Gad, and Asher,**

**And all the souls that came out of the loins  
of Jacob were seventy souls: for Joseph was  
in Egypt already,**

(HOLY BIBLE) Exodus 1:1-5

### MOSES SET-UP

Simply warming up! Is this how God speaks? Please compare these five verses from the Bible with the four verses from the Holy Qur'an reproduced below.

To continue with the Qur'anic narrative, Moses (pbuh) was hungry for two things whilst wondering in the Sinai with his flock and family. He wanted 'fire' to cook his meat, and 'direction' to some hospitable community in the desert. Allah was unfolding his plan. Moses (pbuh) was being 'SET-UP' for his mission from the illusion of burning coal to the reality of the spiritual fire burning in the souls of mankind for thousands of years and a true direction for the guidance of humanity.

The 'fire' that Moses (pbuh) saw, was no ordinary fire. To him it meant an easy kindling of his own fire, the fire also indicated the presence of other human beings from whom he could get information: and guidance.

**BUT WHEN HE CAME  
TO THE FIRE, A VOICE  
WAS HEARD: "O MOSES!**

**"VERILY I AM THY LORD!**

**THEREFORE (IN MY PRESENCE)  
PUT OFF THY SHOES:**

فَلَمَّا أَتَاهَا نُودِيَ يَبُوسَةَ ۖ

إِنِّي أَنَا رَبُّكَ

فَاخْلَعْ نَعْلَيْكَ



**THOU ART IN THE SACRED  
VALLEY OF TUWA."**

إِنَّكَ بِالْوَادِ الْمُقَدَّسِ طُوًى ۝

(SÚRA TÁ-HÁ) Holy Qur'an 20:11-12

The spiritual history of Moses (pbuh) begins here and this was his spiritual birth. In Biblical terminology — **'This day have I begotten thee!'** This is how God spoke to David (pbuh) about his appointment, in the Book of Psalms 2:7

The whole Qur'anic passage above is full of the highest mystic meaning, which is reflected in the short rhymed verses in the original. Both the rhythm and the meaning in the text suggest the highest mystery. For easier comparison I reproduce the four verses together —

***Has the story of Moses  
reached you?***

***Behold, he saw a fire:  
so he said to his family,  
"tarry ye; I perceive a fire,  
perhaps I can bring you some  
burning brand therefrom,  
or find some guidance at the fire."***

***But when he came to the fire,  
a voice was heard: "O Moses!***

***Verily I am thy Lord!  
therefore (in my presence)  
put off thy shoes: for thou art  
in the sacred valley of Tuwa. \****

(SÚRA TÁ-HÁ) Holy Qur'an 20:9-12

\* **Tuwa** was the valley just below Mount Sinai, where subsequently Moses (pbuh) was to receive the Law. In the parallel mystic meaning, we are selected by trials in this humble life, whose valley is just as sacred and receive God's glory just as

much as the heights of the Mount (*Tur*) Sinai, if we but have the insight to perceive it. And the '**shoes**' were to be put off as a mark of respect. In the parallel mystic meaning again, Moses (pbuh) was now to put away his mere worldly interests, and anything of mere worldly utility, he having been chosen by the Most High God.

### WHAT IS YOUR VERDICT?

How is one, inured to folklore and fairy tales to evaluate this pure elixir from Heaven? Even a sympathetic critic like Thomas Carlyle, one of the greatest thinkers of the past century could not fathom its incisive brevity and perspicuousness. He called the Qur'anic reading —

“A WEARISOME CONFUSED JUMBLE CRUDE,  
INCONDITE; — INSUPPORTABLE STUPIDITY ...”

**Incondite**, meaning a badly constructed literary or artistic composition: and '**unsupportable stupidity?**' After contrasting the Qur'anic and the Biblical narrations, how would your verdict go? I have yet to come across a journalist who failed to recognise the brilliance of Muhammed (?) (peace be upon him), in dictating direct facts, without any attempt on his part at analysing or interpreting it: exactly as a master journalist would do for today's newspaper or magazine. **It is nothing short of the miraculous! Do you agree?**

## CHAPTER FOUR

# *Miraculous Book of Telegrams*

The Holy Qur'an can be appropriately described as '**A Book of Telegrams.**' For this is how the Book was revealed in the form of telegraphically addressed Messages in answer to the questions on:

### 1. ALCOHOL AND GAMES OF CHANCE

**THEY ASK THEE CONCERNING  
WINE AND GAMBLING.**

يَسْأَلُونَكَ عَنِ الْخَمْرِ وَالْمَيْسِرِ ط

**SAY: <sup>1</sup> "IN THEM IS  
GREAT SIN,**

قُلْ فِيهِمَا إِثْمٌ كَبِيرٌ

**AND SOME PROFIT,  
FOR MEN;**

وَمَنَافِعُ لِلنَّاسِ ط

**BUT THE SIN IS GREATER  
THAN THE PROFIT."**

وَإِثْمُهُمَا أَكْبَرُ مِنْ نَفْعِهِمَا ط

**AND THEY ASK THEE  
HOW MUCH THEY ARE  
TO SPEND (IN CHARITY);**

وَيَسْأَلُونَكَ مَاذَا يُنْفِقُونَ هـ

**SAY: <sup>2</sup> "WHAT IS  
BEYOND YOUR NEEDS,"**

قُلِ الْعَفْوَ

**THUS DOTH ALLAH MAKE  
CLEAR TO YOU HIS SIGNS:**

كَذَلِكَ يُبَيِّنُ اللَّهُ لَكُمْ الْآيَاتِ

**IN ORDER THAT YE MAY  
REFLECT —**

لَعَلَّكُمْ تَتَفَكَّرُونَ ٢٥

(SÚRA BAQARA) Holy Qur'an 2:219<sup>3</sup>

1. "SAY!" That is Muhammed (pbuh) is commanded to **answer**: "Tell them!" O Muhammed! "Proclaim, express it in words, utter aloud, pronounce, speak out!"
2. The same command with the same import.
3. I cannot urge too strongly upon my Muslim brethren to memorize the verses with their meaning and share it with all who will give you a hearing.

## QUR'AN AND HADITH

The above is just one example of how God speaks! Other examples are to follow. Can any sincere seeker of truth be convinced in any easier way? The answer is **'No!'** Yet He (God) Reasons with the recalcitrant in the following words: —

**Say: "Are the blind equal  
With those who see?"**

(SÚRA RA'D) Holy Qur'an 13:16

Of course not!

Now compare the above Words of God Almighty on the subject of 'WINE' (intoxicants) with the words of His Chosen Messenger Muhammed Mustafa (pbuh), NOT FORGETTING that the above verse 2:219 and what follows from the **Hadith** below were heard from the lips of the Prophet (pbuh) and recorded by his Companions:

Ibn Anas (RA) reported that the Messenger of Allah cursed every one who was associated in any way with the production and consumption of any kind of intoxicating beverages. He said:

1. **Cursed is he who grows grapes for brewing.**<sup>1</sup>
2. **Cursed is he who sells its.**
3. **Cursed is he who crushes it.**
4. **Cursed is he who bottles its, and**
5. **Cursed is he who drinks it, or words to this effect.**

The Holy Prophet (pbuh) is also reported to have said:

**"Whatever intoxicates if taken in greater  
quantity is also forbidden in smaller quantity."**

---

1. It is the brewing or fermenting that invites the curse. Otherwise, the planting of fruit trees for the purpose of eating or selling their fruits is an act of virtue for which Allah will reward us.

There is no excuse in the House of Islam for a nip or a tot, unlike Paul's advice to Timothy —

***“Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thine often infirmities.***

(HOLY BIBLE) 1 Timothy 5:23

Or Solomon's sanguine yet humorous recommendation for enslaving and subjugating a conquered people:

***“Give strong drink<sup>1</sup> unto him that is ready to perish, and wine unto those that be of heavy hearts.”***

***“Let them drink, and forget his poverty, and remember his misery no more.”***

(HOLY BIBLE) Proverbs 31:6-7

Lest we forget, please look again at the Qur'anic diction and the words of the Prophet (pbuh) above, and you cannot help agreeing that the two are worlds apart in style, structure, and sublimity though articulated by the same lips.

Another example of replying telegraphically to a question regarding the —

## 2. NEW MOONS

**They ask thee concerning the new moons.**

**Say: they are but signs to mark fixed periods of time in (the affairs) of men, and for pilgrimage.**

(SÚRA BAQARA) Holy Qur'an 2:189

---

1. “Hard liquor is for sick men at the brink of death and wine for those in deep depression.” Is the alternative rendering of the verse in the “Living Bible,” not a sure death to the dying?

“There were many superstitions connected with the New Moon, as there are to the present day. We are told to disregard such superstitions. As a measure of time, where the lunar calendar is used, the New Moon is one great sign, for which people watch with eagerness. Muslim festivals, including the Pilgrimage are fixed by the appearance of the New Moon.”

A. Yusuf Ali<sup>1</sup>

A telegram, in an identical vein to the question of —

### 3. C-H-A-R-I-T-Y

**They ask thee (O Muhummed!) what  
they should spend (in charity).**

**Say: whatever ye spend that is good,  
Is for parents and kindred and orphans  
and those in want and for wayfarers.**

**And whatever ye do that is good, —  
Allah knoweth it well**

(SÚRA BAQARA) Holy Qur'an 2:215

“Three question arise in charity:

- (a) What shall we give?
- (b) To whom shall we give?
- (c) How shall we give?

The answer is here, giving anything that is good, useful, helpful, valuable. It may be property or money; it may be a helpful hand; it may be advice, it may be a kind word: **“WHATEVER YE DO THAT IS GOOD” is charity.** On the other hand, if you throw away what is useless, there is no charity in it. Or if you give something with harmful intent, e.g. a sword to a madman, or a

---

1. The comment on the verse is by Abdullah Yusuf Ali. Obtain his monumental translation and commentary from the IPCI at a highly subsidised price. A veritable encyclopaedia of over 1800 pages with over 6000 footnotes.

drug or sweets or even money to some one whom you want to entrap or corrupt, IT IS NO CHARITY BUT A GIFT OF DAMNATION."

### **TO WHOM SHOULD YOU GIVE?**

It may be tempting to earn the world's praise by a gift that will be talked about, but are you meeting the needs of those who have the first claim on you? If you are not, YOU ARE A PERSON WHO DEFRAUDS CREDITORS: it is not charity!

"Every gift is judged by its unselfish character: the degree of need or claim is a factor which you must consider; if you disregard it, there is something selfish behind it.

### **HOW SHOULD IT BE GIVEN?**

As in the sight of Allah; it shuts out all pretence, show, and insincerity."

A. Yusuf Ali

Muhummed (pbuh) received yet another telegram in answer to the query in the nature of :—

#### **4. THE SOUL**

**They ask thee (O Muhummed!)  
concerning (the nature of) the soul.**

**Say: "The soul is by the command  
of my Lord:  
and of the knowledge of it very  
little is communicated to you, (O Men!)"**

*(SÚRA BANI ISRÁ-ÍL) Holy Qur'an 17:85*

I cannot help over-emphasising the fact that THE RECITATION OF THE HOLY QUR'AN IS UNLIKE ANY OTHER BOOK ON EARTH. IT SPEAKS STRAIGHT AND TO THE POINT. THERE ARE NO IFS AND BUTS, NO PREVARICATIONS, NO BEATING

ABOUT THE BUSH. In the whole vast volume you will not get the type of script out of which a “box-office hit,” or a record breaking film like the “**Ten Commandments**,” “**Samson and Delilah**,” or a “**David and Bath-sheba**” can be produced for the silver screen — the cinema. In this regard the Holy Bible is the script writer’s delight. It is all there for easy transmuting into pots of gold!

While we are at it, let me remind my readers that search as you may you will not find within the covers of the Holy Qur’an even the name of Muhammed’s (pbuh) father or mother. You will not discover the names of his wives or the names of his daughters, nor the names of his beloved companions. Amazingly! though you will find a whole chapter dedicated to Mary, the mother of Jesus Christ (pbuh) ... **Súra Maryam**, or Mary, chapter 19 of the Holy Qur’an. **Jesus (pbuh) is mentioned in this Book of God no less than twenty-five times, whereas the name of the Prophet (pbuh) only five times.** Reason? Are Jesus and his mother more important than Muhammed and his mother (peace be upon them all)? “No! not at all” Then why this inordinate coverage? Simply because the integrity of Jesus and his mother (peace be upon them) was at stake. There were various false charges, insinuations and innuendos against mother and son which had to be cleared. Hence the story of the annunciation, the immaculate conception and the birth of Jesus (pbuh) had to be recorded. Nobody ever questioned the genealogy of the Prophet of Islam at any time, therefore not a word was wasted in the whole book about the Prophet’s birth or parentage. **The Qur’an is not a biography of Muhammed (pbuh)!** This is difficult for the unbeliever to understand.

Let us give one more example of the telegraphic communication from the Holy Qur’an on the subject of the Last Day, the End of Time, that is —



## 5. THE FINAL HOUR

**They ask thee (O Muhammed!) about  
the (final) hour — when will  
be its appointed time?**

**Say: “the knowledge thereof is  
with my Lord (alone): none but He  
can reveal as to when it will occur.**

**Heavy were its burden through the  
heavens and the earth.  
Only, all of a sudden will it come  
to you.”**

*(SÚRA A'RÁF) Holy Qur'an 7:187*

It will be worth while to compare this one verse above with the whole of chapter thirteen of the Gospel of St. Mark, which uses all of the thirty-seven verses there to reach the conclusion of the single **aayah** (verse) above. A simple test to distinguish man-made books from the Word of God. You will find the Qur'an free from frills and verbosity!

Many other examples can be given from the Book of God to prove that its narration is not in the style of men; that it is an absolutely unique Book. In fact a volume can be written on this theme itself. However we will end this chapter with one last example from the Holy Qur'an. It is a classical short chapter of only four verses. All the four verses put together are less in wording than the five examples of a single verse each given above. I give you on the next page a replica of that short **súra** (chapter).

*Ikhlas*, or Purity (of Faith).

*In the name of God, Most Gracious,  
Most Merciful.*

1. Say : He is God, <sup>6296</sup>  
The One and Only ; <sup>6297</sup>
2. God, the Eternal, Absolute ; <sup>6298</sup>
3. He begetteth not,  
Nor is He begotten ; <sup>6299</sup>
4. And there is none  
Like unto Him. <sup>6300</sup>



بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

١- قُلْ هُوَ اللَّهُ أَحَدٌ ۝

٢- اللَّهُ الصَّمَدُ ۝

٣- لَمْ يَلِدْ ۙ وَلَمْ يُولَدْ ۝

٤- وَلَمْ يَكُنْ لَهُ كُفُوًا أَحَدٌ ۝

(SŪRA IKHLĀS) Holy Qur'an 112:1-4

In the English translation on previous page, you will note five numbers to the four verses, Nos. 6296 to 6300. In the complete translation of A. Yusuf Ali,<sup>1</sup> you will find his learned commentary. You may or may not agree with his elucidations. They are not infallible. The word of God **IS THE ARABIC TEXT** you see above, and the **English** is accepted as the best human effort at translation.

I will now give you my own observation from the angle of Revelation that we are discussing, eg., Divine inspiration — Word of God, under the title:

## 6. ACID TEST OF THEOLOGY

On the authority of the Messenger of Allah, it is universally accepted that a Muslim reciting the above four verses in its original form, three times, will derive the spiritual blessings of reading the whole Qur'an. What makes this short **SŪra** (chapter) so invaluable? It is not the sound, nor the music of that

1. You will do yourself and your Muslim and non-Muslim friends a great favour by making this translation available to them.

inimitable symphony which move men to ecstasy and tears. It is the Message, that acid test of religion which gives it that high and sublime status.

There is not a theology, or a concept of God which is out of the purview of these four short verses. They are the touchstones about the knowledge of God. Through these you can accept or reject any idea of God, or know right from wrong. This is exactly like the **“touchstone”** the jewellers use for testing gold. Ask a jeweller friend how a touchstone works. How did our Qur’anic touchstone come about?

### FROM THE “HEAD COMPUTER”

Arrangements were under way for me to visit Zambia on a lecture tour in mid-1975. I received a phone call from Lusaka that an air ticket was sent to Durban which I could pick up from the headquarters of the South African Airways in the city centre. I walked up to the airways office and approached the information counter and told the man in charge that I had come to pick up my air ticket which had been sent from Lusaka. He told me to see one of the ladies, out of a dozen that were seated in a semi-circle, each with a computer terminal with a visual screen in front. As most of them were attending to other customers, I asked “Which one?” The officer was obviously irritated and flayed his hands and said roughly, “Any one!” pointing in the direction of the seated ladies.

At that moment, I could not understand the reason for this otherwise polite gentleman getting ruffled with my humble and innocent question. I was looking forward to receiving a long booklet of ticket vouchers. I had handled and used them a few times before in my life so there was no mistaking in what I was anticipating. How can any one of those women have my ticket? I wondered. But the irritated tone of the man’s voice left me no choice but to seek further information as indicated.

Sheepishly, I approached the first lady that I saw free to serve and told her of my mission. I was informed about a ticket waiting to be picked up. She asked me my name which I spelled out for her. As I spelt it, she began typing it on the keyboard before her. She was watching the screen as she typed. I could not see the wording from where I stood. She nodded her head and said, "Yes", suggesting that she had got it. I said that I wanted to leave Durban for Johannesburg on the Tuesday evening. She offered me a 6 p.m. flight which I accepted, and she punched a few more words on the keyboard. I told her, further, that I wanted to leave Johannesburg to arrive in Lusaka at about 3 p.m. the next day. That was the instruction from my hosts there as they wanted the news media and the TV news to cover my arrival. She typed some more words and enquired whether I wanted to go to Lusaka via Gaborone or Maputo. I said, it didn't matter as long as I arrived at my destination on Wednesday at 3 p.m. She hit the keyboard again and scanning the screen said, "I am sorry but you are booked on Zambian Airlines and we cannot transfer your ticket to another airline because we cannot contact Zambian Airlines today as they are closed on account of a national holiday in that country." So I was asked to return the next day. Very interesting! I thought, but I was sorely disappointed as the ticket was almost within my reach but not within my grasp. I still imagined that she had the tickets in her desk drawer.

### **IGNORANCE REMOVED**

In my puzzlement, I asked her, "Where did you get all that information from?" She said, "It was from the Head Computer in Johannesburg." She was kind enough to explain further that every other computer in the country with similar end terminals had access to that computer at the press of a button. I enquired that whilst she was trying to book me on that 6 p.m. flight to

Johannesburg, and if there was only one seat left, and if there were other terminals trying for that seat, what would happen? She said the first one within the second would get the seat and the rest would draw a blank. I thanked her profusely and left the airways building.

On my way back to my office, my mind began to buzz with ideas. This is how it happened, I thought. I mean the **wahy** (the Revelation of God to Muhammed (pbuh) His Chosen Messenger, came from the "Head Computer" — THE PRESERVED TABLET!

**NAY, THIS IS  
A GLORIOUS QUR'AN,**

بَلْ هُوَ قُرْآنٌ مَّجِيدٌ ﴿٢١﴾

**(INSCRIBED) IN  
A TABLET PRESERVED!**

فِي لَوْحٍ مَّحْفُوظٍ ﴿٢٢﴾

(SÚRA BURÚJ) Holy Qur'an 85:21-22

This "**Tablet**" is not like the one Moses (pbuh) used for inscribing the Ten Commandments, a tablet of stone. It is unlike the ones teachers use in schools, called "blackboards" or "green boards". Neither it is the Tablet of a computer screen or the silicone chip. It is God's Own tablet guarded and protected; it is not to be understood in any material sense for it is not made of stone or metal, IT IS SPIRITUAL! How does it operate? We can only guess —

## CHRISTIANS FROM NAJRAN

Whilst Islam was getting a firm foothold in Madeenah, the reputation of the Messenger of God spread throughout the length and breadth of Arabia. A community of Arab Christians living in Najran, around Yemen, heard that an Arab in Arabia was now claiming Divine inspiration and had proclaimed himself to be the mouthpiece of God — a Prophet. A deputation set out for Madeenah to cross-examine the Prophet, to match their wits against his to test his knowledge about God and religion in general.

On their arrival they were housed in the *Musjid-e-Nabawi* (the mosque of the Prophet): a simple structure of mud walls with a thatched roof of palm leaves. The Christians, ate and slept in the Mosque and had discussions with the Messenger of Allah for three days and three nights in the mosque. The details of the dialogue can be found in the Books of Traditions.

During the course of the dialogue, the spokesman for the Christians, amongst many other things, posed the question, **“Now tell us O Muhammed, what is your concept of God?”** The Prophet did not prevaricate, he did not beat around the bush, fumbling for words and ideas, to gather his thoughts, as anyone of us would have done if we did not have a ready answer. Muhammed (pbuh), so to speak, presses his spiritual buttons (there were no buttons to press) but as I said; **“So to speak.”** as if, like the lady above, in the airways office contacting the “Head Computer” He is seeking an answer from Allah through the “PRESERVED TABLET”, the head computer of all revelational knowledge. He is asking, again I said, so to speak “O my Lord! What shall I say?” Came the answer —

**Say: (O Muhammed) He is Allah  
the one and only;**

**Allah, the eternal absolute;**

**He begetteth not,  
nor is He begotten,**

**And there is none  
like unto him.**

*(Súra Ikhlás) Holy Qur'an 112:1-4*

After uttering the above formula on the Purity of Faith, the conversation returned to the usual discourse of words. No Arab worth his name could have missed the difference in tone and

intensity between the two discourses. The words above were not the Prophet's but were God's words. They were literally being put into his mouth. While he recited them, he was only being used as a mouthpiece of God, like the "speaker" in the radio. This data material was programmed into his own, God-given, computer, into his heart and mind a decade earlier in Makkah, under identical circumstances. At that time he was being prodded by the Jews who were trying to trip him on the subject of the **"identity and genealogy of God."** Not unlike the Pharisees of old who were dogging the footsteps of Jesus, their awaited Messiah (pbuh).

The foregoing is a perfect example of how God Almighty sent His revelation to his chosen Messenger — by verbal inspiration — and how His Messenger had it protected and preserved, and how His human mouthpiece used and re-used that Message, and how we, the followers of the Prophet (pbuh), are to have that Message imbibed to use it at every opportunity.

In the religious literature of the world there is nothing to compare with even this short chapter of ***Súra Ikhlâas*** quoted above! If this chapter 112 is the acid test of theology — God's concentrated word, then the rest of the Qur'anic text is its explanation, with which we are to discover the Qualities of God, and avoid the pitfalls into which men and nations have fallen repeatedly in trying to understand God.

## CHAPTER FIVE

### *God — Unique In His Attributes*

God Almighty is absolutely unique in His Person and in His attributes. In no way is he to be compared, or comparable, with any other person or thing that we know or can imagine. In the last verse of the *Sura* quoted in the preceding chapter, we are reminded that not only “**Is nothing like Him, but nothing is in the likeness of Him that can be imagined.**” Then how can we know Him? We will realise him through His attributes.

The last and Final Revelation of God — the Holy Qur'an gives us ninety-nine attributes of God with the crowning name —ALLAH! These ninety-nine attributes or names called the *Asma-ul-husna* (the Most Beautiful names) are interspersed throughout the whole Qur'anic text, like a beautiful necklace of pearls with a magnificent pendant — Allah.

Here is a sample segment of that necklace:

**HE IS ALLAH,  
BESIDES WHOM THERE IS  
NO OTHER GOD;**

هُوَ اللهُ الَّذِي لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا هُوَ

**THE SOVEREIGN, THE HOLY ONE,  
THE SOURCE OF PEACE  
(AND PERFECTION),**

الْمَلِكُ الْقُدُّوسُ السَّلَامُ

**THE GUARDIAN OF FAITH,  
THE PRESERVER OF SAFETY,**

الْمُؤْمِنُ الْمُحْيِي

**THE EXALTED IN MIGHT,  
THE IRRESISTIBLE, THE SUPREME:**

الْعَزِيزُ الْجَبَّارُ الْمُتَكَبِّرُ ط

**GLORY TO ALLAH: (HIGH IS HE)  
ABOVE THE PARTNERS THEY  
ASCRIBE TO HIM,**

سُبْحَانَ اللهِ عَمَّا يُشْرِكُونَ ۝



**HE IS ALLAH, THE CREATOR,  
THE EVOLVER, THE BESTOWER  
OF FORMS (OR COLOURS).** هُوَ اللَّهُ الْخَالِقُ الْبَارِئُ الْمُصَوِّرُ

**TO HIM BELONG THE  
MOST BEAUTIFUL NAMES:**

لَهُ الْأَسْمَاءُ الْحُسْنَىٰ

**ALL THAT IS IN THE  
HEAVENS AND THE  
EARTH, DO TH DECLARE  
HIS PRAISE AND GLORY:**

يُسَبِّحُ لَهُ مَا فِي السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ

**AND HE IS THE EXALTED  
IN MIGHT, THE WISE.**

وَهُوَ الْعَزِيزُ الْحَكِيمُ

(SÚRA HASHR) Holy Qur'an 59:23-24

### “THE MOST BEAUTIFUL NAMES”

In the two verses quoted above, we count thirteen of the ninety-nine attributes interspersed throughout the Holy Qur'an. Even the most jaundiced and inimical opponent of Islam will be forced to admit that even in its translated form the attributes and the phraseology are beautiful and unique. In its original Arabic the wordings and their construction are absolutely inimitable and sublime.

How could an *ummi*, an unlettered person, among an *ummi* — unlearned nation contrive such a rhapsody of God fourteen hundred years ago? We must remember that there were no encyclopaedias or treatises that Muhammed (pbuh) could consult even if they were lying around in the deserts of Arabia. From where, then, did Muhammed (pbuh) get this treasure trove of theology? He said, “**It is all given to me by God through inspiration!**” How else can we account for it?

It would be a good experiment to ask the most learned of our learned friends to conjure up some attributes of God for us. I assure you that with all their acquired knowledge the professors

of theology and the doctors of divinity will not be able to recount even a dozen. The worldly-wise will say that **“You see, Muhammed was a genius, and after all a genius can excel ten times better than us!”** To which we respond: “It is true that a genius can do ten times better than us. The Prophet (pbuh) gave us ninety-nine attributes, but what makes his list **MIRACULOUS** and **DIVINE** is the one he left out of his list” The word **“Father”**, that is Miracle!

### THE FATHER IN HEAVEN

In our human list, no contributor will fail to utter the word FATHER in the first half-a-dozen attributes. The miracle of Muhammed's (pbuh) list<sup>1</sup> is not the “ninety-nine ” but this particular one which he (?) kept out of his (?) Qur'an. The word **“father”** as an attribute of God was dangled before him for the twenty-three years of his prophetic life. He eschewed it. He kept it out of his vocabulary (consciously or unconsciously) for over two decades and hence out of the theology of Islam.

You have a right to ask me, “What about the Christians' Lord's Prayer?” Yes, what about it? Read it Mr Deedat! So I read:

***“O our father which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name; thy kingdom come, thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven.”***

“What is wrong with that?” you ask. “Nothing!” Then why are the Muslims so allergic to it? I am not so jaundiced as our opponents. We have to acknowledge that the Christian prayer is a beautiful prayer but there are certain deficiencies in it. You see my child will never ever learn God's name through this prayer. What is His Name?<sup>2</sup> In all the twenty-seven books of the New

---

1. This is **not** Muhammed's list. The Qur'an is **not** his handiwork. I am using these terms in a manner of speaking to the unbeliever.

2. A book under the same title: **“What is His Name?”** is available from the IPCI FREE of charge.

Testament God's name does not occur even once! "**Father**" is given here as a substitute. This is not His Name! As an attribute, meaning — Lord, God, Creator, Provider, I can take no exception to it. "**The loving Father in Heaven. O our Heavenly Father!**" etc. We Muslims take exception to the new meaning, the acquired connotation of the word **Father**.

### ONLY BEGOTTEN SON ETC.

In Christian theology, this simple, innocent word "Father" has acquired a novel meaning. He is, according to Christianity, the One Who **BEGOT** the son Jesus. They say in their catechism<sup>1</sup> "Jesus is the very God of very God, **begotten** of the Father, **begotten** NOT made." If words have any meaning, what does this mean? Of course it means what it says! God has many sons according to the Holy Bible. Adam, Israel, Ephraim, David, Solomon, etc ... But all these are metaphorical sons. God Almighty as the Creator and Cherisher is metaphorically the father of His every creature; every animal or human being; but Jesus (pbuh), the Christians say, is not like these. He was **BEGOTTEN**, not **MADE**! This according to Islam is the most abominable utterance, attributing to God an animal nature — the lower animal function of sex!

### MEANINGS CHANGE

In the beginning the word "Father" for God did not carry any blasphemous associations, but words do change in their meanings at times. I will give you just two as examples: "**Comrade**" and "**gay**."

"**Comrade**": originally a beautiful and innocent word, meaning — a friend, an associate or a companion derived from the Old French **comrade**, roommate or soldier sharing the same room. But today the same word stinks in the nostrils of the Americans as a "commie", a communist, a member

---

1. Catechism: A short book giving, in question-and-answer form, a brief summary of the basic principles of a religion, especially Christianity.

of the Marxist-Leninist party, any radical viewed as a subversive or revolutionary who should be eliminated as a pest or parasite. If any foolish friend addresses you today as COMRADE in the United States, he could jeopardise your career, as well as your life!

“**Gay:**” What is wrong with this word? Nothing at all! I learnt this word in my early schooling as showing or characterised by **cheerfulness** and **light-hearted excitement**; a merry person. I was taught to sing —

“GENTLE LORDS AND LADIES GAY  
ON THE MOUNTAIN DAWNS THE DAY.”

I have forgotten the balance of the poem. Here, I understood the meaning of the word “gay” to mean **happy** and **joyous**. I did not have the slightest inkling that one day such an innocuous word which children learn at school would in time acquire a filthy, dirty meaning of being homosexual: sodomites and catamites in its very primary sense. So “LADIES GAY” would mean today — LADIES LESBIAN! In like manner the respectable word “Father” has become contaminated by the belief of — “**the only BEGOTTEN of the Father!**” etc.

### RABB OR ABB?

God Almighty through Muhammed (pbuh) has protected Islam and the Muslims by keeping the word “Father” (**ABB**) for God, out of its religious vocabulary. It is a miraculous fact that though the Holy Qur'an lists ninety-nine attributes to God, including the word **RABB** which means — Lord, Cherisher, Sustainer, Evolver, etc, (this attribute **Rabb** occurs dozens of times in the Book of God) — But the easier word **Abb**, meaning “Father” in Arabic and in Hebrew, is not used even once, thus preserving the Muslims from the blasphemy of the only BEGOTTEN son! To whom must we give credit for this feat: Allah or Muhammed (pbuh)? The Holy Prophet (pbuh) disclaims any credit, always saying that all this is given to him by inspiration, the words ye hear are not his, they are **God's Word** as dictated to him!

## CHAPTER SIX

### *Solving Controversy*

The Holy Qur'an is one huge Miracle. It is a Book of Miracles which may be expounded from innumerable points of views. I have tried from some simple aspects to share with you that which I, as a layman was enthralled with. There is no end to this research. I leave this task to my more learned brethren, and the erudite scholars of Islam. May I live to see their efforts. Let me end with this, my final example, for this short publication.

#### CALL TO SWAZILAND

A few years ago, a controversy arose in Swaziland. King Sobuza lost his Queen elect. The Christian Churches in the country began quibbling on the subject of the period of waiting before a man can remarry. It was not such a serious problem for discussion because the King still had eight more wives. So the topic changed to **“How long must a woman wait if her husband dies.”** As the debate was raging furiously in the tiny Kingdom, the benevolent King ordered a synod of all the Churches in the country to thrash out the problem.

Mr. Moosa Borman, a Swazi brother who had embraced Islam, sought permission from the King to have his “Church” (Islam) also represented in the debate. With the King's blessings, I too was honoured to attend the discussion.

One Sunday morning, in the King's kraal, representatives of the various denominations of Christianity gathered to arrive at some consensus on the period of widowhood.

Speaker after speaker delivered his discourse. God Almighty had gifted the African, each and everyone is a potential Billy Graham or Jimmy Swaggart!

At the end of each sermon the audience applauded enthusiastically. The next speaker came and he brushed off his predecessor with the expression “**paalish**” (meaning porridge), implying rubbish, garbage! and performed to resounding applause. From morning to evening the performance went on. Around 5 p.m. my turn came. With the volume of the Holy Qur'an you see on the cover of this booklet, in my hands, I began, “From morning till night, we have been fumbling for an answer, as to how long is a woman to wait before remarrying after the demise of her husband: and we have heard what the Old Testament says and what the New Testament says, **a-n-d** what the New Testament says and what the Old Testament says, but we have not yet got the answer! because the solution to our problem is in the —

### “LAST TESTAMENT”

“The Last Testament’ was a bombshell for the Christian priests and preachers. They had never heard the expression THE LAST TESTAMENT in their lives. “Quoting OLD and NEW, NEW, and OLD will not help because the answer is in the LAST TESTAMENT of God to mankind!” I brandished the Book above my head, and read only the English of the Holy Qur'an, chapter 2 verse 234. A reference which is very easy to remember -- 2:234, just 2234!

**If any of you die  
and leave widows behind,  
They shall wait  
concerning themselves  
four months and ten days:  
When they have  
fulfilled their term,  
there is no blame on you**

**if they dispose of themselves  
in a just and reasonable manner.**

**And God is well acquainted  
with what ye do.**

*(SÚRA BAQARA) Holy Qur'an 2:234*

I asked the audience, "FOUR MONTHS AND TEN DAYS, do you need any interpretation!?" They all answered in chorus, "NO!", I explained to the learned clergy the wisdom behind the period of "four months and ten days." In the preceding verses, in this Last and Final Testament of God, we are told about the period of waiting after divorce:

**Divorced women shall wait  
concerning themselves  
for three monthly periods ...**

*(SÚRA BAQARA) Holy Qur'an 2:228*

This is in order to see that the marriage conditionally dissolved was likely to result in an issue. Whereas in the case of widowhood an extra period of one month and ten days are prescribed. Very logical everyone will agree, but what is miraculous about all this? Any wise man could have guessed these 3 months period after divorce and 4 months and ten days after the demise of the husband. Muhammed's (pbuh) guess is as good as anybody else's! This is true, but the proof that all this healthy useful teaching is not Muhammed's (pbuh) handiwork is in the verse following the 4 months and ten days period:

**There is no blame on you  
if ye make an  
offer of betrothal  
or hold it in your hearts.**

**God knows that ye cherish  
them in your hearts:**

**But do not enter into  
a secret contract with  
them except in terms  
honourable,**

**Nor resolve on the tie of  
marriage till the term  
prescribed is fulfilled.**

(SÚRA BAQARA) Holy Qur'an 2:235

### **GOD'S FINGERPRINT**

“Do not resolve to the tying of the marriage knot till the fixed period of waiting is over.” This is not Muhammed's (pbuh) cleverness! This is the Wisdom of the All-Wise God. The Omniscient Creator knows the weaknesses of his creatures. Man in his greed and cupidity will take unfair advantage of the poor distraught widow. She has just lost her backbone and support the breadwinner. She has a number of little mouths to feed and she has also perhaps lost her looks and value in the marriage market has diminished. She is likely to clutch at any straw. In her emotional, unsettled condition when a predator makes the proposal. In her haste and insecurity she might readily accept. The Master Psychologist (not Muhammed pbuh) is fully aware of, all the snares laid by men. Hence the warning — **“NO CONTRACT until the appointed term is fulfilled!”**

The **'iddat'**<sup>1</sup> after a divorce is three months. Here she is given an extra 40 days to regain her equilibrium and equanimity. In the meantime, if suggestions of marriage had come, she would have the opportunity of discussing the matter dispassionately with her friends and relatives. She could avoid the pitfalls of a hasty acceptance with a long drawn out and painful development.

---

1. **'iddat'**: period of waiting after divorce or after bereavement.



Did Muhammed (pbuh) think and work out all these ramifications in the desert fourteen hundred years ago? Alas, you give him too much credit! He is made to repeat again and again that the Qur'anic Wisdom is not of his making, "**It is no less than an inspiration sent down to him**" by his Benevolent Creator. If you still doubt his testimony then meet his challenge. He is made to say:

**"SAY: IF THE WHOLE  
OF MANKIND AND JINNS  
WERE TO GATHER TOGETHER**

قُلْ لِّئِنِ اجْتَمَعَتِ الْإِنْسُ وَالْجِنُّ

**TO PRODUCE  
THE LIKE OF THIS QUR'AN,**

عَلَىٰ أَنْ يَأْتُوا بِمِثْلِ هَذَا الْقُرْآنِ

**THEY COULD NOT PRODUCE  
THE LIKE THEREOF,**

لَا يَأْتُونَ بِمِثْلِهِ

**EVEN IF THEY BACKED UP  
EACH OTHER WITH  
HELP AND SUPPORT."**

وَلَوْ كَانَ بَعْضُهُمْ لِبَعْضٍ ظَهِيرًا ۝

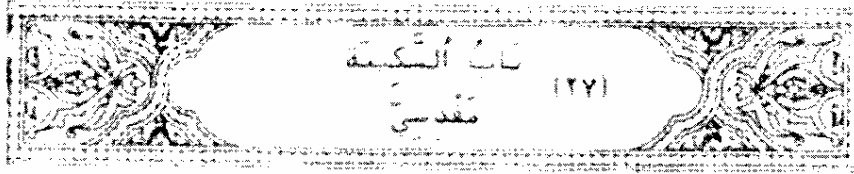
(SÚRA BANI ISRÁ-ÍL) Holy Qur'an 17:88

The world is challenged to produce a Book like the Holy Qur'an and has not produced one in fourteen centuries. The Arab Christians who boast a population of 15 million today, not to be out done, have produced the Christian gospels in Qur'anic style. They have plagiarised<sup>2</sup> the Holy Qur'an by stealing words and phrases and even the style, not forgetting the **Bismillah!**<sup>3</sup> Every chapter of their most modern invention begins with the first verse of the Qur'anic Revelation. You have to see it to believe it. Here is a photostat of their new man-made "revelation".

1. Holy Qur'an 53:4

2. Plagiarise: To steal and use (the ideas or writings of another) as one's own.

3. The Formula — "**In the name of Allah, Most Gracious, Most Merciful,**" with which each chapter of the Holy Qur'an begins.



بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

(١) قُلْ يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا إِن كُنتُمْ تُؤْمِنُونَ بِاللَّهِ حَقًّا  
 فَآيِسُوا بِي وَلَا تَخَافُوا إِن لَّكُمْ عِنْدَ اللَّهِ حَصَنَاتٌ نُّرًا (٢)  
 فَلَأَنبِئَنَّكُمْ إِلَى اللَّهِ لِأَيْدِيهَا لَكُمْ ثُمَّ لَا يَتَّبِعُكُمْ تَرْقَةً أُخْرَى (٣)  
 وَإِنَّكُمْ لَتَعْرِفُونَّ السَّبِيلَ إِلَى قَلْبِي أَلْعَلَّابَ فَقَالَ لَهُ سُوْمَا  
 الْحَوَارِثُ مَوْلَاتَا إِنَّا لَا نَمْلِكُكَ مِنْ ذَلِكَ يَلْمَا (٤) فَقَالَ لَهُ  
 عَيْسَى أَنَا هُوَ الصِّرَاطُ إِلَى اللَّهِ حَقًّا وَمِنْ ذَوْبِي لَا تَسْتَطِيعُونَ  
 إِلَيْهِ سَبِيلًا (٥) وَمَنْ عَرَفَنِي فَكَأَنَّمَا عَرَفَ اللَّهَ وَهَبْنَكُمْ مَنَدًّا

Here is another proof, if proof was needed that the Qur'an is inimitable. Try as you might. The challenge still stands. The Holy Qur'an is God's Word revealed to Muhammed (pbuh) **and it is the Miracle of Miracles!**

**“AND A MIRACLE INDEED IT IS!”**

Rev. Bosworth Smith

# *The* **CHOICE**

**ISLAM AND CHRISTIANITY**

**VOLUME TWO**

**BY AHMED DEEDAT**



## ADDENDUM

The ink had hardly dried on the first print order in April, 1993 of 10 000 copies of the book "THE CHOICE", when Ahmed Deedat was inundated with calls from all around the world clamouring for copies. Alhamdulillah! by the timely assistance of well-wishers another 10 000 copies were printed,<sup>1</sup> testimony to the amazing popularity of Ahmed Deedat's discourses.

Amongst the enormous number of requests, readers argued that there was a need for second volume and hence the birth of the sequel "THE CHOICE" — VOLUME 2. Whereas the compilation of Volume 1 featuring the Miracle of the Qur'an and the role of our Prophet (PBUH) was in keeping with the Qur'anic teaching of the *"Invite (All) to the way of thy Lord with Wisdom and Beautiful Preaching and Reason with them in ways that are Best and Most Gracious"* (Surah 16 Verse 125), Volume 2 differs in strategy.

This selection examines the doctrine of the Divinity of Christ and the deep-rooted misconceptions of Christianity using the Qur'anic principle of say *"Produce your Proof if ye are Truthful"* (Surah 2 Verse 111). This demonstrates once again, Ahmed Deedat's unparalleled knowledge and burning desire to share clear-cut evidences from Christian scriptures that destroy illogical arguments.

Sheikh Deedat, using the thread of logic, weaves a tapestry of Islamic thought and instruction in his own inimitable way. This enables the reader to avoid the minefield of distortions in our walk through life.

It is a perfect complement to the earlier volume, an invaluable companion to seekers of the Truth and a must for the bookshelf.

May ALLAH (SWT) give the pen of Ahmed Deedat more power and bless him abundantly for his ongoing efforts in keeping the blaze of Islam burning brightly, INSHA ALLAH!

### **EBI LOCKHAT**

18 JAMMAD-UL-AWWAL 1414

3 NOVEMBER 1993

---

1. By May 1994 we have touched the 100 000 mark, and by the help of The Almighty are contemplating the publication of another 100 000 of Volume 1.

## ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Born in the Surat district of India in 1918, Ahmed Hoosen Deedat had no recollection of his father until 1926. His father a tailor by profession had emigrated to South Africa shortly after the birth of Ahmed Deedat.

With no formal education and fighting off the extreme pangs of poverty, he went to South Africa in 1927 to be with his father. His farewell to his mother in India in 1927 was the last time he saw her alive for she passed away a few months later.

In a foreign land, a boy of nine with no formal schooling and command of the English language began preparing for the role he was to play decades later without realizing it.

Applying himself with diligence to his studies, the little boy not only was able to overcome the language barrier but excelled in school. His avid passion for reading helped him gain promotions until he completed standard 6. Lack of finance interrupted his schooling and at the early age of about 16 he took on the first of many jobs in retailing.

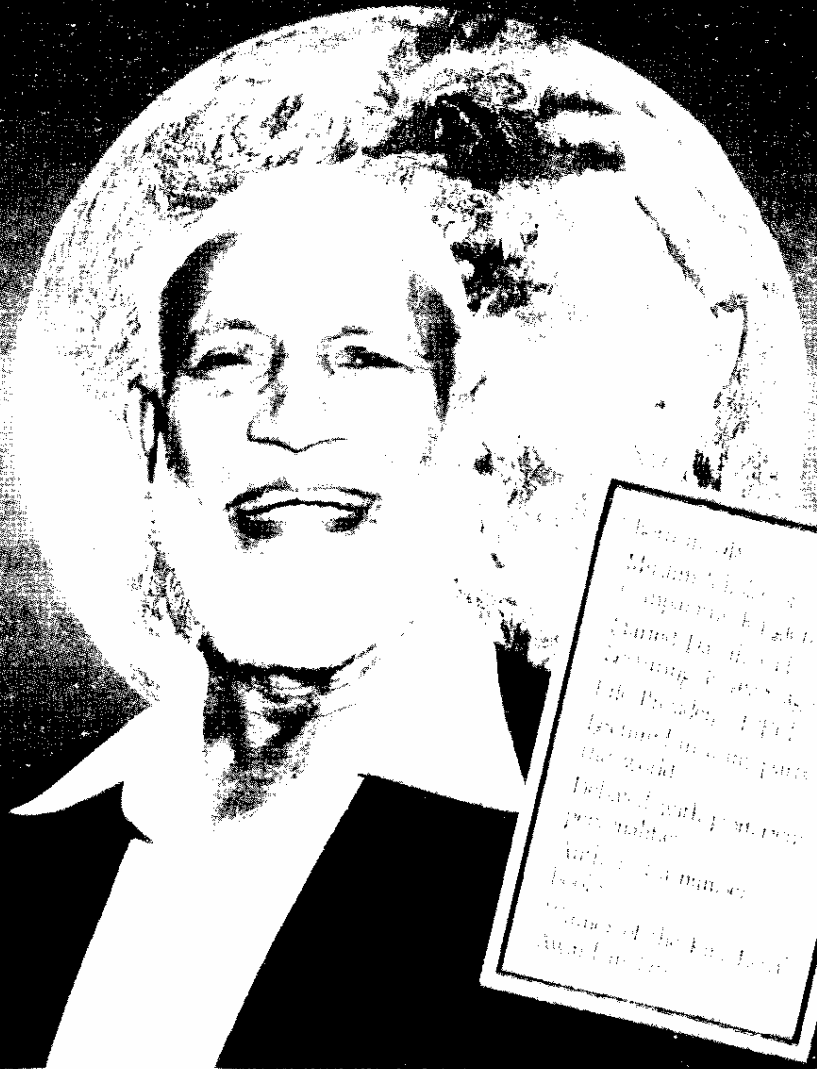
The most significant of these was in 1936 where he worked at a Muslim owned store near a Christian seminary on the Natal South Coast. The incessant insults of the trainee missionaries hurled against Islam during their brief visits to the store infused a stubborn flame of desire within the young man to counteract their false propaganda.

As fate would have it, Ahmed Deedat discovered by pure chance a book entitled **Izharul-Haq**, meaning the Truth revealed. This book recorded the techniques and enormous success of the efforts of Muslims in India in turning the tables against Christian missionary harassment during the British subjugation and rule of India. In particular the idea of holding debates had a profound effect on Ahmed Deedat.

Armed with this new found zeal, Ahmed Deedat purchased his first Bible and began holding debates and discussions with the

# AHMED DEEDAT

*Man with a Mission*



Member of the  
Muslim Brotherhood  
International Islamic  
University, London  
Fellow of the Islamic  
Institute of London  
Fellow of the Islamic  
Institute of London  
Fellow of the Islamic  
Institute of London  
Fellow of the Islamic  
Institute of London

trainee missionaries. When they beat a hasty retreat in the face of his incisive counter arguments, he personally called on their teachers and even priests in the surrounding areas.

These successes spurred Ahmed Deedat in the direction of Da'wah. Not even his marriage, birth of children and a 3 year sojourn to Pakistan after its independence dampened his enthusiasm or dulled his desire to defend Islam from the deceitful distortions of the Christian missionaries.

With missionary zeal to project the Truth and beauty of Islam, Ahmed Deedat immersed himself into a host of activities over the next three decades. He conducted classes on Bible studies and gave numerous lectures. He established the As-Salaam, an institute to train propagators of Islam. He, together with his family, almost single-handedly erected the buildings including the masjid which is still a landmark today.

He was a founder member of the Islamic Propagation Centre International (IPCI) and became its President, a position he still holds today. He has published over 20 books and distributed millions of copies free of charge. He has delivered thousands of lectures all over the world and successfully engaged Christian Evangelists in public debates. Several thousand people have come into the fold of Islam as a result of these efforts.

In a fitting tribute to this monumental achievement, he was awarded the King Faisal International award in 1986, a prestigious recognition of enormous value in the world of Islam.

No number of awards and honours can truly capture the man's essence and zeal for Islam. This anthology of books is no exception. It demonstrates Sheikh Deedat's analytical compilations drawn from personal encounters and experiences against Christian distortions.

May Allah (SWT) bless him for this book, the ones to follow and all his efforts for Islam, Insha-Allah!

**EBI LOCKHAT**

25 MUHARRAM 1415 / 25 JUNE 1994  
DURBAN, SOUTH AFRICA





## CONTENTS

PAGE No.

### *PART 1*

#### **PEOPLE OF THE BOOK**

OUR FIRST CUSTOMERS	1
TURN THE TABLES	7
THE BIBLE: AN ANTHOLOGY ON INCEST	12
TEST OF INSPIRATION	22
PORNOGRAPHY	31

### *PART 2*

<b>COMBAT KIT</b>	34
-------------------	----

### *PART 3*

#### **IS THE BIBLE GOD'S WORD?**

WHAT THEY SAY	73
THE MUSLIMS' STANDPOINT	76
THE MULTIPLE BIBLE VERSIONS	80
FIFTY THOUSAND ERRORS (?)	86
DAMNING CONFESSIONS	99
THE BOOK CHRISTENED "THE NEW TESTAMENT"	103
THE ACID TEST	111
MOST OBJECTIVE TESTIMONY	124
THE GENEALOGY OF JESUS	132
EPILOGUE	142

### *PART 4*

#### **CRUCIFIXION OR CRUCI-FICTION?**

THE ONLY SALES-POINT	146
CALL YOUR WITNESSES	150
ESTABLISHING GOD'S KINGDOM	152
PREPARATION FOR JIHAAD	159
DISCRETION OR VALOUR?	168
TRIALS OF JESUS	173
METHODS OF CRUCIFIXION	182
GOD'S WAYS ARE NOT OUR WAYS	186
"RESURRECTIONS," DAILY!	189
SYMPATHY FOR JESUS	191
WHY THE INVERTED COMMAS "..."?	194
DISCIPLES DISBELIEVED	201
JESUS NO PHANTOM	203
JESUS NOT RESURRECTED	210
THE ONLY MIRACLE PROMISED	216
SIMPLE CALCULATIONS	222
FABRICATED "SCRIPTURE"	227
NONE SO BLIND ...	230
CRUCIFIED OR CRUCIPLAYED?	234

PART ONE

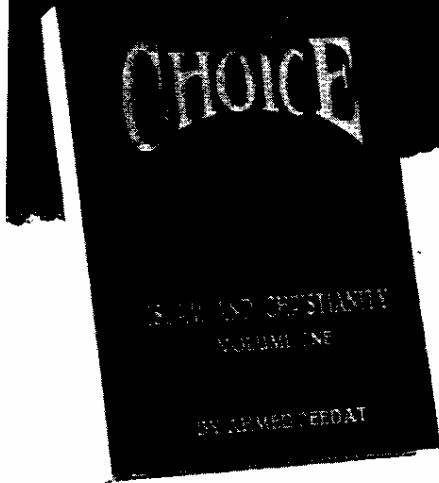
# THE PEOPLE OF THE BOOK



by *Ahmed Deedat*

IT'S YOUR...

# CHOICE



**YOU BE THE  
JUDGE!**

NOW AVAILABLE  
VOLUME ONE OF

# *The* CHOICE

- 228 PAGES OF COMPELLING READING.
- THE COMPILATION OF 4 OF AHMED DEEDAT'S POPULAR BOOKS.
- BEAUTIFULLY BOUND IN HARD COVER.
- AN IDEAL GIFT.

**GET YOUR COPY NOW!**

**IPCI**

ISLAMIC PROPAGATION CENTRE  
INTERNATIONAL

124 QUEEN STREET, DURBAN, 4001 RSA.  
PHONE: (27-31) 3060026 FAX: (27-31) 3040526

## CHAPTER ONE

### *Our First Customers*

**YE ARE THE BEST OF PEOPLES,  
EVOLVED FOR MANKIND,  
ENJOYING WHAT IS RIGHT,  
AND FORBIDDING WHAT IS WRONG,  
AND BELIEVING IN ALLAH.**

**IF ONLY THE PEOPLE OF THE BOOK  
HAD FAITH,**

**IT WERE BEST FOR THEM:**

**AMONG THEM ARE SOME WHO  
HAVE FAITH,**

**BUT MOST OF THEM ARE  
PERVERTED TRANSGRESSORS.<sup>1</sup>**

كُنْتُمْ خَيْرَ أُمَّةٍ

أُخْرِجَتْ لِلنَّاسِ

تَأْمُرُونَ بِالْمَعْرُوفِ

وَتَنْهَوْنَ عَنِ الْمُنْكَرِ

وَتُؤْمِنُونَ بِاللَّهِ

وَلَوْ آمَنَ أَهْلُ الْكِتَابِ

لَكَانَ خَيْرًا لَهُمْ

مِنْهُمْ الْمُؤْمِنُونَ

وَأَكْثَرُهُمُ الْفَاسِقُونَ

(SÚRA AAL-I-'IMRAAN) Holy Qur'an 3:110

### LEAVE THEM ALONE?

The above **Aayah** (verse) is one of the most versatile verses of the Holy Qur'an. I have heard dozens of lectures from our learned brethren reciting the first half of the **Aayah**, stopping at the word "Allah" followed by different dissertations. Indeed, I have done the same with the exposition of over half-a-dozen different topics.

During the Question and Answer session at the end of my lectures, in Newcastle,<sup>2</sup> I was asked as to my reasons for not leaving the Jews and the Christians alone in my discourses and writings. In answer to this question, I read the first half of the above verse and asked my audience to indicate the number of

1. I urge my Muslim readers to memorize this verse, phrase by phrase, with its meaning so as to open up a new world of Da'wah opportunities for them.

2. **Newcastle:** A town in Northern Natal, South Africa.

people who were familiar with the quotation. In the audience of about three hundred, eleven brothers put up their hands. I then requested that if any of the eleven were Hafiz-ul-Qur'an they should put their hands down since they were expected to know the whole verse by virtue of their memorization of the Holy Qur'an. Three out of the eleven put down their hands. I asked the remaining eight individually to complete the second half of the verse. There was a 100% failure. I too had been in the same boat with regard to the memorizing of this **Aayah** for a very long time.

In my experience, I have not yet heard an exposition of the second half of this verse, and have also noted that none of the commentators of the Holy Qur'an have anything to say on it. It is as if there is some kind of conspiracy on their part. But there is no conspiracy. The first half of the **Aayah** is so versatile and adaptable, that every expositor delivers his message on righteous behaviour and admonitions against straying from the path, based on this half of the verse. They appear to be content to conclude their comments on this half of the verse and bask in the satisfaction of a job well done.

The answer to the question, "**Why pick on the Jews and the Christians?**" is to be found in the second half of the Qur'anic quotation above, paraphrased, —

**“But if only the People of the Book**  
 (meaning the Jews and the Christians)  
**if they hearkened unto this Message**  
 (the Message of the Holy Qur'an)  
**it will be better for them** (in other words,  
 it will also be better for you, O Muslims).  
**Among them** (i.e. Jews and Christians)  
**are some who are a goodly people, but**  
**the majority of them are perverted**  
**transgressors.”**

(*SÚRA AAL-i-'IMRAAN*) Holy Qur'an 3:110

At the very outset, in the verse introducing this treatise, Allah confers upon the **Ummah** the honour, privilege and high status of being “**The best of peoples evolved for mankind,**” i.e. “. . . **evolved for** (the good of) **mankind.**” This high honour and status imposes upon us, the duty and responsibility of selflessly sharing this noble status with the rest of mankind.

It is the **Ahle-Kitaab** — the People of the Book (the Jews and the Christians), with whom we should begin with since they have already been prepared for this Message. After all, numerous Prophets have proclaimed the message to them. They do not deny possession of a Scripture and boast the revelation of the **Tauraat**, the **Zaboor** and the **Injeel**<sup>1</sup> by their respective prophets. Accordingly, they are the fittest and best prepared of people to accept the latest dispensation of Islam. They should have been the foremost in submitting their will to the Will of Allah in Islam — a renewal and a confirmation of the Revelation already with them. Yet they have been the first to reject it: and why the rejection? What are their considerations?

Nevertheless, their's is not a totally lost case. Allah assures us that among the Jews and the Christians are some who are sincere, “**But the majority of them are perverted transgressors.**”

### TO THE GOOD CHRISTIAN

We must apply the best methods of getting our Message through to both the goodly person as well as the rebellious, arrogant person. To the goodly among them open the Holy Qur'an and bring to light these verses of chapter three, beginning with verse 42:

**Behold! the angels said:  
“O Mary! Allah hath chosen thee  
And purified thee — chosen thee  
Above the women of all nations.**

---

1. “**Tauraat, Zaboor and Injeel**: See part three of this volume for fuller explanation.

"O Mary! worship  
 Thy Lord devoutly:  
 Prostrate thyself,  
 And bow down (in prayer)  
 With those who bow down."

This is part of the tidings  
 Of the things unseen,  
 Which We reveal unto thee  
 (O Prophet!) by inspiration:  
 Thou wast not with them  
 When they cast lots  
 With arrows, as to which  
 Of them should be charged  
 With the care of Mary:  
 Nor wast thou with them  
 When they disputed (the point).

Behold! the angels said:  
 "O Mary! Allah giveth thee  
 Glad tidings of a Word  
 From Him: his name  
 Will be Christ Jesus,  
 The son of Mary, held in honour  
 In this world and the Hereafter  
 And of (the company of) those  
 Nearest to Allah;

"He shall speak to the people  
 In childhood and in maturity.  
 And he shall be (of the company)  
 Of the righteous.

She said: "O my Lord!  
 How shall I have son  
 When no man hath touched me?"  
 He said: "Even so:



**Allah createth  
 What He willeth:  
 When He hath decreed  
 A Plan, He but saith  
 To it, 'Be,' and it is!**  
**“And Allah will teach him  
 The Book and Wisdom,  
 The Law and the Gospel,  
 “And (appoint him)  
 An apostle to the Children  
 Of Israel, (with this message):  
 “I have come to you,  
 With a Sign from your Lord,  
 In that I make for you  
 Out of clay, as it were,  
 The figure of a bird,  
 And breathe into it,  
 And it becomes a bird  
 By Allah’s leave:  
 And I heal those  
 Born blind, and the lepers,  
 And I quicken the dead,  
 By Allah’s leave;  
 And I declare to you  
 What ye eat, and what ye store  
 In your houses. Surely  
 Therein is a Sign for you  
 If ye did believe.””**

*(SÚRA AAL-I-'IMRAAN) Holy Qur'an 3:42-49*

In your approach to the Christians, work on the assumption that every Christian is a good and sincere Christian unless they prove otherwise. Read the above Qur'anic verses — if possible in conjunction with their Arabic equivalent — phrase by phrase. You cannot imagine the tremendous impact Allah's words

have on the listener. I have seen again and again that tears well up in the eyes of the listener exactly as recorded in the Noble Qur'an:

**And when they listen  
To the revelation received  
By the Messenger (Muhummed),  
Thou wilt see their eyes  
Overflowing with tears,  
For they recognise the truth . . .**

*(SÚRA MÁIDA) Holy Qur'an 5:86*

This is a positive approach. Treat them all with kindness and compassion they deserve. However, if they demonstrate their animosity, and pour out their venom against the Holy Prophet, the Holy Qur'an and Islam, we are entitled to change our approach. We have already been warned against such eventualities in the last phrase of the **Aayah** quoted at the beginning of this chapter —

**BUT MOST OF THEM ARE  
PERVERTED TRANSGRESSORS.**

وَآكْثَرُهُمُ الْفَاسِقُونَ ﴿٥٠﴾

## CHAPTER TWO

# *TURN THE TABLES*

### NEW CHRISTIAN STRATEGY

After fifteen years of strenuous efforts to obtain a visa to visit the Sudan, I received one, at last, in 1992. I was welcomed by that country, and conducted a lecture tour. The purpose of the tour was to arm my Muslim brethren against the Christian missionaries who are trying to gain ascendancy there. At question time at the end of one of my talks in Khartoum, a university student posed the question:

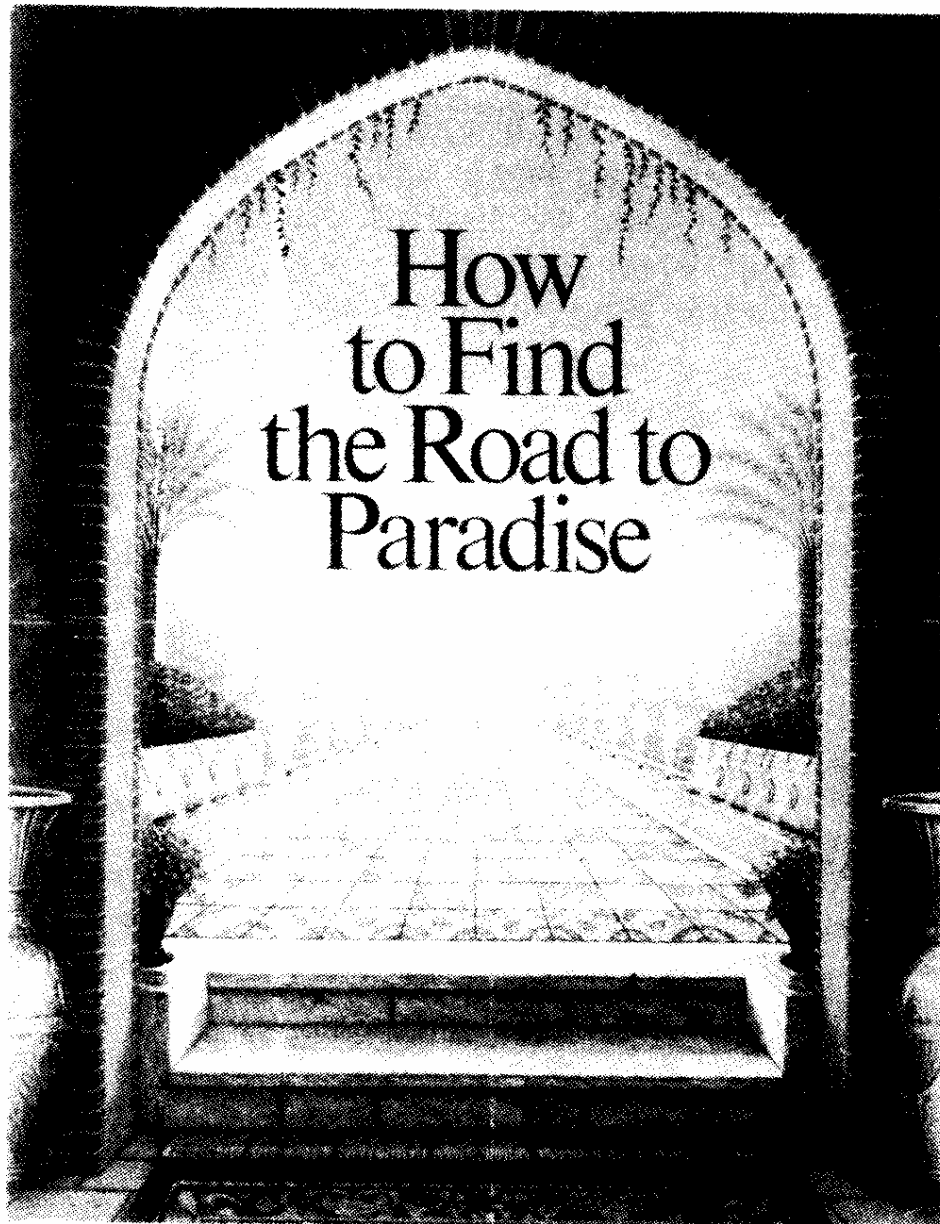
“Christian crusaders from Britain and America are knocking at our doors in Khartoum: we Muslims welcome them with our traditional Arab hospitality of **أهلاً وسهلاً** (loosely translated, means as being part of the family with no formalities).

“Once settled, these missionaries question us whether we Muslims believe in the Day of Judgement? Our response is ‘of course!’ They follow this up with another question: ‘After Judgement is established, you will inherit heaven if you deserve it or hell if you have earned it. Do you believe in it?’ Again our answer is ‘yes!’. In a well planned strategy, this is followed by a third question: ‘This Heaven of yours; where will it be located, on Earth or in the skies? What does your Qur’an say?’ We would like to know from you, Sir, as to what the answer is.”

The dig is in the question — **“What does your Qur’an say?”** If you answer — “On Earth,” he will ask, “Show me! (i.e. in the Qur’an).” If you had answered — “In the skies,” He is ready with the same retort, “Show me!” The enemy is well-trained and well-armed. He has studied his clients closely. He has discovered that 90% of the Muslims, though they have their preferences, either for the “Earth” or the “Heavens,” they will not be able to point to any specific verses in the Holy Qur’an to support them. This is exactly what he wants you to admit. Once you have admitted your inability to prove your point from the Holy Qur’an, then he

will spring the trap and say, "Let me show you what my Bible says." He had given you the first opportunity to expound to him your Qur'an and since you had failed, you are now morally obliged to listen to his exposition. Common courtesy demands that you give him a hearing, and we Muslims are courteous people.

After pummelling you into helpless submission he leaves behind a beautiful brochure in glorious technicolour entitled "**How to Find the Road to Paradise,**" in a language of your choice, like the one reproduced hereunder:



The question remains: "What is the Qur'anic answer to the Christian riddle: will the Muslim Heaven, be on Earth or in the skies?"

I had to admit to my audience in Khartoum, that if the question was put to me, I would have to confess to my Christian adversary that "I don't know." I would have to confess, that I am ashamed of myself. (Until very recently, I did not have the Qur'anic answer).?

Having so conceded we must now TURN THE TABLES on the enemy. I would suggest to him that though I do not know my Qur'an as well as I ought to, "I take it, that you know your Bible?" He would be too arrogant to say, "No." He is holding one under his arm! He is well-equipped! I would request him or her, "Can I have a look at your Bible?" The missionary would be overwhelmed at this request. You are helping them to fulfil their mission. I open the very first book of the Bible called **Genesis**. (The Roman Catholic Bible has 73 books in it, and the Protestant world has 66 in their encyclopedia called the Bible). More about this in part 3 of this Volume).

I hand back the Bible to the Christian, having opened it to Genesis chapter 19 pointing to verse 30, and suggesting that he reads it out aloud to me. He is too clever to do that. He is trained not to follow your instructions but read only the selected ones to push down your throat. He scans the verses. He smells the "rat". He or she will want to change the subject. You ask, "What's wrong? Is that not the Book of God?" He says, "Yes." Then read it! If he reads, what does he read? I gave my audience the gist of these verses, and of Genesis 35:22, and still in the first book of the Bible — Genesis 38:15-18, with the question to the Bible-thumpers, the hot-gospellers "WHAT IS THE MORAL?" "What is the moral of these verses? (stories?)".

We tell our children anecdotes, fables — ("**The Fox and the Grapes, the Wolf and the Lamb, the Dog and his shadow,**

etc.”), not just for entertainment, but with a view to imparting morals to them. Behind these stories is a moral. We are teaching our children not to be like the greedy fox, who, when it could not reach the bunch of grapes, said that ‘The Grapes are Sour.’ Do not be like that greedy dog who, when seeing its reflection in the water, lost the bone it had in its mouth for the other dog’s bone. There is a moral behind these stories! Now then, what is the moral behind, “Daughters seducing their father, night after night and begetting bastard children through him” (Genesis 19:30-36) or “Of a Son having intercourse with his mother” (Genesis 35:22), or “Of a Father-in-law cohabiting with his Daughter-in-law and begetting incestuous twins through her” (Genesis 38:15-18)? If there are no moral lessons to be learnt from these pornographic narrations in the so-called “Book of God”, then they are IMMORAL!

The audience was no doubt thrilled by the way the tables could be turned against the Christian missionaries.

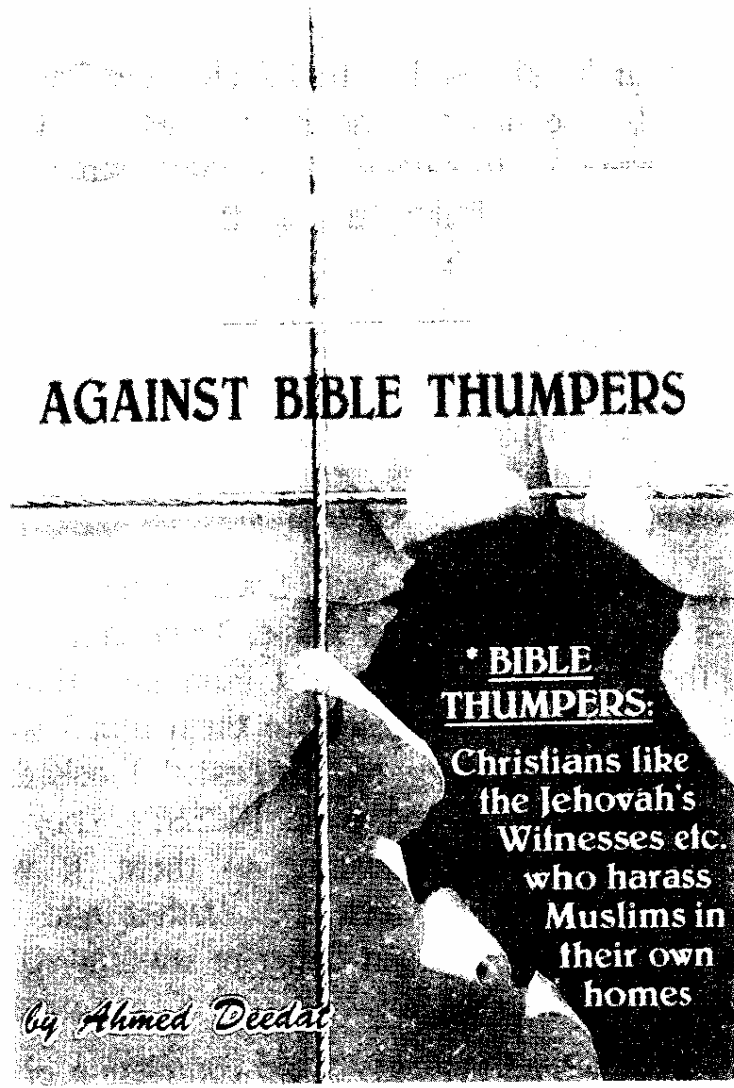
### COMBAT KIT

On my return home to South Africa, I wrote an article on how to counter the missionaries who come to harass the Muslims in their own homes. The IPCI published one hundred thousand copies of this manual — “**Combat Kit**” — for free distribution worldwide. Get your FREE copy from the ISLAMIC PROPAGATION CENTRE INTERNATIONAL, 124 QUEEN STREET, DURBAN 4001 to affix to your copy of the Bible.

This manual is a book of instructions, and is not intended for your entertainment. As soon as you get it in your hands, browse through the index on page one and follow the instructions as contained on page two.

To start the exercise, you need the Bible. If you do not have one, then buy one in the language of your choice, preferably the King James Version (KJV).

I make my students open the inside front cover of the Bible in their hand and make them glue their copy of the “**Combat Kit**”



for permanency into the Bible. Otherwise, the manual is apt to be misplaced or get lost. Once "Combat Kit" is stuck in place, the student is now prepared for the first move. He or she is asked to open the index on page one of the manual. Scanning the topics, our eyes rest on item 16, i.e. "INCEST: Types and types of incest in the Bible ... Page 13."

## CHAPTER THREE

### *THE BIBLE: AN ANTHOLOGY ON INCEST*

The reader is naturally shocked to find such a heading in a Book attributed to God. One has to read it to believe it. Quickly the reader refers to page 13 to savour the spiciest part of “**Combat Kit**” first. At the head of the page is the definition from the “**New Collins Dictionary**.”:

**INCEST:** “SEXUAL INTERCOURSE BETWEEN TWO PERSONS WHO ARE TOO CLOSELY RELATED.” The Oxford Dictionary adds the words — “TO MARRY.”

Whilst in the middle of this research, I was visited by two Bible peddlers on a Sunday morning at home. They came to give me solutions to the problems of the world from the “Holy” Bible. I changed the subject, and I suggested to them that I was on the verge of writing an anthology on “**Incest**.” I asked, whether they knew the meaning of the word INCEST? They said that they knew. I explained the meaning to them. It was about having sexual intercourse between . . . father and daughters, between son and mother, between father-in-law and daughter-in-law, between brother and sister.

I asked them what would they say if, on completion of my essay on the subject, I presented it to their teenage sister or daughter to read. They both replied to the effect that they would strangle me! I asked why? They said that that act of my giving a filthy, dirty, immoral book to their loved ones was an attack on their chastity. I said, I would not blame them for their strong reaction. But what if the obscene, immoral treatise on incest was derived from your so-called “Book of God,” the Holy Bible. “Impossible”, they exclaimed indignantly. “The Bible contains no such pornography! Prove it! they demanded!”



I asked, "The volume you are holding in your hands, is it the Bible?" (The Bible-Thumpers, the Hot-Gospellers always carry one under their arm) "Yes!" was the answer. "Can I have a look?" It was handed to me. I opened it to Genesis chapter 19 and pointing to verse 30, I asked one of them to read. The Bible peddler scanned the verses and "smelt the rat." He wanted to change the subject. I asked, "What's wrong, is that not the Word of God?" "Yes," they blurted, "but . . . but . . ." But when persuaded what did the Christian read? See pages 14 and 15 for the actual reproduction from the Holy of holies.

Both the reproductions are from the King James Version. You will observe that there are slight variations between them. In verse 32 the first version speaks of the daughters of Lot wanting to "**preserve SEED of our father,**" whereas the second records as "**preserve LINEAGE of our father,**" but the more modern translations of the Bible calls a spade a spade. They do not mince matters —

***"That night they** (both the daughters of Lot)  
**gave him** (their father Lot)  
**wine to drink, and the older**  
**daughter had INTERCOURSE with him . . .***

***The next day the older daughter**  
**said to her sister, I slept with him**  
**last night: now let's get him drunk**  
**again tonight, and you sleep<sup>1</sup>**  
**with him. Then each of us will**  
**have a child by our father.***

***So that night they got him drunk, and**  
**the younger daughter had INTERCOURSE**  
**with him . . .***

CONT. PAGE 16

---

1. In the "**International Children's Bible — the New Century Version,**" the words, "you sleep with him" is spelt out as — "have sexual relations with him." The Christians make it easy for the little ones!

saying, I laughed not; for she was afraid. And he said, Nay; but thou dost

*Abraham Intercedes for Sodom*

16 And the men rose up from thence, and looked toward Sodom: and Abraham went with them to bring them on the way.

17 And Abraham said, Shall I hide from thee, that Abraham and might dwell in the earth? I know that thou shalt bring upon them justice and spoken of because thou art great and awesome. 21 I will say whether thou wilt bring me; and

22 And thou shalt say, I will not do it. 23 And Abraham said, Wilt thou destroy the fifty right?

25 That I will not do it in this manner, wicked; as the wicked do not.

26 And thou shalt say, I will spare all. Abraham said, I have taken upon me to speak unto the Lord, whether thou wilt destroy the city.

28 Peradventure I shall find there forty.

30 And he said, I will not do it, if I find thirty there.

31 And he said, Behold now, I have taken upon me to speak unto the Lord: Peradventure there shall be twenty found there.

And he said, \* PAGE NUMBERS MAY VARY IN YOUR OWN BIBLE

32 And he said, Oh let not the Lord be angry, and he said, I will not destroy it for ten sake. 33 And the LORD went his way, and soon as he had left Abraham, he said, Behold now, I have taken upon me to speak unto the Lord: Peradventure there shall be twenty found there.

**INCEST BETWEEN FATHER**

Peradventure ten shall be found there. And he said, I will not destroy it for ten sake. 33 And the LORD went his way, and soon as he had left Abraham, he said, Behold now, I have taken upon me to speak unto the Lord: Peradventure there shall be twenty found there.

**30 And Lot went up out of Zo'ar, and dwelt in the mountain, and his two daughters with him; for he feared to dwell in Zo'ar: and he dwelt in a cave, he and his two daughters. 31 And the firstborn said unto the younger, Our father is old, and there is not a man in the earth to come in unto us after the manner of all the earth: 32 come, let us make our father drink wine, and we will lie with him, that we may preserve seed of our father. 33 And they made their father drink wine that night: and the firstborn went in, and lay with her father; and he perceived not when she lay down, nor when she arose. 34 And it came to pass on the morrow, that the firstborn said unto the younger, Behold, I lay yesternight with my father: let us make him drink wine this night also; and go thou in, and lie with him, that we may preserve seed of our father. 35 And they made their father drink wine that night also: and the younger arose, and lay with him; and he perceived not when she lay down, nor when she arose. 36 Thus were both the daughters of Lot with child by their father.**

... they snote the men ... were at the door of the house with blindness, both small and great: so that they wearied themselves to find the door.

**INCEST BETWEEN**

12 A thou h the sons, and the daughters, and what they

**AND HIS DAUGHTERS**

13 for we will destroy this city because of the iniquity which hath sent us to destroy it. 14 And he went out, and spake unto his sons-in-law, which married his daughters, and said, Up, get you out of this place; for the LORD will destroy this city. But he seemed one that mocked unto his sons-in-law.

15 And when the morning arose, then two angels hastened Lot, saying, Arise, take thy wife, and thy two daughters, which are here; lest thou be consumed in the iniquity of the city. 16 And while he lingered, the men laid hold upon his hand, and upon the hand of his wife, and upon the hand of his two daughters; the LORD being merciful unto him: and they brought him forth, and set him without the city."

And it came to pass, when they had sought them forth about the city, that he said, ~~Escape for thy life; look not behind thee, neither stay thou in all the plain; escape to the mountain, lest thou be consumed.~~

And Lot said unto them, Oh, not so, my Lord: 19 behold now, thy servant hath found grace in thy sight, and thou hast magnified thy mercy, which thou hast showed unto me in saving my life; and I cannot escape to the mountain, lest some evil take me, and I die: 20 behold now, this city is near to flee unto, and it is a little one: O, let me escape thither, (is it a little one?) and my soul shall live.

And he said unto him, See, I have accepted thee concerning this thing also, at I will not overthrow this city, for the which thou hast spoken. 22 Haste thee, escape thither; for I cannot do any thing until thou be come thither. Therefore the name of the city was called Zo'ar. 23 Then the wrath was risen upon the earth when Lot entered into Zo'ar.

24 Then the LORD rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the LORD out of heaven; 25 and he overthrew those cities, and all the plain, and all the inhabitants of the cities, and all that grew upon the ground. 26 But his wife looked back from behind him, and she became a pillar of salt. 27 And Abraham gat up early in the morning to the place where he stood before the LORD: and he looked toward Sodom and Gomorrah, and toward all the land of the

plain, and beheld, and, lo, the smoke of the country went up as the smoke of a furnace.

29 And it came to pass, when God destroyed the cities of the plain, that God remembered Abraham, and sent Lot out of the midst of the overthrow, when he overthrew the cities in the which Lot dwelt.

30 And Lot went up out of Zo'ar, and dwelt in the mountain, and his two daughters with him; for he feared to dwell in Zo'ar: and he dwelt in a cave. he and his two daughters. 31 And the firstborn said unto the younger, Our father is old, and there is not a man in the earth to come in unto us after the manner of all the earth: 32 come, let us make our father drink wine. and we will lie with him, that we may preserve seed of our father. 33 And they made their father drink wine that night: and the firstborn went in, and lay with her father; and he perceived not when she lay down, nor when she arose. 34 And it came to pass on the morrow, that the firstborn said unto the younger, Behold, I lay yesternight with my father: let us make him drink wine this night also; and go thou in, and lie with him, that we may preserve seed of our father. 35 And they made their father drink wine that night also: and the younger arose, and lay with him; and he perceived not when she lay down, nor when she arose. 36 Thus were both the daughters of Lot with child by their father.

37 And the firstborn bare a son, and called his name Moab: the same is the father of the Moabites unto this day. 38 And the younger, she also bare a son, and called his name Ben-am'mi: the same is the father of the children of Ammon unto this day.

*Abraham and Abimelech*

20 And Abraham journeyed from thence toward the south country, and dwelt between Kadesh and Shur, and sojourned in Gerar. 2 And Abraham said of Sarah his wife, She is my sister: and Abim'elech king of Gerar sent, and took Sarah. 3 But God came to Abim'elech in a dream by night, and said to him, Behold, thou art but a dead man, for the woman which thou hast taken; for she is a man's wife. 4 And Abim'elech had not come

**1 SON AND HIS MOTHER P. 32**

19:16 2 Pet. 2:7. b 19:24-25 Mt. 10:15; 11:23-24; Lk. 10:12; 17:29; 2 Pet. 2:6; Jude 7. 19:26 Lk. 17:32. d 20:2 Gen. 12:13; 26:7.

***In this way both of Lot's daughters  
became PREGNANT by their father."***

(HOLY BIBLE) Genesis 19:33-35

(From the "Good News Bible in Today's English")

As a result of this illicit, incestuous relationship both of the daughters of Lot deliver a son each who became famous in the Bible as the progenitors of the Ammonites and the Moabites, specially guarded and protected communities in the "Book of God." The Jews were to exterminate the Palestinians, "**nothing that breathes**" was to be spared, but for Lot's children of bastardy<sup>1</sup> God had a special soft spot —

***That the Lord spoke to me, (Moses),  
saying:***

***"This day you (the Israelites) are  
to cross over at Ar, the boundary  
of Moab (the Moabites).***

***And when you come near the people  
of Ammon (the Ammonites), do not  
HARASS them or MEDDLE with them,  
for I will not give you any of  
the land of the people of Ammon  
as a possession, because I have  
given it to the descendants of  
Lot for a possession.***

(HOLY BIBLE) Deuteronomy 2:19

The Ammonites and the Moabites were not one whit better than their polytheistic Palestinian cousins, their only redeeming grace in the sight of the Biblical God was that they were the "seed" of Lot, an incestuous breed! Ask your Bible thumper, "What is the moral, the lesson to be learnt from this shameless lewd story?" If there is no moral — and there is none — then why did God not

---

1. Notwithstanding God's own Commandment to Moses — "**A bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the Lord; even to his tenth generation shall he not enter into the congregation of the Lord**" (Deuteronomy 23:2)

reproach Lot or strike him with syphilis, gonorrhoea or Aids? But instead, his offsprings were a blessed race in God's sight. How immorally moral, or morally immoral can you get?

## PSYCHOLOGIST CONFIRMS

Dr. Vernon Jones, an American psychologist of great repute, carried out experiments on groups of schoolchildren of equal age and educational status. Certain stories with particular bias were told to the children. His conclusions were that these stories made, **“Certain slight but permanent changes in the character of these children, even in the narrow classroom situation.”** Little wonder that the mighty evangelist Jimmy Swaggart,<sup>1</sup> in his book on “INCEST” bewails that incest between fathers and their daughters have reached endemic proportions in the mighty United States of America. There is a law at work: physically you are what you eat and morally and mentally you are what you read!

Before proceeding further, open your Bible at Genesis chapter 19 at verses 30-36, and frame these verses as you see on pages 14/15 of this book, and write across the top on two pages, in big, bold handwriting: **“INCEST BETWEEN FATHER AND DAUGHTERS”** and underline it. At the bottom of these very two pages write in equally bold types the next reference on the topic: **“INCEST BETWEEN MOTHER AND SON P. ..?”**<sup>2</sup>

Find the next reference in your own Bible — Genesis 35:32, and fill in the page number (as you see done) at the bottom of pages 15 and 16 of this book. Please note that page numbers will vary in the different Bibles, so ascertain before numbering in your Bible.

Having opened Genesis 35, frame verse 22 as you see on pages 18 and 19, and write as a heading across the two pages in bold: **“INCEST BETWEEN SON AND MOTHER,”** and underline

CONT. PAGE 20

---

1. Jimmy Swaggart himself subsequently succumbed to sordid and evil temptations of the flesh.  
2. Supply the number of the page from your own Bible.

and **INCEST BETWEEN SON AND HIS MOTHER**

5 And they journeyed: and the terror of God was upon the cities that were round about them, and they did not pursue after the sons of Jacob. 6 So Jacob came to Luz which is in the land of Canaan, that is, Beth-el, he and all the people that were with him. 7 And he built there an altar, and called the place El-beth-el; because there God appeared unto him, when he fled from the face of his brother. 8 But Deborah Rebekah's nurse died, and she was buried beneath Beth-el under an oak: and the name of it was called Allonbach'uth.

9 And God appeared unto Jacob again, when he came out of Pa'dan-a'ram, and blessed him. 10 And God said unto him, Thy name is Jacob: thy name shall not be called any more Jacob, but Israel shall be thy name; and he called his name Israel. 11 And God said unto him, I am God Almighty: be fruitful and multiply: a nation and a company of nations shall be of thee, and kings shall come out of thy loins; 12 and the land which I gave Abraham and Isaac, to thee I will give it, and to thy seed after thee will I give the land. 13 And God went up from him in the place where he talked with him. 14 And Jacob set up a pillar in the place where he talked with him, even

a drink thereon. the place Beth-el.

**25** Abraham again took a wife, and her name was Keturah.

16 And they journeyed from Beth-el, and there was but a little way to come to Ephrath: and Rachel travailed, and she had hard labor. 17 And it came to pass, when she was in hard labor, that her wife said unto her, Fear not, for thou shalt have this son also. 18 As her soul was in departing, that she called his name Benjamin: because his father called him Benjamin. 19 And Rachel died, and was buried to Ephrath, which is Bethlehem: and Jacob set a pillar up at the head of Rachel's grave. 21 And Israel journeyed from Beth-el, and pitched his tent beyond the tower of Edar.

22 And it came to pass, when Isaac dwelt in that land, that Reuben went and lay with Bilhah his father's concubine, and Israel heard it.

Now the sons of Jacob were two and twenty: the sons of Leah; Reuben, Jacob's firstborn, and Simeon, and Levi, and Judah, and Issachar, and Zebulun: the sons of Rachel; Joseph, and Benjamin: and the sons of Bilhah, Rachel's handmaid; Dan, and Naphthali: and the sons of Zilpah, Leah's handmaid; Gad, and Asher. These are the sons of Jacob, which were born to him in Padan-aram.

*The Death of Isaac*

27 And Jacob came unto Isaac his father unto Mamre, unto the city of Abimelech which is Hebron, where Abraham and Isaac sojourned. 28 And the days of Isaac were a hundred and fourscore years. 29 And Isaac gave up the ghost, and died, and was gathered unto his people, being old and full of days: and his sons Esau and Jacob buried him.

*The Descendants of Esau*

(1 Chr. 1:34-54)

These are the generations of Esau the brother of Jacob. Esau dwelt in Seir the land of Edom. 2 Esau took to himself wives; the daughters of Canaan: Adah the daughter of Elon the Hittite; and Basemath the daughter of Ishmael's daughter Rebekah's sister; and Leah the daughter of Esau Eliphaz, and Basemath the daughter of Esau Eliphaz; and Aholibamah the daughter of Ishmael's daughter Rebekah's sister; and Keturah the daughter of Ishmael's daughter Rebekah's sister.

32 Now the sons born to Keturah, Abraham's concubine, were Zimran, Jokshan, Medan, Midian, Ishbak, and Shuah. The sons of Jokshan were Sheba and Dedan.

1 35:7 That is, The God of Beth-el. 2 35:8 That is, The oak of weeping.

3 35:18 That is, The son of Benjamin.

4 35:10 Gen. 32:28.

5 35:27 Gen. 13:18.

**INCEST BETWEEN FATHER-IN-LAW AND DAUGHTER**



it. At the bottom of the said pages, write: **“INCEST BETWEEN FATHER-IN-LAW AND DAUGHTER-IN-LAW P. ..?”** Find Genesis 38 verses 15-18 and repeat the exercise of supplying the page number and framing the verses as you had done in the previous two examples. And get back to your **“Combat Kit”** pages 13 and 14, and complete the exercise of marking your Bible to confront every “Christian Crusader” who knocks on your door. The better your preparation the swifter will be the flight of the Bible-peddler.

Glance once more at the previous two pages (18 and 19), and their heading: **“Incest between Son and his Mother.”**

Read verse 22 there. Both the reproductions are from the most renowned King James Version (s). The larger types are from the KJV in its “Fifth **major** Revision.” After revising the Book five times over, the Christians still call it the King James Version (!). Compare the two reproductions of this one verse 22. They begin — **“And it came to pass,”** and **“And so it happened.”** The Christians have not yet freed themselves from the **“once upon a time”** syndrome. See **The Choice**,<sup>1</sup> Volume 1, pages 189/191 for this perennial sickness.

### **MODERN TRANSLATIONS MORE EXPLICIT**

Both the quotations speak of -- **“Reuben went and LAY with Bilhah.”** The Roman Catholic’s **“Douay Version,”** differs in its choice of words. It says, **“Reuben went, and SLEPT with Bala,”** (they meant Bilhah). Now these variant readings do not tell us how old Reuben was. No one would raise eyebrows if a five-year old or ten-year old kid sleeps with his mother or his stepmother, to keep himself warm. **“The New Century Version,”** in its INTERNATIONAL CHILDREN’S BIBLE, published by **“WORD BIBLES”** of Word (UK) Ltd., Milton Keynes, England, does not want Christian children to fumble over the meaning of **“lay”** or **“slept”**. They even got their Bible-thumpers out of their misery of explaining away simple words lending themselves to dubious interpretations. Their rendering is -- **“Reuben had sexual RELATIONS with Israel’s slave woman Bilhah.”**

---

1. Obtainable from I.P.C.I.



Could they have spelt it out in any simpler form for the "born agains" who will never grow up?

Of the twelve sons of Jacob, Reuben was the "first born" the eldest son, who in the prime of his life, raped his mother! Call her "**slave woman**" or "**concubine**", she was his father's wife, (And your father's wife is **ONES MOTHER** by any definition.)

"**Wife**," and "**concubine**" are synonymous terms in the Bible. Check it out in your own Bible at home:-

- (a) ***Abraham again took a WIFE,  
and her name was Keturah.***

(**HOLY BIBLE**) Genesis 25:1

Genesis is reputed to be the first book of Moses (pbuh). God Almighty Himself is supposed to have dictated the five books of the Jewish Torah, now accepted by all Christians as God's Word. In the first of these five books, God Almighty spells it out for Moses (pbuh) that the third "**wife**" of His Friend, Abraham (pbuh) was Keturah, the previous two being Sarah and Hagar. If the Lord God of Moses (pbuh) Himself acknowledges Keturah as Abraham's **W-I-F-E**, then who can have the audacity to contradict Him and denigrate Keturah? But some "**unknown**"<sup>1</sup> anonymous writer, of the 1st Book of Chronicles, chapter one, verse thirty two, had the nerve to change God's Word dictated to Moses (pbuh) from "**WIFE**" to "**CONCUBINE**," unless they mean the same thing. Otherwise, the Bible-thumper will have to acknowledge that there is yet another contradiction in his Bible. Look in the index of your "**Combat Kit**" for "**CONTRADICTIONS IN THE BIBLE**," and add this item also to your list.

Reverting to the subject marked at the bottom on pages 18 and 19, i.e. "**INCEST BETWEEN FATHER-IN-LAW AND DAUGHTER-IN-LAW**": after having completed the exercise as instructed on page 17 — that of framing verses 15-18 of Genesis chapter 38 — this chapter "**thirty-eight**" is very effective also in proving that the Bible is **NOT** the Word of God --

---

1. "**UNKNOWN**:" Is the verdict on the Book of Chronicles by 32 Christian Scholars of the highest eminence backed by fifty co-operating denominations.

## CHAPTER FOUR

### *Test Of Inspiration*

Christian missionaries are very fond of repeating the following verse from the writings of St. Paul. St. Paul happens to be the most prolific of all authors of the Christian Bible. He has authored more than 50% of the Books and Epistles of the New Testament. To be exact 14 out of the 27! In his self-professed inspiration he says:

***All Scripture is given by inspiration  
of God, and is profitable for  
doctrine, for reproof, for correction,  
for instruction in righteousness,***

***That the man of God may be complete,  
thoroughly equipped for every good  
work.***

(HOLY BIBLE) 2 Timothy 3:16-17

This is Paul's second personal letter to his protegee Timothy. Do you remember Paul advising Timothy in his first epistle -- **“Drink NO longer WATER, but use a little WINE for thy stomach's sake and thine often infirmities.”** (1 Timothy 5:23)? Now Paul is giving Timothy a more sanguine, spirited advice, adaptable for a wider audience.

But who is this Timothy? He is a recruit to help Paul in his self-appointed mission. He is the son of a Greek father and a Jewish mother which makes him a Jew according to Jewish law. But he was an uncircumcised Jew. To make him **“kosher”**, Paul had to have Timothy circumcised (Acts 16:3).

In the verses under consideration, Paul advises Timothy on the subject of **“Scripture.”** The Scripture Paul is referring to is not the ones which later on became known as the “Gospel ACCORDING TO St. Matthew” or the “Gospel ACCORDING TO St. Mark” or the “Gospel ACCORDING TO St. Luke” or the “Gospel

ACCORDING TO St. John," All these writings had not yet seen the light of day. They were to follow many decades and centuries later. Paul had no inkling about them. He was referring Timothy to the "**Holy Scriptures**" with which he had been familiar from his "**childhood**," the Books of the Jews as contained in the Old Testament. Confirm this from verse 15 of 2 Timothy chapter three (2 Timothy 3:15).

Since verse sixteen under discussion is widely used by the Christian missionaries to prove the validity of the whole Bible, we will use it for a test case.

The verse implies that if any scripture originates from God, it will prove profitable for —

1. **DOCTRINE:** teaching
2. **REPROOF:** for convicting, rebuking, for showing people what is wrong in their lives.
3. **CORRECTION:** useful for correcting faults.
4. **INSTRUCTION UNTO RIGHTEOUSNESS:** for training and teaching us how to live correctly.

I find the above four headings to categorise God's Word to be very reasonable, I have been asking the Christians whether they can find a fifth heading under which the Word of God can be rubricated, and in all my experience I have not had another befitting headline. We will leave it at that. Now let us revert to that famous chapter **thirty-eight** of Genesis for analysis. It is worth perusing the whole chapter so that no missionary can ever accuse you of reading his Bible out of context.

What is the context? The first five verses speak about Judah and his three siblings. Judah is the father of the Jewish race from whom we derive the words "Judea" and "Judaism." Also Juda (Heb. **Huda**; also Arabic). **Huda** to Hudi, Yahudi. meaning Jew.

Of his three sons — Er, Onan and Shelah — he gets his first-born Er married to a woman named Tamar. But verse seven records his untimely demise:

***But Er, Judah's first-born, was wicked (Er erred) in the sight of the Lord, and the Lord killed him.***

(HOLY BIBLE) Genesis 38:7

According to the standard laid down in 2 Timothy 3:16 to test the Scripture whether it is from God, we ask our missionary friend: under which heading will you put this verse? Under 1. **Doctrine**, 2. **Reproof**, 3. **Correction** or 4. **Instruction unto Righteousness** (?). Our friend will not find it difficult to give the correct answer. "REPROOF!" In effect, we learn that if we do anything wicked in the sight of God, He will destroy us. That is the moral; that is the lesson!

In verse 8 of chapter 38 of Genesis we are told that the old man Judah tells his second son Onan to go in unto his late brother's widow and beget a child from her so as to carry on the name of his deceased brother, as he had died childless. The Jews were specially particular that one's name should not perish.

The Bible records:

***And Judah said unto Onan, Go in unto thy brother's wife, (meaning, have intercourse with her), and raise up seed to thy brother,***

***And Onan knew that the seed should not be his (that the child would not be carrying his name); and it came to pass, when he went in unto his brother's wife, that he spilled IT on the ground, lest he should give seed to his brother.***

***And the thing which he did displeased the Lord, wherefore he (the Lord) slew him also.***

(HOLY BIBLE) Genesis 38:8-10

God killed Onan for his selfish envy. He did not want his deceased brother's name to carry on as was required by the Mosaic Law. Ask your Bible-thumper, under which of the four headings will he put this instant retribution of God? Under —

**Doctrine?**

**Reproof?**

**Correction?** or

**Instruction unto Righteousness?**

“REPROOF!”, again, is his answer. The problem did not tax his brain.

I hope that you have already framed the verses 15-18 as instructed on page 21. This short chapter, Genesis 38, is the choicest and spiciest piece of pornography in a “Book of God”. Make a point of reading it a few times.

Judah sends his daughter-in-law, Tamar, to her father's house with the promise that when his third son Shelah was big enough to consummate the marriage he would recall her for him to fulfil his obligation to give her a baby to perpetuate the name of her deceased husband Er.

Judah was a superstitious person. He had reasoned that he had lost two sons already through this witch Tamar, his daughter-in-law, and he was not prepared to risk the life of his only remaining son Shelah, fearing **“Lest peradventure, he die also, as his brethren did.”** (HOLY BIBLE) Genesis 38:11

Shelah is grown, and perhaps already married, but the old man is not recalling Tamar to enable her to conceive a child in the name of her late husband.

**“Hell hath no fury like a woman scorned.”** She wanted to avenge Judah's dereliction of duty. She gets the news that her father-in-law was going to Timnath to shear his sheep. She planned to waylay him. She went and sat by the wayside, knowing in her heart of heart that the old man will never pass her by without making a pass. True to tradition, Judah saw her and supposing her to be a harlot, a prostitute, a whore, he proposes to her --

*Come to, I pray thee,<sup>1</sup>  
 let me come in unto thee<sup>2</sup>  
 (for he knew not that she was  
 his daughter-in-law).<sup>3</sup>  
 And she said, What wilt thou give me,  
 that thou mayest come in unto me?<sup>4</sup>*

(HOLY BIBLE) Genesis 38:16

People did not carry ready cash or credit cards with them in those days, so he said that he would send her a goat kid from his flock after he had had sexual intercourse with her. Tamar was not one to be taken in by such glib talk. She had a master plan, well thought out and scientifically executed. She bargains: **“What guarantee is there for me that the goat kid would be sent?”** “What guarantee do you want?” Asks Judah. “Your ring, your bracelets (people used to wear bangles on their wrists those days) and the rod that you are carrying in your hand.” The old man handed the things requested and cohabited with his daughter-in-law. With this single copulation she conceived, not forgetting that both Er and Onan had singularly failed to impregnate Tamar.

Within three months the pregnancy became apparent. Tongues began to wag. The news reached Judah that Tamar had **“played the harlot and was with child by whoredom.”** His righteous indignation knew no bounds. He ordered, **“Bring her forth** (the bitch), **and let her be burnt.”** Before this she was a witch (he had lost two sons on account of her). Now she is a bitch and deserves to be burnt alive!

Tamar was more wily than Judah could imagine. Before she could be confronted by her father-in-law, she sent forth the **ring,**

- 
1. Do me a favour. I beg you.
  2. Let me have intercourse with you.
  3. These words within brackets are not in the original Hebrew manuscripts. They happen to be the words of the translators. God Almighty did not deem fit to inspire Moses (pbuh) with such tittle tattle. In all the later editions of the Bible, the words in brackets are retained, but the brackets are removed, thus transmuted editorial notes into God's word. The Christians seem to have the licence to change God's Word.
  4. To have intercourse with me.

the **bracelets** and the **staff**, with a servant and a plea beseeching him to find out the culprit responsible for her pregnancy. She said, "**By the man, whose these things are, am I with child.**" Judah acknowledged his belongings. and said,

***She hath been more righteous  
than I, because that I gave her  
not to Shelah, my (surviving) son.  
And he knew<sup>1</sup> her again no more.***

(HOLY BIBLE) Genesis 38:26

Nine months after the sexual encounter on the Timnath Road between Judah the father-in-law, and Tamar his daughter-in-law the midwife was on the alert by Tamar's bedside. From the size of her abdomen she had surmised that twins were in her womb. And according to the Laws of Moses (pbuh) she had to be particularly careful to label the "first-born." If the woman delivered identical twins and if care was not taken to mark the first one to see the light of day, then grave injustice was feared, because the first-born was to receive the lions share of his father's patrimony.

While Tamar travailed, THE ONE put out his hand through his mother's womb and the nurse tied a scarlet thread quickly to signify that "**This one came out first!**" But this was too sensitive for the tiny tot, so he quickly withdrew his hand into the warmth of his mother, and behold, his brother came out and the midwife exclaimed,

***How hast thou broken forth?  
This breach be upon thee:  
therefore his name was called Perez.  
And afterward came out his brother,  
That had the scarlet thread  
upon his hand: and his name was  
called Zerah.***

(HOLY BIBLE) Genesis 38:29-30

---

1. **Knew:** and **know**, often means to have sexual relations in the Bible. **The Good News Bible** puts it succinctly — "And Judah never had **INTERCOURSE** with her again." Once was enough!

**Perez** stands for one who has jumped the queue, one who has done others out of their turn, and **Zerah** means “red” in Hebrew because he had the scarlet thread on his hand.

The recurring question is, What is the moral of this Biblical sexology in this famous chapter **thirty-eight** of the **first book** of the Bible?

God killed Er: the lesson we learnt was “**Reproof!**”

God killed Onan: the lesson again was “**Reproof!**”

Now Judah commits incest with Tamar and begets bastard twins who are honoured to become the great grandfathers of the only “begotten son of God!”

What is the moral? No moral, **so it is immoral!**

Under what heading will you now put this filthy lewd story of a daughter-in-law entrapping her not too innocent father-in-law?

Is it:

No. 1. Your *DOCTRINE*?

2. Your *REPROOF*?

3. Your *CORRECTION* or

4. Your *INSTRUCTION UNTO RIGHTEOUSNESS*?

(*HOLY BIBLE*) 2 Timothy 3:16-17

If we cannot tabulate this filth under any of the four headings to serve some purpose in a Book of God, then we would be forced to invent a **FIFTH** heading. The fifth heading stares us in the face: it is -- **PORNOGRAPHY!**

**Judah**, the father of the Jewish race, from whom we derive the words -- Jew, Judaism, Judea etc and his daughter-in-law Tamar, and their illicit offsprings -- **Perez** and **Zerah** are immortalized in the so-called Book of God for their bastardy:

***The book of the genealogy of  
Jesus Christ, the son of David,***



*the son of Abraham.*

*And Abraham begot Isaac, and Isaac  
begot Jacob; and Jacob begot  
JUDAH and his brethren;*

*And JUDAH begot PEREZ and ZERAH  
of TAMAR . . .*

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 1:1-3

In every Bible that provides a cross-reference, where the words "And **Judah** begot **Perez** and **Zerah** of **Tamar**" occur, the marginal note points to Genesis chapter 38, and that lewd chapter with its raunchy details.

Onan also has made his mark in the "hall of fame" (hall of infamy!). Every reputable dictionary enshrines his envious sexual perversion under the heading -- "**ONANISM:**" The sin of Onan; Coitus interruptus (Derived from Onan, son of Judah — Genesis 38:9).

## **SON OF GOD OR SON OF HOLY GHOST!**

The Christians in their overweening zeal to produce a genealogy for their Lord and Master Jesus, have invented two genealogies, one by St. Matthew and the other by St. Luke. Between these two lists of the ancestors of Jesus (pbuh) they give him SIXTY-SIX fathers and grandfathers. Of these lists no two names are identical, except Joseph (the Carpenter) who can in no way be called the father of Jesus Christ, because Matthew tells us:

*. . . **Before they** (Joseph the carpenter and Mary) **came together** (as husband and wife) **she was found with child BY THE HOLY GHOST.***

*. . . **The angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream saying,***

*Joseph, thou son of David, fear not  
to take unto thee Mary, thy wife;  
for that which is conceived  
in her is **BY THE HOLY GHOST.***

(**HOLY BIBLE**) Matthew 1:18-20

Matthew, within three verses, confirms TWICE that it was THE HOLY GHOST who impregnated Mary. By definition we know that in every language of the world the one who is responsible for impregnating a woman, is the actual father and not the putative (supposed) father. Hence, according to the unequivocal statement of Matthew, the Holy Ghost is the ACTUAL father of Jesus (pbuh) and not God Almighty. The Christian world should review their theology by calling their god, Jesus the Son of the Holy Ghost and **NOT** the Son of God!

## CHAPTER FIVE

# *Pornography*

### EVERY REFERENCE IS FROM THE HOLY BIBLE

1. **SEX BETWEEN FATHER AND HIS TWO DAUGHTERS.** *Night after night both the daughters of the prophet Lot seduce their drunken father and conceive children from him.*  
Genesis 19:30-36
2. **SON COHABITS WITH HIS MOTHER:** *Reuben the eldest son of Jacob, in the absence of his father, had sexual intercourse with his father's wife and Israel (another name for Jacob) heard it. This episode was reported to him, but he did not fume or spank his son for his naughty behaviour. Nor did God have a single word of reproach for him.*  
Genesis 35:22
3. **JUDAH COMMITS INCEST WITH HIS DAUGHTER-IN-LAW:** *She conceives immediately and delivers bastard twins who become the grandfathers of Jesus Christ. Thus God rewards Judah and his progeny.*  
Genesis 38:15-30
4. **AMNON, ONE OF THE SONS OF THE PROPHET DAVID RAPES HIS SISTER:** *"A worthy son of a worthy father" according to the "Holy" Bible, Amnon by a masterful strategem rapes his sister Tamar and God did not punish or reprimand him.*  
2 Samuels 13:5-14
5. **ANOTHER SON OF DAVID, THE MAN ACCORDING TO GOD'S OWN HEART, RAPES HIS MOTHERS (10 in a row) WHOLESALE:** *Absalom*

sets up a tent on the flat palace roof and lays ten of his father's wives and rapes them all one by one, in the "sight of the whole of Israel."

2 Samuel 16:21-23

6. **JERUSALEM (THE JEWS) THE INSATIABLE WHORE:** Neither the Assyrians, the Babylonians nor the Egyptians ("great of flesh") could ever satiate the Jewish whore. Other prostitutes were paid by their clients for their services but this one paid them for being serviced. "She spread out her legs to every passerby!"

Ezekiel 16:23-34

7. **THE TWO SISTERS COMPETING WITH ONE ANOTHER IN THEIR HARLOTRY:** "For she doted upon her paramours (her lovers) whose flesh (genital organs) was as the flesh (genital organs) of donkeys and whose emission is like the emission of horses."

Ezekiel 23:1-35

If these little snippets do not satisfy you, then open these other chapters and verses in your Bible at home.<sup>1</sup> Do not forget to highlight them in RED for easier reference.

- (a) **"She seizes him and kisses him . . .**

**"Come, let us take our fill of love  
till the morning, let us delight ourselves  
with love, FOR MY HUSBAND IS NOT AT  
HOME . . .**

Proverbs 7:7-22

- (b) Says the woman: **"My king was lying  
on his couch . . .**

**"My lover has the scent of myrrh  
AS HE LIES UPON MY BREASTS."**

Song of Songs 1:12-13

---

1. All these juicy snippets are sexually stimulating, but morally and spiritually enervating, and **damning!!**

- (c) ***“By night on my bed I sought him whom my soul loveth.***

***... “when I found him ... I HELD HIM,  
AND WOULD NOT LET HIM GO, until I had  
brought him into my mother’s house  
to the room where I was born.***

Song of Songs 3:1-4

- (d) ***“Behold, you are beautiful my love;***

***Your LIPS are like a scarlet thread ...***

***Your TWO BREASTS are like fawns ...***

***Your rounded THIGHS are like jewels ...***

***... I say: I will go up the palm tree ...***

***Oh, may YOUR BREASTS be like clusters of vine.***

Song of Songs<sup>1</sup> 4:1-7

- (e) ***“And Samson went to Gaza, and there he saw a harlot (a whore, a hooker, a prostitute) and he went in unto her (had sexual intercourse with her).”***

Judges 16:1

George Bernard Shaw, the great British thinker and playwright, remarked on perusing the Holy Bible, that it is “The most dangerous book on earth. Keep it under lock and key: your children must not have access to it.”

And “**The Plain Truth**”<sup>2</sup> magazine, a Christian publication of the “**World Church of Tomorrow**,” in one of its articles on the Bible had this to say: “Many a censor would give the Bible an X-rating.”

To those of you who wish to make a thorough study of the Christian Bible, it is strongly recommended that you master the 2nd part of this volume, entitled “**Combat Kit**” which is your lethal weapon against Bible-thumpers.

---

1. **Song of Songs**: also described in some Bibles as “**The Song of Solomon**,” the wise.

2. It had a reputed circulation of approximately 8,000,000 copies a month for free distribution, when its founder Herbert Armstrong was alive. His successors do not give figures any more.

## INTRODUCTORY COVER PAGE



If you are serious about doing actual **Da'wah** work and meeting the Christian challenge of converting Muslims, then obtain a copy of "**Combat Kit**" in a convenient pocket size version. **FREE OF CHARGE.**

To derive the maximum benefit from this manual you will need a copy of the Bible. Obtain one without delay and affix permanently with glue the copy of your "**Combat Kit**" inside the inner front cover of the Bible and follow the instructions on page 5c.

# COMBAT KIT

AGAINST BIBLE THUMPERS

\* BIBLE  
THUMPERS:

Christians like  
the Jehovah's  
Witnesses etc.  
who harass  
Muslims in  
their own  
homes

*by Ahmed Deedat*

## HOW TO USE THIS COMBAT KIT

In the current crusade, the Christian world has launched its "scud" missile (The Holy Bible) in two thousand different languages. For the Arabs alone they have published their Holy Scriptures in fifteen different scripts and dialects. This is clearly shown on the opposite page, a reproduction from their book — "The Gospel in many Tongues."

This manual will enable you to convert the Christian scud into a "Patriot Missile!" To achieve this, a little exercise is expected of you.

The first thing you must do is to get your own copy of the Bible, then paste this booklet onto the inside front cover of your Bible. Use it as an **index**. The second step is to browse through the index. Thirdly, select a topic.

For example "INCEST." You will find this topic on page 13. Memorize the definition, i.e. "INCEST IS SEXUAL INTERCOURSE BETWEEN TWO PERSONS WHO ARE TOO CLOSELY RELATED," like "between father and . . ." also from page 13.

The first subject under the heading "*INCEST*" refers to Genesis 19:33-35. **Familiarize** yourself with the verses. Encircle the verses with a **RED** pen. On the top of the page write in **RED** — "**INCEST BETWEEN FATHER AND DAUGHTERS.**" At the bottom of the same page write the page number of the **next** reference in your bible, i.e. that of Genesis 35:22. On that page write on top — "*INCEST BETWEEN MOTHER AND SON,*" and circle the verse again in **RED**, at the bottom of that page write the page number of the next reference, i.e. Genesis 38:15-18. Find the verses and circle them in **RED**, and complete the exercise as in cases 1 and 2 above. Thus you are set to confront any **Bible-thumper**.

**Ask the missionary, when approached, the definition of the word "*INCEST*."** Help them with an explanation. Ask them to take **their own** Bible and make them **READ** the verses. Question them as to the moral of the story. There is none! So it is immoral!

Do similar exercises with other topics like "MUHUMMED (PBUH)". Use a **GREEN** pen for headings and circling. For the subject "CONTRA-DICTIONS" use a **YELLOW** marker. Thus you can have your own colour-coded Bible ever ready for use against the Christian missionaries.



**FROM THE BOOK  
"THE GOSPEL IN MANY TONGUES"  
SPECIMENS FROM 875 LANGUAGES  
FIFTEEN DIFFERENT SCRIPTS FOR OUR  
ARAB BROTHERS ALONE!!**

**21 ARABIC.**  
Arabic char. 1871

وَمَا مَنَعَنَا إِذْ نَبَأْنَا أَنَّهُ قَدْ جَاءَ بِرَبِّهِ  
وَمَا مَنَعَنَا إِذْ نَبَأْنَا أَنَّهُ قَدْ جَاءَ بِرَبِّهِ

Hebrew char. For Jews 1892

لَا تَأْتُوا الْبَيْتَ الَّذِي فِيهِ كُنْتُمْ تَعْبُدُونَ  
أَنْتُمْ وَالْأَسْرَافِيَّةُ وَالْمُشْرِكُونَ  
كُلُّ مَنْ يَدْخُلْهُ مِنْكُمْ يَكْفُرْ بِهِ  
وَيَكْفُرْ بِمَا كَفَرَ بِهِ

Tunisian script. Tunisia. 1903

هكذا افول لكم يكون فرح  
فدام ملائكة الله يحاطي واحد يتوب

ARABIC (CARSHUNI).  
Syriac char. For Syrians. 1827

هذا انما الله احدكم كما في  
حفظكم من احدكم من احدكم من احدكم

**22 ARABIC: Algerian Colloquial.** Algeria. 1930

على خاطر هذا حب الله العبادت عليه من سلامه  
المحبه العبدية ما ينقلها من احدكم من احدكم  
له العبادات العبادات

ARABIC: Algerian-Tunisian Colloquial.  
Algeria and Tunisia. 1953

على خاطر هذا حب الله العبادت عليه  
حوسم في ايمته الوحيه العبدية باطن  
ما ينقلها من احدكم من احدكم  
له العبادات العبادات

**23 ARABIC: Egyptian Colloquial.** Egypt. 1940

لان الله حب العالم لدرجة انه وحب ابيه  
الوحيد عشاق ما يهلك كل الي با من به لكن نبي له الحياه  
الابديه

**24 ARABIC: Judæo-Arabic of North Africa**  
(Judæo-Tunisian). Jews in N. Africa

Hebrew char. 1932

עלמא באמר הדרא חב אללה אלדניא  
דחמא אעמא ולדהו אלחודי נאש מא יתהלכו שי  
כל מן יאמן ביהו אללא חבון להו אלחיה  
אלדראימא :

**25 ARABIC: Maltese.** Malta. 1872

Ghaliex Alla hecca hab id dinia  
illi ta l' lben tighu unigenitu,  
sabiex collmin jemmen bih ma  
jintilifix, izda icollu il haja ta  
dejem.

**26 ARABIC: Moorish Colloquial (Mogrebi).**  
Morocco.

Arabic char. 1932

لانه هكذا حب الله الدنيا حتى يحصى اسمه الوحيه  
باشروا بيهلك من كل واحد الي ايمان به لانه يكون له حياه الابديه

Hebrew char. 1920

ללרב אלחודי חבאיע ודווא ודווא חבדו  
M

**27 ARABIC: Palestinian** Palestine. 1946

أبي يعمل ارادة الله هو اخي واخي وامني

**28 ARABIC: Southern Sudan Colloquial.**

S. Sudan  
Arabic char. 1955

وَأَقُولُ لَيْسَ كُمْ يَكُونُ فَرَحٍ مِنْذُ كَذَا  
قَدَامَ مَلَائِكَةِ اللَّهِ يَحَاطِي وَاحِدٌ يَتُوبُ

Roman char. 1927

Fi shán az-zól el ya'mil irádat  
Allah, huwa ákhi wa ukhti wa  
ummi.

**29 ARABIC: Tunisian Colloquial.** Tunisia. 1911

هكذا يقول الله يكون فرح فدام ملائكة  
الله محاسب واحد يتوب

**WHAT IS THE MUSLIM RESPONSE  
TO THIS CHRISTIAN ONSLAUGHT?**

<b>INDEX TO COMBAT KIT</b>	<i>PAGE</i>
1. AIDS and HOMOSEXUALITY	40
2. ARABS and ARABIA: In the Christian Bible	40
3. ABRAHAM	41
4. ABSURDITIES in the Book of God (?) the Holy Bible	42
5. ALCOHOL: A devilish advice in God's (?) Book!?	43
6. APOSTASY: The apostate "thou shalt surely kill him"	43
7. BACA is MECCA	43
8. BASTARD: Occurs only three times in the Bible	44
9. CIRCUMCISION: A perpetual pact with God	44
10. CONTRADICTIONS in the Bible	44
11. DAVID: A man after God's own heart	45
12. ELOHIM means "gods"	45
13. GENEALOGY OF CHRIST	45
14. GOD: Qualities ill-befitting God	46
15.       God with a small "g"	46
16.       His contradictory attributes	46
17.       Is not a fabricator of confusion	47
18.       Further contradictory qualities	47
19. HOLY GHOST: All sects and cults have it (?)	49
20. INCEST: Types and types of incest in the Bible	50
21. ISHMAEL or ISAAC?	53
22. ISRAELITES: Insatiable whores	54
23. JEHOVAH: What's His Name?	55
24. JEREMIAH: Ordained a prophet before his birth	55
25. JESUS (PBUH): Generalities regarding him	55
26.       As a "God"?	58
27.       A racist?	59
28.       Sundry tit-bits	59

<b>INDEX TO COMBAT KIT</b>	<i>PAGE</i>
29. JEWS: A rebellious people	60
30. KETURAH: The third wife of Abraham	61
31. MASSACRE: At the hands of the Jews	61
32. MELCHISEDEK: Outshines Jesus (pbuh)	62
33. MESSIAH: By the dozens in the Bible	62
34. MUHUMMED (PBUH) in the Bible	63
35. ONANISM: Mankind's common trait	64
36. ORIGINAL SIN: The Christian Dogma	64
37. PAUL: Full of cunning and guile	65
38. PIGS: Look for "swine" in the index	65
39. POLYGAMY: Most prophets were polygamous	65
40. PROPHECIES: Unfulfilled	66
41. PROPHETS (BUT NAKED): An indictment of prophethood	66
42. RAPE: Brother rapes sister, and son rapes his mothers	67
43. SABBATH: A standing insult to God	67
44. SARAH: God visits her?	68
45. SLAVERY: Sanctioned by God	68
46. SODOMY: Cause of this sickness	68
47. SONS OF GOD: God has them by the tons in the Bible	69
48. TRINITY: A pagan invention	70
49. SWINE: Flesh of the swine forbidden	71
50. WINE: Look for "Alcohol" in the index	71
51. WHORING: See under "Israelites" in the index	71
52. WOMEN: Chauvinistic treatment	71
53. WORD OF GOD: Not to be added to or deleted from	72
54. WORSHIP: Synonymous with respect, revere, adore, adulate	72

1. **AIDS AND HOMOSEXUALITY:** The Holy Bible gives the cause for this cancer and blight:

***“Professing themselves to be wise,  
they become fools,***

***And changed the glory of the  
incorruptible God into an image made  
like CORRUPTIBLE MAN . . .”*** (i.e. man-gods)

***“Wherefore* (for this reason), ***God also  
gave them up to uncleanness through the  
lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour  
their own bodies between themselves*** (in  
sodomies and lesbianism),**

***“Who changed the truth of God* (to worship  
Him in truth and in Spirit) ***for a lie, and  
worshipped and served the creature*** (born  
of a woman) ***more than the Creator . . .*****

***For this cause God gave them up unto  
vile affections*** (men with men and women  
with women); ***for even their women  
changed the natural use for that which  
is against nature*** (bestialities);

***And likewise also the men, leaving the  
natural use of the woman, burned  
in their lust one toward another, MEN  
WITH MEN . . .”***

(HOLY BIBLE) Romans 1:22-27

2. **ARABS AND ARABIA:** In the Christian Bible.

(a) ***“The burden upon Arabia . . .”***

Isaiah 21:13

BURDEN: meaning the responsibility of the Muslim Arabs, and of course of all Muslims now to spread the religion of Islam.

Isaiah mentioned this after having seen the vision of a chariot of asses and a chariot of camels (Isaiah 21:7).

The chariot of asses turned out to be Jesus (pbuh) who entered Jerusalem riding on two donkeys (Matthew 21:7). Who then was of the “**chariot of camels**”?

It could be none other than Muhammed (pbuh) who came about six hundred years after the advent of Jesus Christ (pbuh). If this conclusion is not accepted, then this prophecy would still remain unfulfilled.

- (b) “. . . **the villages that Kedar doth inhabit**”

Isaiah 42:11

“**Arabia and all the princes of Kedar . . .**”

Ezekiel 27:21

The International Standard Bible Encyclopedia quotes the following from A.S. Fulton:

“. . . OF THE ISHMAELITE TRIBES, KEDAR MUST HAVE BEEN THE MOST IMPORTANT, AND THUS IN LATER TIMES THE NAME CAME TO BE APPLIED TO ALL THE WILD TRIBES OF THE DESERT. IT WAS THROUGH KEDAR (ARAB. KEIDAR) THAT MUSLIM GENEALOGISTS TRACE THE DESCENT OF MUHAMMAD FROM ISHMAEL.”

- (c) “. . . **he** (Muhammed pbuh) **shined forth from mount Paran** (in Arabia), **and he came with ten thousand saints.**” (referring to Muhammed’s conquest of Makkah).

Deuteronomy 33:2

- (d) “. . . **and I** (God Almighty) **will move them** (the Jews) **to jealousy with those** (the Arabs) **which are NOT A PEOPLE** (a non-entity): **I will provoke them** (the Jews) **to anger with a FOOLISH NATION,**” (the pre-Islamic Arabs).

Deuteronomy 32:21

3. **ABRAHAM:** He wedded his own sister (Sarah.) (?)

- (a) “*Why saidst thou* (O Abraham), *she is my sister?*”

*So I might have taken her to me to WIFE . . .  
now take her (Sarah) and go thy way.”*

Genesis 12:19

- (b) *“And yet INDEED she (Sarah) is my sister (!) . . .  
and she became my (Abraham’s) WIFE.”*

Genesis 20:12

*Hagar Abraham’s wife! “. . . and (she, Sarah)  
gave her (Hagar) to her husband TO BE HIS  
WIFE.”*

Genesis 16:3

### Unfulfilled prophecy:

- (a) *“And I will give unto thee (O Abraham), the land  
wherein thou art a stranger, ALL THE LAND OF  
CANAAN (Palestine), for an everlasting possession;  
and I will be their God.”*

Genesis 17:8. Also Genesis 13:15 and Exodus 32:13.

Poor Abraham (pbuh) did not receive a single square  
foot of land FREE!

- (b) *“And he (God Almighty) gave him (Abraham) NO  
inheritance in it, NO, NOT SO MUCH TO SET  
HIS FOOT UPON; but he (God) promised that he  
would give it to him for a possession . . .”*

Acts 7:5

### 4. ABSURDITIES in the Book of God (?) the Holy Bible:

- (a) A **TALKING** ass. Numbers 22:27-28  
 (b) **FOUR** footed fowls. Leviticus 11:20  
 (c) Birth of females a **DOUBLE** pollution. Leviticus 12:1,2,5  
 (d) Shamgar **KILLS** 600 with an ox goad. Judges 3:31  
 (e) Samson **KILLS A THOUSAND** with the  
 jaw bone of a donkey. Judges 15:15-16  
 (f) **A SEVEN-HEADED** leopard. Revelation 13:1-2  
 (g) To eat **SHIT** and drink **PISS**. 2 Kings 18:27 and Isaiah 36:12  
 (h) **DUNG** on your faces. Malachi 2:3  
 (i) To eat cake with **SHIT**. Ezekiel 4:12-15  
 (j) Samson has **SEX** with a whore in Gaza. Judges 16:1

- (k) Ruth **COHABITS** with Boaz in the barn. Ruth 3:4-15
- (l) David **SLEEPS** with a young virgin. 1 Kings 1:1,3

5. **ALCOHOL:** A devilish advice in God's (?) Book?

- (a) **“Alcohol is for people who are DYING, for those who are in MISERY. Let them drink and FORGET their poverty and unhappiness.”** (From the *“Good News Bible in Today’s English”*)

Proverbs 31:6-7

**Alcohol recommended in preference to water!**

- (b) **“Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach’s sake and thine often infirmities.”**

1 Timothy 5:23

**What does the AA (Alcoholics Anonymous) say?**

- (c) Alcohol is the Devil's handiwork says the ...

Holy Qur'an 5:93

6. **APOSTASY:** **“... neither shall thine eye pity him (the apostate), neither shalt thou spare him, neither shalt thou conceal him:**

**“But thou shalt SURELY KILL HIM: thine hand shall be first upon him TO PUT HIM TO DEATH . . .”**

Deuteronomy 13:8,9

7. **BACA IS MECCA:** The Holy Ka'bah built by the prophet Abraham (pbuh) and his son Ishmael (pbuh) is in Mecca.

The name Mecca (Makkah) is mentioned in the Holy Qur'an in 48:24. Another name for Mecca is Bakka, depending on the dialect of the tribe: this is also mentioned once, in Surah 3:96:

**“VERILY, THE FIRST HOUSE (OF WORSHIP) APPOINTED FOR MANKIND WAS THAT IN BAKKA (MECCA), FULL OF BLESSING, AND GUIDANCE FOR ALL PEOPLE.”**

Amazingly enough, this word Bakka is mentioned by the prophet David (pbuh) in the Bible:





- (e) *Did Saul **enquire** of the Lord or **didn't he**?*  
1 Samuels 28:6 vs 1 Chronicles 10:13-14
- (f) *Heaven, **no man** hath ascended* John 3:13  
**Contradicted by:** 2 Kings 2:11 Elijah ascended, and Genesis 5:24 Enoch ascended.
- (g) *Jesus lost "**None**" of his disciples* John 18:9  
**Contradicted by:** *He lost only "**One**"* John 17:12
- (h) *"**ALL**" are sinners* 2 Chronicles 6:36  
**Contradicted by:** *"Whosoever is born of God **DOETH NOT** commit sin . . ."* 1 John 3:9

11. **DAVID: "Man after God's own heart" —**

Commits adultery with Bath-sheba the wife of Uriah:

- (a) *"**And David sent messengers, and took her** (Bath-sheba); **and she came in unto him, and he LAY** (had intercourse) **with her . . .**"* 2 Samuel 11:4
- (b) *David wickedly caused the death of Uriah, the husband of Bath-sheba.* 2 Samuel 11:6-25
- (c) *David shamelessly dances **NAKED**, see in index under "**PROPHETS, but naked.**"*

12. **ELOHIM:** In Hebrew it literally means "**gods**". This word Elohim is consistently translated as "gods" in one hundred and ninety-six places in the Old Testament. The Christians however make an exception when this term occurs the very first time in the Holy Bible. Amazingly this they do in the **very first** book, the **very first** chapter and the **very first** verse of their so-called Book of God:

*"**In the beginning God** (literally it should have been gods) **created the heaven and the earth.**"*

Genesis 1:1

13. **GENEALOGY OF JESUS:** The Christians have contrived two separate lists of the ancestors of Jesus (pbuh); a. Matthew 1:1-16 and b. Luke 3:23-38. In these two lists

consisting of sixty-six names, there is only one name which is common to both and that is of Joseph the carpenter, and he should never have been mentioned since he was never responsible for the conception of Jesus (pbuh).

14. **GOD:** Qualities ill-befitting God —

- (a) A “**hissing**” God (?) Isaiah 5:26, 7:18, Zecharia 10:8
- (b) A “**roaring**” God (?) Isaiah 42:13, Jeremiah 25:30
- (c) A “**barber**” God (?) Isaiah 7:20
- (d) A “**penitent**” God (?) Jeremiah 15:6, Genesis 6:6
- (e) A God “**riding**” a cherub (?) 2 Samuel 22:11
- (f) A God who **murders** 50,070 for looking into a box (?)<sup>1</sup>  
1 SAMUEL 6:19

15. **GOD WITH A SMALL “g”:** In Arabic, Hebrew and Greek there is no differentiation between a capital “G” for God, and a small “g” for god, as in the languages of the Western countries today; yet the Christians have played fast and loose when translating the Bible, i.e.

- (a) *“In whom the **god** (the Devil) of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not . . .”* 2 Cor. 4:4
- (b) *“And the Lord said unto Moses, See, I have made thee a **god** to Pharaoh, and Aaron thy brother shall be thy prophet.”* Exodus 7:1

Compare the above with JOHN 1:1, where the Christians have used capital “G”s and “W”s when referring to Jesus.

16. **GOD:** His contradictory attributes —

- (a) *“No man hath seen God **at any time**”* JOHN 1:18
- (b) *“God” whom no man **hath seen, nor can see . . .”***  
1 Timothy 6:16

---

1. The Newer Versions of the Bible have shamelessly reduced the number to “**seventy**” only!

- (c) “And he (God) said, **Thou canst see my face:**  
for there shall **no man see me, and live.**”  
Exodus 33:20

**Contradicted by:**

- (a) “And the Lord spake unto Moses **face to face,**  
as a man speaketh unto his friend.  
Exodus 33:11
- (b) “And they (Moses, Aaron and seventy others)  
**saw** the God of Israel . . .”  
Exodus 24:10
- (c) “And Jacob called the name of the place *Peniel:*  
for I have **seen** God **face to face,** and my  
life is preserved.”  
Genesis 32:30

**And as a special favour God shows his back parts to Moses:**

“And I (God) will take away my hand, and  
thou **shalt see** my back parts . . .”  
Exodus 33:23

17. **GOD:** Is not a fabricator of confusion —

- (a) “For God is **NOT** the author of confusion . . .”  
1 CORINTHIANS 14:33

**Contradicted by:**

- (a) “. . . I make peace, and **CREATE EVIL . . .**”  
Isaiah 45:7
- (b) “But the spirit of the Lord departed from Saul,  
and **AN EVIL SPIRIT** from the Lord troubled  
him.”  
1 Samuel 16:14
- (c) “And for this cause God shall send them  
a strong delusion, that they should **BELIEVE A LIE.**”  
2 Thessalonians 2:11

18. **GOD:** Further contradictory qualities —

- (a) **GOD AS AN OMNIPOTENT BEING:**

“And Jesus saith . . . for with God **ALL THINGS**  
are possible.”  
Mark 10:27, also Matthew 19:26

**Contradicted by:**

*"And the Lord was with Judah; and he drove out the inhabitants of the mountain; but **COULD NOT** drive out the inhabitants of the valley, because they had **CHARIOTS OF IRON.**"*

Judges 1:19

**(b) GOD'S ANGER ABIDETH FOR A MINUTE:**

*"For his (God's) anger endureth but a **MOMENT.**"*

Psalms 30:5

**Contradicted by:**

*"And the Lord's anger was kindled against Israel, and he made them (the Jews) wander in the wilderness **FORTY YEARS . . .**"*

Numbers 32:13

**(c) GOD DOES NOT SHOW ANY SELF-REPROACH:**

*"God is not a man, that he should lie; neither the son of man, that he should **REPENT . . .**"*

Numbers 23:19

**Contradicted by:**

*"... and the Lord **REPENTED** that he made Saul king over Israel."*

1 Samuel 15:35

Also: *"And the Lord **REPENTED** of the evil which he thought to do unto his people (Israel)."*

Exodus 32:14

**(d) GOD'S MERCY ENDURETH FOR EVER:**

*"For the Lord is good; and his mercy is **EVERLASTING.**"*

Psalms 100:5

**Contradicted by:**

*"I (God) remember that which Amalek did to Israel (four hundred years before) . . . Now go and smite Amalek, and **UTTERLY DESTROY ALL** they have, and spare them not; but slay both man and woman, infant and suckling, ox*

*and sheep, camel and ass (the donkey)."*

1 Samuel 15:3

(e) **GOD DWELLS IN LIGHT:**

*"... (God) dwelling in the **LIGHT** which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see . . ."*

! Timothy 6:16

**Contradicted by:**

*"Then spake Solomon, the Lord said that he would dwell in the **THICK DARKNESS.**"*

1 Kings 8:12

(f) **GOD DOES NOT ENTICE MAN:**

*"Let no man say he is tempted, I am **TEMPTED** of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, **NEITHER TEMPTETH** he any man."*

James 1:13

**Contradicted by:**

*"And it came to pass after these things, that God **DID TEMPT** Abraham . . ."*

Genesis 22:1

19. **HOLY GHOST:** Every sect and denomination of Christian cults claim the "Gift" of the **HOLY GHOST**. This gift is so cheap that 75,000,000 "**BORN AGAIN**" Christians of America are also boasting this possession.

- (a) *"... and he (John the Baptist) shall be filled with the **HOLY GHOST**, even from his mother's womb."*

Luke 1:15

I have not yet been able to establish what this phrase *"... from his mother's womb ..."* really means.

Alas, poor Jesus (peace be upon him) had to mark time for **THIRTY YEARS** after his birth to obtain his gift of the **HOLY GHOST** on his baptism at the hands of John the Baptist (*Matthew 3:16*).

- (b) "... and Elizabeth was filled with the **HOLY GHOST.**" Luke 1:41
- (c) "And his father Zacharias was filled with the **HOLY GHOST . . .**" Luke 1:67
- (d) "... he (Jesus pbuh) breathed on them, and saith unto them, receive ye the **HOLY GHOST.**" John 20:22
- (e) "But he that shall blaspheme against the **HOLY GHOST**<sup>1</sup> hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation." Mark 3:29

20. **INCEST:** "Sexual intercourse between two persons who are too closely related." (New Collins Dictionary). For example, between father and daughter, son and mother, father-in-law and daughter-in-law, brother and sister, etc.

### **INCEST IN GOD'S BOOK (?) BETWEEN A FATHER AND HIS DAUGHTERS:**

- (a) "***That night they*** (both the daughters of Lot) ***gave him*** (their father Lot) ***wine to drink, and the older daughter had INTERCOURSE with him ...***

***"The next day the older daughter said to her sister, I slept with him last night: now let's get him drunk again tonight, and you sleep with him. Then each of us will have a child by our father.***

***"So that night they got him drunk, and the younger daughter had INTERCOURSE with him ...***

***"In this way both of Lot's daughters became PREGNANT by their father."***

Genesis 19:33-35

(From the "Good News Bible in Today's English").

---

1. **HOLY GHOST:** The words "Holy Ghost" here, should read the "**HOLY SPIRIT,**" a reference to the Holy Prophet of Islam, the Holy Prophet Muhammed (pbuh). For a detailed exposition obtain the **FREE** copy of my Book -- "**Muhammed (pbuh) the Natural Successor to Christ (pbuh).**"

In the older Versions, like the King James and the Roman Catholic Versions, "**SEXUAL INTERCOURSE**" is vaguely described as "COLLECTING THE SEED OF OUR FATHER."

**INCEST BETWEEN MOTHER AND SON:**

- (b) ***"While Jacob (Israel) was living in the land, Reuben (his firstborn, his eldest son) had SEXUAL INTERCOURSE with Bilhah, his father's concubine."***<sup>1</sup>

Genesis 35:22.

The older Versions of the Bible, use the word, "lay" for SEXUAL INTERCOURSE.

**INCEST BETWEEN FATHER-IN-LAW AND DAUGHTER-IN-LAW:**

- (c) ***"When Judah saw her (Tamar, his daughter-in-law), he thought she was a prostitute, because she had covered her face.***

***"He went over to her at the side of the road and said, "ALL RIGHT, HOW MUCH DO YOU CHARGE?" (He did not know that she was his daughter-in-law)***<sup>2</sup>

***"She said, what will you give me?" (To have sex with me).***

***"He answered, I WILL SEND YOU A YOUNG GOAT FROM MY FLOCK.***

***"She said, "All right, if you will give me something to keep as a pledge until you send the goat.***

***"... He gave them (the pledges) to her. Then had INTERCOURSE, and she became pregnant."***

Genesis 38:15-18 (Quoted from the "Good News Bible").

1. CONCUBINE and WIFE are synonymous terms in the Bible. Look for it in the index under "KETURAH" (the third wife of Abraham).

2. These words in parenthesis, i.e. within brackets, from "He did not know" to "daughter-in-law" are not in the original Hebrew manuscripts. They are the editors' gloss.

Out of this incestuous relationship between a father-in-law and his daughter-in-law, twins were born, who were destined to become the great-grandfathers of Jesus Christ.

See MATTHEW 1:3

*"And Judas begat Phares and Zarah of Thamar . . ."*

### **INCEST AND RAPE BETWEEN BROTHER AND SISTER:**

(d) *" . . . he took hold of her* (Thamar, his sister, not to be confused with Thamar in "c" above), *and said unto her, Come lie with me* (have sex with me), *my sister.*

*"And she answered him, Nay, my brother* (Amnon, one of the sons of David, the man after God's own heart), *do not force me . . .*

*"But he would not listen to her; and since he was stronger than she was, he overpowered her and RAPED her* (his sister)."

2 Samuels 13:10-14

### **WHOLESALE RAPE AND INCEST BETWEEN SON AND HIS MOTHERS!**

(e) *"So they set up a tent for Absalom* (another son of King David) *on the palace roof, and in the sight of everyone, Absalom went in and had INTERCOURSE with his father's concubines."*<sup>1</sup>

2 Samuels 16:22

*" . . . in the sight of every one"* is rendered in the King James Version as *"in the sight of all Israel."* This as a fulfilment of God's promise to David the king:

*"Thus saith the Lord, Behold, I will raise up evil against thee* (David) *out of thine own house, and I will take THY WIVES before*

---

1. "Concubine" is synonymous with the word "wife" in the Bible. Look for this reference in the index under "KETURAH" the third wife of Abraham.



*thine eyes, and give them unto thy neighbour* (actually thy son) *and he shall lie* (have sexual intercourse) *with thy wives in the sight of sun* (for the whole world to watch the fun).

*For thou didst it secretly* (with Bath-sheba the wife of Uriah): *but I will do this thing before ALL Israel, and BEFORE THE SUN."*

2 Samuel 12:11-12

You can well guess where "**Penthouse**" and "**Playboy**" got their inspiration from. Wherefrom if not from the Book of Books?

(f) For other various types of **incest** see LEVITICUS 18:8-18, 20:11-14 and 17-21.

21. **ISHMAEL OR ISAAC?:** A controversy has raged between the people of the Bible and the House of Islam as to which of the sons of Abraham (pbuh), Ishmael or Isaac was offered as a sacrifice.

The Bible is quite clear in designating the offering:

*"And he (God Almighty) said, Take now thy son, THINE ONLY SON . . . , whom thou lovest, and get thee into the land of Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt offering . . ."*

Genesis 22:2

If at anytime, an offspring of Abraham (pbuh) can be described as "**thine only son**" it could only be Ishmael, because for more than thirteen years, he was the only son and seed of Abraham.

God Almighty acknowledges Ishmael as the "son and seed" of Abraham in no less than twelve places in the Book of Genesis alone. At no time was Isaac the only son and seed of Abraham!

The false pen of the scribe was in the hand of the Jews who edited the Books of Moses (pbuh), as the prophet Jeremiah bewails:

***“How do ye say, We are wise, and the law (the Torah) of the Lord is with us? Lo, certainly in VAIN made he it; the PEN OF THE SCRIBE IS IN VAIN.”***

Jeremiah 8:8

When the Jews are found to convert an Israelite into an Ishmaelite when no motives are involved, then how much easier for them to change the word **“your only son ISHMAEL”** to **“your only son ISAAC!”**

Confirm this Jewish sickness in your Bible:

***“Amasa was a man’s son, whose name was Ithra an ISRAELITE . . .”***

2 Samuel 17:25

**Contradicted by**

***“. . . and the father of Amasa was Jether (same as Ithra) the ISHMAELITE.”***

1 Chronicles 2:17

22. **ISRAELITES:** Insatiable whores —

(a) ***“Thou hast played the WHORE also with the Assyrians. because thou (the Israelites) wast UNSATIABLE; yea, thou hast played the HARLOT with them, and yet couldest NOT BE SATISFIED.”***

Ezekiel 16:28

**WHOREDOMS OF THE 2 SISTERS — AHOLA AND AHOLIBA:**

(b) ***“And she kept LUSTING in the style of concubines belonging to those whose fleshly member (genitals) is as the fleshly member (genitals) of male asses (donkeys) and whose GENITAL ORGAN is as the GENITAL ORGAN of male horses.”***

Ezekiel 23:1-49 (New World Translation)

(c) ***“. . . for the spirit of WHOREDOMS hath cause them (the Jews) to err, and they have gone a-WHORRING from under their God.”***

Hosea 4:12, 6:10 and 9:1

23. **JEHOVAH:** It is an amazing fact, that if Jehovah is the name of God as the Jehovah's Witnesses so boldly claim, then this high-sounding word does not occur even once in the original manuscripts of the twenty-seven books of the New Testament.

For further details obtain a FREE copy of my book — **“What is His Name?”** from the IPCL.

24. **JEREMIAH:** Made a prophet before his birth

- (a) **“Before I formed thee in the belly** (of your mother) **I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations.”**

*Jeremiah 1:5*

**JEREMIAH DECEIVED BY GOD (?):**

- (b) **“O Lord, thou hast DECEIVED me, and I was DECEIVED: thou art stronger than I, and hast PREVAILED: I am in derision daily, everyone mocketh me.”**

*Jeremiah 20:7*

25. **JESUS (PBUH):**

**HIS FIRST MIRACLE IN THE HOLY BIBLE AND THE HOLY QUR'AN:**

*To turn water into wine at the marriage feast at Cana*

*John 2:9*

In the Holy Qur'an his first Miracle was to defend his mother, as an infant, against the false accusations of his enemies. *Surah Mariam 19:30-33*

**HIS INVECTIVES AGAINST THE ELDERS OF HIS PEOPLE:**

- (a) **“Ye hypocrites. . .”** *Matthew 23:13*  
**“Ye wicked and adulterous generation . . .”** *Matthew 12:39*  
**“Ye whited sepulchres . . .”** *Matthew 23:27*  
**“Ye generation of vipers . . .”** *Matthew 23:33*

- (b) He calls his mother **“WOMAN”** JOHN 2:4, the same manner in which he addresses a prostitute,

*“... WOMAN where are those thine accusers?”*

*John 8:10*

**“THE PRINCE OF PEACE,”** boasts that he had not come to bring peace on earth but fire and division!

*“I came to set the earth on fire, and how I wish that it were **ALREADY KINDLED.**”*

*“Do you suppose that I came to bring peace to the world? No, not peace **BUT DIVISION.**”*

LUKE 12:49 and 51

**(JESUS) NOT GOD!** Jesus would not allow anyone even to call him **“good”**, let alone call him god, even with a small **“g”**<sup>1</sup>.

*“One came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?”*

*“And Jesus said unto him, **WHY CALLEST THOU ME GOOD? there is NONE GOOD BUT ONE, THAT IS GOD . . .**”*

*Matthew 19:16-17*

**(JESUS') POWER NOT HIS OWN:**

- (a) *“And Jesus came and spoke unto them, saying, All power is **GIVEN** unto me in heaven and in earth.”*

*Matthew 28:18*

- (b) *“I can of mine own self **DO NOTHING:** as I hear, I judge . . .”*

*John 5:30*

- (c) *“... I by the **FINGER OF GOD** cast out devils . . .”*

*Luke 11:20*

- (d) *“And Jesus lifted up his eyes (towards heaven), and said, Father, I thank thee that **THOU HAST HEARD ME.**”*

---

1. **“Small ‘g’:** See in the index for “GOD” with a small “g”.

*“And I know that **THOU HEAREST ME ALWAYS**: but because of the people which stand by I said (my supplication aloud), that **THEY MAY BELIEVE** that thou hast sent me.*

*“And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.*

*“And he that was dead came forth . . .”*

John 11:41-43

Who then gave life back to Lazarus? The answer is **“GOD!”** For God **heard** the prayer of Jesus, as **“always!”**

**LISTEN NOW TO PETER’S TESTIMONY:**

(e) *“Ye men of Israel (O Jews!) hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, **A MAN** approved of God (meaning a prophet) among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which **GOD DID BY HIM** in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know.”*

Acts 2:22

**WAS LUKE INSPIRED BY GOD TO SAY THAT JESUS (PBUH) WAS THE SON OF JOSEPH?**

*“And Jesus himself began to be ABOUT (“**about**” the Holy Ghost did not know for sure) **thirty** years of age, being (**AS WAS SUPPOSED**) the son of Joseph . . .”*

Luke 3:23

The words “(as was supposed)” appearing in brackets are not in the original Greek manuscript of Luke! These words are a gloss of the translators.

In the different vernacular languages of the world, like Arabic, Afrikaans, Zulu, etc. the words “as was supposed” are retained in the translations but the brackets are removed. Thus by removing the brackets the words become the declaration of Luke, and if Luke was inspired then the words are transmuted into an utterance of God. This is how easily the word of man is transformed into the word of God in Christianity.

**JESUS (PBUH), TOO SELF-CONSIDERATE:**

*“There came a woman with a box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his (Jesus’ pbuh) head . . .*

*“But when his **DISCIPLES** saw it, they had **INDIGNATION, SAYING, to WHAT PURPOSE IS THIS WASTE?**”*

*“For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.*

*“When Jesus understood it, he said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me.*

*“For ye have the **POOR ALWAYS WITH YOU;** but me ye have not always.”*

Matthew 26:7-11

**26. JESUS (PBUH) A “GOD”?:** Powerless

(a) *“I can of mine own self **DO NOTHING . . .**”*

John 5:30

**HE HAD NO KNOWLEDGE OF THE HEREAFTER:**

(b) *“But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, **NEITHER THE SON,** but the Father.”*

Mark 13:32

**HE WAS IGNORANT OF THE SEASONS:**

(c) *“And seeing a fig tree afar of having leaves, he came if happily he might find any thing there on: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves, **FOR THE TIME OF FIGS WAS NOT YET.**”*

Mark 11:13

**JESUS (PBUH) AS A THIRSTY “GOD”?**

(d) *“. . . (Jesus) saith, **I THIRST.**”*

John 19:28

**JESUS (PBUH) AS A WEEPING “GOD”?**

- (e) *“Jesus **WEPT.**”* John 11:35  
Remember that this is the shortest sentence in the Bible! (Only two words).

**IMAGINE A “GOD” BEING TEMPTED BY THE DEVIL (?)**

- (f) *“Where he (Jesus) stayed forty days, being tempted by Satan.”* Mark 1:13

27. **JESUS (PBUH) (A RACIST):** Only came for the Jews

- (a) *“These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them saying, **GO NOT** into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans **ENTER YE NOT.**”*

*“But go ye rather unto the lost sheep of **THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL** (to the Jews only).”*

Matthew 10:5-6

- (b) *“But he (Jesus) answered and said, I am **NOT SENT** but unto the lost sheep of the **HOUSE OF ISRAEL** (the Jews only).*

*“Then came she (the Canaanite woman) and worshipped<sup>1</sup> him, saying Lord, help me (to cure my daughter).*

*“But he answered and said, it is not meet to take the children's bread and **CAST IT TO DOGS** (the non-Jews).”*

Matthew 15:24-26

28. **JESUS (PBUH) (SUNDRY TITBITS):**

**JESUS' (PBUH) SECOND COMING NEVER MATERIALISED:**

*“But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye unto another, for **VERILY** I say unto you, Ye shall **NOT HAVE GONE** over the cities of*

---

1. See word “**WORSHIP**” in the index.

*Israel, till the **SON OF MAN** (referring to himself) **BE COME.**"*

Matthew 10:23

The disciples of Jesus fled and they fled, and have now perished for two thousand years, with no sign of the return of Jesus.

**JESUS (PBUH) SPOKE IN PARABLES TO DECEIVE THE UNINITIATED:**

*"... all these things are done in parables. That seeing they may see, and **NOT** perceive; and hearing they may hear, and **NOT** understand; **LEST** at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven."*

Mark 4:11-12

**HATE AS FOUNDATION OF HIS (JESUS') FAITH:**

*"If any man come to me, and **HATE NOT** his father, and mother, and wife, and children ... **HE CANNOT** be my disciple."*

Luke 14:26

**PETER CONTRADICTS JESUS (PBUH) REGARDING HIMSELF AS "THE ONLY WAY:"**

*"Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the father, but by me."*

John 14:6

**Contradicted by:**

*"Then Peter opened his mouth ... But **IN EVERY NATION** he that feareth him (God), and worketh righteousness, **IS ACCEPTED** with him (God)."*

Acts 10:34-35

29. **JEWES:** A rebellious people

*"**Ye have been rebellious against the Lord from the day that I knew you.**"*

Deuteronomy 9:24



**A STIFF-NECKED PEOPLE:**

*“For I know thy rebellion, and thy stiff neck: behold, while I am yet alive with you this day, ye have been rebellious against the Lord; and how much more after my death?”* Deuteronomy 31:27

**A SECOND BONDAGE IN EGYPT:**

*“And the Lord shall bring you (the Jews) into Egypt again with ships, by the way whereof I spake unto you (Jews), Thou shalt see it no more again: and there ye shall be sold unto your enemies for bondmen and bondwomen, and NO MAN shall buy you.”* Deuteronomy 28:68

*“... now will he (the Lord) remember their (the Jews’) iniquity, and visit their (the Jews’) sins: they shall RETURN to Egypt (for a second bondage).”* Hosea 8:13

**THE JEWS TO BE SUBSTITUTED:**

*“Therefore said I (Jesus) unto you (Jews), The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.”* Matthew 21:43

30. **KETURAH:** The third wife of Abraham

*“Then again Abraham took a **WIFE**, and her name was Keturah.”* Genesis 25:1

Keturah being the **WIFE** of Abraham is being contradicted in the self-same **“Word of God”** — i.e. 1 CHRONICLES 1:32, where Keturah is described as Abraham’s **CONCUBINE**. Here is an extra contradiction in the Bible, unless **“WIFE”** and **“CONCUBINE”** are synonymous terms.

31. **MASSACRE:** At the hands of the Jews —

(a) *“Now therefore **KILL** every male among the little ones, and **KILL** every woman (female) that hath*

*known man by lying (having sex) with him.*

*“But keep **ALIVE** for yourselves all the **GIRLS** and all the women who are **VIRGINS.**”*

NUMBERS 31:17-18

And the Jews salvaged for themselves 32,000 virgins, verse 35; see also verse 40.

(b) *“**But of the cities of these people, which the Lord thy God doth give thee for an inheritance, thou (O Jews) shalt save alive NOTHING that BREATHEETH.**”*

Deuteronomy 20:16

(c) *“**And they (the Jews) UTTERLY DESTROYED all that was in the city, both man and woman, young and old, ox and sheep, and ASS, with the edge of the sword.**” (Even donkeys were not spared!)*

Joshua 6:21

(d) *“**He (Joshua) let NONE remain alive.**”*

Joshua 10:28

32. **MELCHIZEDEK:** This High Priest of Salem has qualities which outshines that of even Jesus Christ (peace be upon him).

*“**Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days nor end of life . . .**”*

Hebrews 7:3

(These attributes only befit God!)

33. **MESSIAH:** Translated “Christ” —

Messiah is a very common noun in Hebrew. Translated into Greek it became “Christos”, which in plain English means **ANOINTED!** Everywhere the word “**anointed**” appears in the English translation of the Bible (any Version) that word in the Hebrew original is invariably the word “**MESSIAH!**” **Here are a few ready examples:**

(a) *“**I am the God of Beth-el, where thou ANOINTEDEST (messiah) the PILLAR . . .**” (Christ Pillar!)*

Genesis 31:13

- (b) *“And Moses took the **ANOINTING** (messiah) **OIL**, and **ANOINTED** (messiah) the **TABERNACLE . . .**”*  
(Christ Oil! and Christ Tabernacle!)  
Leviticus 8:10
- (c) *“... he (the Lord) shall give strength unto his king, and exalt the **HORN** of his **ANOINTED** (messiah) . . .”* (Christ Horn!)  
1 Samuel 2:10
- (d) *“Thou art the **ANOINTED** (messiah) **CHERUB . . .**”*  
(Christ Cherub!)  
Ezekiel 28:14
- (e) *“Thus saith the Lord to his **ANOINTED** (messiah) **CYRUS . . .**”* (Christ Cyrus!)  
Isaiah 45:1

(God addresses even a pagan king as His Messiah!)

34. **MUHUMMED (PBUH):** Is a true prophet of God according to the Bible

- (a) *“... **Every spirit** (meaning every prophet) **that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in flesh is of God.**”*  
1 John 4.2

Compare with Holy Qur'an 3:45 and many other Qur'anic references where Jesus (pbuh) is referred to as the **CHRIST**.

**MUHUMMED (PBUH) MENTIONED BY NAME IN THE BIBLE:**

- (b) *“**His mouth is most sweet: yea, he is (Muhummed-im) altogether lovely, this is my beloved, and this is my friend, O daughters of Jerusalem.**”*  
Song of Solomon 5:16

From the original Hebrew manuscript the word **“MUHUMMEDIM”**, is translated as **“altogether lovely”** which is actually the word MUHUMMED with **“im”** added. **“IM”** is the plural of respect in the Hebrew language.

**MUHUMMED A “COMFORTER” LIKE JESUS, (PEACE BE UPON THEM):**

- (c) *“**And I will pray the father, and he shall give***

***you ANOTHER Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever."***

John 14:16

Jesus (pbuh) was the first Comforter, and **ANOTHER** would have to be one like him, of the same kind as Jesus, a man and not a Ghost.

35. **ONANISM:** "The withdrawal of the penis from the vagina before ejaculation." (The New Collins Dictionary). Medical term — "coitus interruptus."

***"And Judah said to Er's (deceased) brother Onan. Go and sleep (have sex) with your brother's widow . . .***

***"But Onan knew that the children would not belong to him (i.e. would not carry his name), so when he had INTERCOURSE with his brother's widow (Tamar), he let the semen (the older Versions call it "seed") spill on the ground, so that there would be no children (no name) for his brother."***

Genesis 38:8-9

36. **ORIGINAL SIN:** The Christian dogma that sin is inherited is against all ethics, morality and common sense. It is against the explicit pronouncement of God:

***"The soul that sinneth, it shall die. The son (the progeny of Adam) shall not bear the iniquity of the father (Adam), neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son; the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him.***

***But if the wicked will turn from all his sins that he hath committed, and keep all my statutes, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live; HE SHALL NOT DIE.***

Ezekiel 18:20-21

- (a) IN ISLAM THE NOTION OF ORIGINAL SIN IS REGARDED AS INCONSISTENT WITH THE JUSTICE OF ALLAH. HOW COULD A JUST AND LOVING GOD MAKE AN INNOCENT CHILD RESPONSIBLE FOR, OR AT LEAST BEAR THE GUILT FOR THE SINS OF A DISTANT ANCESTOR? (Steve A. Johnson)
- (b) NO HEATHEN TRIBE HAS CONCEIVED SO GROTESQUE AN IDEA, INVOLVING AS IT DOES THE ASSUMPTION, THAT MAN WAS BORN WITH A HEREDITARY STAIN UPON HIM, AND THIS STAIN FOR WHICH HE WAS NOT PERSONALLY RESPONSIBLE WAS TO BE ATONED FOR, AND THAT THE CREATOR OF ALL THINGS HAD TO SACRIFICE HIS ONLY BEGOTTEN SON TO NEUTRALISE THIS MYSTERIOUS CURSE. (Major Yeats Brown)

That Jesus (pbuh) himself regarded children as innocent and pure, and NOT BORN IN SIN, is clear from his reported saying:

***“Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not, for of such is the kingdom of God . . .”***

Mark 10:14

- 37. **PAUL:** On his own admittance being cunning, used deceit:

*“But be it so, I did not burden you: nevertheless, being crafty, I CAUGHT YOU WITH GUILE.”*<sup>1</sup>

2 Corinthians 12:16

- 38. **PIGS:** See “Swine” in the index

- 39. **POLYGAMY:** Solomon the wise had a thousand wives and concubines:

- (a) ***“And he (Solomon) had seven hundred wives, and three hundred concubines: and his wives turned away his heart (towards other gods).”***

1 Kings 11:3

---

1. **GUILE:** means ruse, sharp practice, treachery, trickery and wiliness.

- (b) Abraham the friend of God had more than one wife; and so had Israel (Jacob) and David the king.

There is not a single word of reproach in the "Book of God" the Holy Bible against polygamous marriages.

40. **PROPHECIES:** Empty threats —

- (a) ***"But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil thou (O Adam) shalt not eat of it: for IN THE DAY that thou eatest thereof thou shalt SURELY DIE."***

Genesis 2:17

**Contradicted by:**

- (b) ***"And all the days that Adam lived were NINE HUNDRED AND THIRTY YEARS: and he died."***

Genesis 5:5

Amazing! In the language of God (?) "**In the day**" does not mean "**that very day**" but centuries later (?).

According to the Holy Bible the devil was more truthful about the consequence of eating the "**forbidden fruit**" he had assured Eve —

- (c) ***"And the serpent (the devil) said unto the woman, Ye shall NOT SURELY DIE."***

Genesis 3:4

41. **PROPHETS (BUT NAKED):** If such are the priests, God bless the congregation —

- (a) ***"And he (Noah) drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he lay NAKED within his tent."***

Genesis 9:21

- (b) ***"And he (Saul) stripped off his clothes also, and prophesied before Samuel in like manner, and lay down NAKED all that day and all that night. Wherefore they say, Is Saul also among the prophets?"***

1 Samuel 19:24

(c) ***“How glorious was the king of Israel (David) today, who UNCOVERED (became naked) himself to day in the eyes of the handmaids of his servants, as one of the vain fellows shamelessly UNCOVERETH himself!”***  
 2 Samuel 6:20

(d) ***“And the Lord said, like as my servant Isaiah hath walked NAKED and barefoot three years . . . “... young and old, NAKED and barefoot, even with their buttocks UNCOVERED, to the shame of Egypt.”***  
 Isaiah 20:3-4

42. **RAPE:** Brother rapes and commits incest with his sister —

(a) ***“Howbeit he (Amnon, one of the sons of David) would not hearken unto her (his sister Tamar’s) voice: but, being stronger than she, forced (raped) her, and LAY (had sex) with her.”***  
 2 Samuel 13:14

**Son commits incest and rapes his mothers wholesale!**

(b) ***“So they spread Absalom (another of the sons of David) a tent upon the top of the house; and Absalom WENT IN (had intercourse) unto his father’s concubines (same as “wives”, see KETURAH in the index) in the sight of ALL ISRAEL.”***  
 2 Samuel 16:22

43. **SABBATH:** Sabbath as a standing insult to God in the Bible —

***“... for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, and on the seventh day he rested, and WAS REFRESHED.”***  
 Exodus 31:17

**On the contrary the Holy Qur’an states:**

**“His throne doth extend  
 Over the heavens  
 And the earth, and He feeleth**

**No fatigue in guarding  
And preserving them  
For He is the most High,  
The Supreme (in glory)."**

*Holy Qur'an 2:255*

44. **SARAH:** The Holy Bible does not even spare God from illicit sexual aspersions being ascribed to Him:

In the case of the conception of Jesus Christ (peace be upon him), God Almighty arranged for Mary to conceive Jesus by the intervention of the Holy Ghost, as witnessed in the Bible:

- (a) ***"The Holy Ghost shall COME UPON thee*** (the question is, how?), ***and the power of the most High shall OVERSHADOW thee*** (again, how?).

*Luke 1:35*

Whereas in the case of Isaac, his conception took place in the womb of Sarah by the direct intervention of God himself, as recorded in His (?) Holy Book:

- (b) ***"And the Lord VISITED Sarah, as he had PROMISED; and FULFILLED what he had SPOKEN. And Sarah CONCEIVED . . ."***

*Genesis 21:1-2*

45. **SLAVERY:** Sanctioned by God —

***"And ye, shall take them*** (the slaves) ***as an inheritance for your children after you, to inherit them*** (the slaves) ***for a possession; they shall be your BONDMEN*** (slaves) ***for ever . . ."***

*Leviticus 25:46*

46. **SODOMY:** The Bible's reason why human beings become lesbians and homosexuals

*"Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and*



**WORSHIPPED** and **SERVED** the creature (like men and monkeys) *more than the Creator . . .*

**"BECAUSE THEY DO THIS** (worshipping men and monkeys), *God has given them over to shameful passions. Even women pervert the natural use of their sex by unnatural acts (like lesbianism and bestiality).*

*"In the same way . . . the men burn with passion for one another (as sodomites and homosexuals) . . ."*

Romans 1:25-27  
(The Good News Bible).

47. **SONS OF GOD:** The Bible ascribes sons by the tons<sup>1</sup> to God.

(a) *"Which was the son of Enos, which was the son of Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was the **SON OF GOD.**"*

Luke 3:38

(b) *"That the **SONS OF GOD** saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took wives of all which they chose.*

*"... when the **SONS OF GOD** came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown."*

Genesis 6:2 and 4

(c) *"... Thus saith the Lord, Israel is **MY SON** even my **FIRSTBORN.**"*

Exodus 4:22

(d) *"... and Ephraim is my **FIRSTBORN.**"<sup>2</sup>*

Jeremiah 31:9

---

1. **TONS:** A ton is 2000 lbs weight, that is about a thousand kilograms

2. **"FIRST BORN:"** How can there be two **"firstborns"**?

(e) "... Thou (O David) **ART MY SON**; this day have I (God) **BEGOTTEN**<sup>1</sup> thee."

*Psalms 2:7*

(f) "For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the **SONS OF GOD.**"

*Romans 8:14*

48. **TRINITY:** According to the Athanasian Creed:

"The Father is God, the Son is God, and the Holy Ghost is God, and yet there are not three Gods but one God."

In this Holy Trinity: "The three Persons are CO-EQUAL and CO-ETERNAL: all alike are UNCREATED and OMNIPOTENT."  
(**The Catholic Encyclopedia**)

Thus the Trinity is considered to be: "**one God in three Persons.**"

There is only one verse in the whole of Holy Scripture called the Bible which unequivocally supports this Christian dogma, and that is:

***"For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and Holy Ghost; and these three are one."***

*The First Epistle of John 5:7*

Dr. C.I. Scofield, D.D. backed by eight other D.D.'s in a footnote to this verse opine:

"IT IS GENERALLY AGREED THAT THIS VERSE HAS NO MANUSCRIPT AUTHORITY AND HAS BEEN INSERTED."

The fundamentalist Christians still retain this fabrication whereas, in all the modern translations including the Revised Standard Version (RSV) this pious fraud has been

---

1. "**BEGOTTEN**" How can God beget David at the age of forty? "**This day**"?

unceremoniously expunged, thus confirming this Quranic refutation:

**“They do blaspheme who say:  
 God is one of three  
 In a Trinity: for there is  
 no God except one God.  
 If they desist not  
 From their word (of blasphemy),  
 Verily a greivous penalty  
 Will befall the blasphemers  
 Among them.”**

*Holy Qur'an 5:7c*

Thank God! The Christians are willy-nilly discovering pagan forgeries in their “Word of God”, but they are still dragging their feet.

49. **SWINE:** The flesh of the swine forbidden —

(a) *“Of their flesh (of the swine) shall ye **NOT EAT**, and their carcase ye shall **NOT TOUCH**; they are unclean to you.”*

*Leviticus 11:8*

**Jesus (pbuh) destroyed 2000 pigs to heal one man —**

(b) *“And forthwith Jesus gave them leave (permission). And the unclean spirits (the devils) went out, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand); and were choked in the sea.”*

*Mark 5:13*

50. **WINE:** Look for “**Alcohol**” in the index

51. **WHORING:** See under “**ISRAELITES**” in the index.

52. **WOMEN:** Forbidden to open their mouths in the Church —

(a) “. . . for it is a **SHAME** for women to speak in the Church.”

1 Corinthians 14:34-35

(b) To **chop off her hands** for saving her husband's life.

Deuteronomy 25:11-12

(c) Her **husband to rule** over her.

Genesis 3:16

The **head of the woman** is the man.

1 Corinthians 11:3

Man can **sell** his daughter.

Exodus 21:7

53. **WORD OF GOD:** Not to add or delete a word from it.

**“Whatever thing I command you, observe to do it; and thou shalt not add thereto, nor diminish from it.”**

Deuteronomy 12:32

54. **WORSHIP:** The word “**worship**” in Mark 5:6 and many other places means to adore, to adulate, to respect, to revere. Compare the same verse with LUKE 8:28 where the word “**worship**” is alternatively recorded as “**FELL DOWN BEFORE HIM.**”

PART THREE

# IS THE BIBLE GOD'S WORD

BIBLE

by Ahmed Deedat

Establish the "KINGDOM OF GOD" on earth  
as prayed for by Jesus (peace be upon him)



# THE FUTURE WORLD CONSTITUTION

AND WHAT IT SAYS ABOUT THE ORIGIN OF MAN

*Of mankind  
I've created you  
From a single (pair)  
Of a male and a female,  
I've made you into  
Nations and tribes,  
That ye may recognise  
one another*

*(Not that ye may  
despise each other).  
Verily, the most  
Honoured of you  
In the sight of God  
Is (he who is) the  
Best in conduct*

Holy Quran: 49: 13

This Book has  
a solution to the  
problems of mankind.  
It will "Guide  
you into all truth"  
JESUS CHRIST

This Book has  
over six thousand  
explanatory  
notes alone!

You can now own this Encyclopaedia of Islam  
"The Future World Constitution" consisting of 1824 pages  
for only £6 UK., \$10 USA., R10 RSA., and \$12 US Middle East.

Get your **FREE** copy of the book -  
"THE WAY TO THE QUR'AN"

**IPCI**

ISLAMIC PROPAGATION CENTRE  
INTERNATIONAL

124 QUEEN STREET, DURBAN, 4001 RSA.  
PHONE: (27-31) 3060026 FAX: (27-31) 3040326

## CHAPTER ONE

### *What They Say*

#### CHRISTIANS CONFESS

Dr. W. Graham Scroggie of the MOODY BIBLE INSTITUTE, Chicago, one of the most prestigious Christian Evangelical Mission in the world, answering the question — “**Is the Bible the Word of God?**” (also the title of his book), under the heading: **IT IS HUMAN, YET DIVINE**, says on page 17:

“Yes, the Bible is **human**, though some, out of zeal which is not according to knowledge,<sup>1</sup> have denied this. Those books<sup>2</sup> have passed through the **minds of men**, are written in the **language of men**, were penned by the **hands of men**, and bear in their style the **characteristics of men.**” (Emphasis added).

Another erudite Christian scholar, Kenneth Cragg, the Anglican Bishop of Jerusalem, says on page 277 of his book, “**The Call of the Minaret**”:

“Not so the New Testament<sup>3</sup> . . . There is **condensation** and **editing**;<sup>4</sup> there is **choice**, **reproduction** and **witness**. The Gospels have come through the **mind of the Church behind the authors**. They represent **experience** and **history.**”<sup>5</sup>

If words have any meaning, do we need to add another word of comment to prove our case? No! But the professional propagandists, after letting the cat out of the bag, still have the face to try to make their readers believe that they have proved beyond the shadow of any doubt that the Bible is the “irrefragable<sup>6</sup> Word

---

1. Out of ignorance.

2. The Bible is not just a Book. It is a selection and compilation of many books.

3. As opposed to the Qur'an.

4. Another word for interpolating.

5. Emphasis are mine.

6. Indisputable.

of God." Their semantic gymnastics — equivocating, and playing with words — is amazing!

Both these Doctors of Religion are telling us in the clearest language humanly possible that the Bible is the handiwork of man, all the while pretending that they are proving to the contrary. An old Arab saying goes: "IF SUCH ARE THE PRIESTS, GOD BLESS THE CONGREGATION."

With this sort of drivel, the hot-gospeller and the Bible-thumper is "inspired" to harry the "heathen."<sup>1</sup> A theological student — a not-yet-qualified young evangelist — from the University of Witwatersrand, became a frequent visitor to the Newtown Mosque in Johannesburg, with the "noble" thought of "witnessing"<sup>2</sup> to the members of its congregation. When I was introduced to him, (and having learnt his purpose), I invited him to lunch at my brother's residence — a stone's throw from the Mosque. While discussing the authenticity of the Bible over the dinner table and sensing his stubborn dogmatism, I put out a feeler: "Your **Professor** Geyser, (The Head of the Department of Theology) does not believe that the Bible to be the Word of God." Without the slightest surprise he answered, "I know." Now I personally had no knowledge of the Professor's conviction about the Bible. I had only assumed so from a controversy which raged around him about the "Divinity of Christ."<sup>3</sup> He had taken issue with the orthodox believers on this point some years ago. I continued further, saying, "Your **lecturer** does not believe the Bible as being God's Word." The young evangelist, responded again, "I know," but he continued this time with the words, "**but I believe** that it is the Word of God!" There is no real remedy for such people. Even Jesus bewailed this sickness:

- 
1. See "**How Lost are the Heathen?**" by the same MOODY PRESS of Dr. Scroggie.
  2. When the Christian talks of "witnessing" he means propagating, proselytizing, converting.
  3. This subject will be extensively dealt with, **Insha-Allah** in my next publication — "**CHRIST IN ISLAM**" in Volume III of this series.



**“... seeing they see not;  
and hearing they hear not,  
neither do they understand.”**

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 13:13

Al-Qur'an, the Holy Book of God, also condemns this mulish mentality:

**DEAF, DUMB AND BLIND,**

صُمٌّ بَكْمٌ عُمْيٌ

**THEY WILL NOT RETURN  
(TO THE PATH).**

فَهُمْ لَا يَرْجِعُونَ ۝

(SÚRA BAQARA) Holy Qur'an 2:18

These pages are now addressed to those sincerely humble souls, who are genuinely interested in seeking the Light of God, and who wish to be guided by it. As for the other, with a sickness in their souls, the facts presented herein can only increase the disease of their hearts.

## CHAPTER TWO

### *The Muslims' Standpoint*

#### PRESUMPTUOUS CHRISTIANS

Whether Catholic, Protestant or a "Cultist," of the thousand-and-one-sects — and — denominations-of-Christianity, never will you find a missionary who will not, **prima facie**, presuppose that his potential convert accepts his "Holy Bible" as the book of final authority on every religious opinion. The only answer the prospective proselyte has, is to quote verses from the Bible which are contradictory to the missionary's or debate their interpretations.

#### THE DOGGED QUESTION

When the Muslim proves his point from the Christian's own Holy Scripture, and when the professional priest, parson or predikant cannot refute the arguments — the inevitable Christian evasion is — "DO YOU ACCEPT THE BIBLE AS GOD'S WORD?" On the face of it, the question seems to be an easy one, but a simple "Yes" or "No" cannot be given as an answer. You see, one has first to explain one's position. But the Christian will not give one the opportunity. He gets impatient. "Answer — 'Yes or No!" he insists. The Jews did the same to Jesus two thousand years ago, except that surprisingly he was not strait-jacketed, as is the fashion today!

The reader will readily agree that things are not always either BLACK or WHITE. Between these two extremes there are various shades of GREY. If you say "Yes" to his question, then it would mean that you are prepared to swallow everything HOOK, LINE and SINKER, from **Genesis** to **Revelation** from his Bible. If you respond with a "No," he quickly unhooks himself from the facts you have presented, and rallies support from his co-religionists in the audience with: "You see, this man does not believe in the

Bible! What right has he to expound his case from **our** Book?" With this type of argument he rests content that he has safely evaded the issue. What is the **Muballigh**<sup>1</sup> to do? He has to explain his position **vis-á-vis** the Bible, as he ought to do.

### THREE GRADES OF EVIDENCE

We Muslims have no hesitation in acknowledging that in the Bible, there are three different kinds of witnessing recognizable without any need of specialized training. These are:

1. You will be able to recognize in the Bible what may be described as "**The Word of God.**"
2. You will also be able to discern what can be described as the "**Words of a Prophet of God.**"
3. And you will most readily observe that the bulk of the Bible is the records of eye witnesses or ear witnesses, or people writing from hearsay. As such they are the "**Words of a Historian.**"

You do not have to hunt for examples of these different types of evidences in the Bible. The following quotations will make the position crystal-clear:

The **FIRST** Type:

- (a) "*I will raise them up a prophet . . . and I will put my words in . . . and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him.*" (**Holy Bible**) Deuteronomy 18:18
- (b) "*I, even I, am the Lord, and beside **me** there is no saviour.*" (**Holy Bible**) Isaiah 43:11
- (c) "*Look unto **me**, and be ye saved, all the end of the earth: for **I** am God, and there is none else.*" (**Holy Bible**) Isaiah 45:22

---

1. **MÚBALLIGH:** The Propagator of Islam

Note the first person pronoun singular (emphasised) in the above references, and without any difficulty you will agree that the statements seem to have the sound of being GOD'S WORD.

The **SECOND** Type:

- (a) "**Jesus cried** with a loud voice, saying **Eli, Eli, lama sabachtani? . . .**" (*Holy Bible*) Matthew 27:46
- (b) "And **Jesus answered him**, The first of all the commandments is, **Hear, O Israel; the Lord our God is one Lord:**" (*Holy Bible*) Mark 12:29
- (c) "And **Jesus said** unto him, **Why callest thou me good? There is none good but one, that is God.**" (*Holy Bible*) Mark 10:18.

Even a child will be able to affirm that: Jesus "**cried**," Jesus "**answered**," and Jesus "**said**," are the words of the one to whom they are attributed, i.e. the WORDS OF A PROPHET OF GOD.

The **THIRD** Type:

*"And seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves, **he**, (JESUS) came, if haply **he** (JESUS) might find anything thereon: and when **he** (JESUS) came to it, **he** (JESUS) found nothing but leaves . . ."* (*Holy Bible*) Mark 11:13

The bulk of the Bible is a witnessing of this **THIRD** kind. These are the words of a **third** person. Note the underlined pronouns. They are not the Words of God or of His prophet, but the WORDS OF A HISTORIAN.

For the Muslim it is quite easy to distinguish the above types of evidence, because he also has them in his own faith. But of the followers of the different religions, he is the most fortunate in this that his various records are contained in **separate** Books!

- ONE:** The first kind — THE WORD OF GOD — is found in a Book called **The Holy Qur'an**.
- TWO:** The second kind — THE WORDS OF THE PROPHET OF GOD, (Muhummed, may the peace and blessings of Allah be upon him) are recorded in the Books of Traditions called **The Hadith**.
- THREE:** Evidence of the third kind abounds in different volumes of Islamic history, written by some of high integrity and learning, and others of lesser trustworthiness, but the Muslim advisedly keeps his Books in separate volumes!

The Muslim keeps the above three types of evidence jealously apart, in their proper gradations of authority. He never equates them. On the other hand, the "Holy Bible" contains a motley type of literature, which comprises the embarrassing kind, the sordid, and the obscene — all under the same cover. A Christian is forced to concede equal spiritual import and authority to all, and is thus unfortunate in this regard.

## CHAPTER THREE

### *The Multiple Bible Versions*

It will now be easy for us to analyze a Christian's claim about his Holy Book.

#### **SEPARATING THE WHEAT FROM THE CHAFF**

Before we scrutinize the various versions, let us clarify our own belief regarding the Books of God. When we say that we believe in the **Tauraat**, the **Zaboor**, the **Injeel** and the **Qur'an**, what do we really mean? We already know that the Holy Qur'an is the infallible Word of God, revealed to our Holy Prophet Hazrat Muhammed Mustapha (Peace be upon him) word for word, through the agency of the Archangel Jibraeel (known as Gabriel in English), and perfectly preserved and protected from human tampering for the past fourteen hundred years!<sup>1</sup> Even hostile critics of Islam have grudgingly vouched for the purity of the Holy Qur'an: **"THERE IS PROBABLY IN THE WORLD NO OTHER BOOK WHICH HAS REMAINED TWELVE CENTURIES (now fourteen) WITH SO PURE A TEXT."** — (Sir William Muir)

The **Tauraat** we Muslims believe in is not the "Torah" of the Jews and the Christians, though the words — one Arabic, the other Hebrew — are the same. We believe that whatever the Holy Prophet Moses (Peace be upon him) preached to his people, was the revelation from God Almighty, but that Moses was **not** the author of those "books" attributed to him by the Jews and the Christians.<sup>2</sup>

- 
1. Whether Muslim or non-Muslim, you do not have to accept this claim on faith alone. You can verify the fact that Al-Qur'an is the Word of God. Write for your free copy of the book — **"AL-QUR'AN — THE MIRACLE OF MIRACLES"**.
  2. More evidence on page 101 — "Moses not the author of the Biblical **"Torah."**

**Likewise, we believe that the Zaboor** was the revelation of God granted to Hazrat Dawood (David) (Peace be upon him), but that the present Psalms associated with his name are **not** that revelation. The Christians themselves do **not** insist that David is the sole author of “his” Psalms.<sup>1</sup>

What about the **Injeel**? INJEEL means the “Gospel” or “good news” which Jesus Christ preached during his short ministry. The “Gospel” writers often mention Jesus going about and preaching the Gospel (the **Injeel**):

1. *“And Jesus went . . . preaching the **gospel** . . . and healing every disease among the people.” (Holy Bible) Matthew 9:35*
2. *“... but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the **gospel's**, the same shall save it.” (Holy Bible) Mark 8:35*
3. *“... preached the **gospel** . . .” (Holy Bible) Luke 20:1*

The “gospel” is a frequently-used word, but what Gospel did Jesus preach? Of the 27 books of the New Testament, only a small fraction can be accepted as the words of Jesus. The Christians boast about the Gospels according to St. Matthew, according to St. Mark, according to St. Luke and according to St. John, but there is not a single Gospel “**according**” to (St.) Jesus himself! We **sincerely** believe that everything Christ (May the peace and blessings of God be upon him) preached was from God. That was the **Injeel**, the good news and the guidance of God for the Children of Israel. In his lifetime Jesus never wrote a single word, nor did he instruct anyone to do so. What passes off as the “GOSPELS” today are the works of anonymous hands!

The question before us is: “**Do you accept that the Bible is God’s Word?**” The question is really in the form of a challenge. The questioner is not simply seeking enlightenment. The question is posed in the spirit of a debate. We have every right to demand

---

1. See page 139, Christian “Brains Trust” confess — “Author: Principally David, **though there are other writers.**”

in a similar vein — “Which Bible are you talking about?”, we may ask. “Why, there is only ONE Bible!” he mutters.

### THE CATHOLIC BIBLE

Holding the “**Douay**,” Roman Catholic Version of the Bible aloft in my hand, I ask, “Do **YOU** accept **THIS** Bible as the Word of God?” For reasons best known to themselves, the Catholic Truth Society have published their Version of the Bible in a very short, stumpy form. This Version is a very odd proportion of the numerous Versions in the market today. The Christian questioner is taken aback. “What Bible is that?” he asks. “Why, I thought you said that there was only ONE Bible!” I remind him. “Y-e-s,” he murmurs hesitantly, “but what Version is that?” “Why, would that make any difference?” I enquire. Of course it does, and the professional preacher knows that it does. He is only bluffing with his “ONE Bible” claim.

The Roman Catholic Bible was published at Rheims in 1582, from Jerome's Latin Vulgate and reproduced at Douay in 1609. As such the **RCV** (Roman Catholic Version) is the oldest Version that one can still buy today. Despite its antiquity, the whole of the Protestant world, including the “cults”\* condemn the **RCV** because it contains seven extra “books” which they contemptuously refer to as the “**apocrypha**,” i.e. of DOUBTFUL AUTHORITY. Notwithstanding the dire warning contained in the Apocalypse, which is the last book in the **RCV** (renamed as “**Revelation**” by the Protestants), it is “revealed”:

**“... If any man shall add  
to these things (or delete)  
God shall add unto him the plagues  
written in this Book.”**

(**HOLY BIBLE**) Revelation 22:18-19

But who cares! They do not really believe! The Protestants have bravely **expunged seven whole books** from their Book of God!

---

\* This disparaging title is given by the orthodox to Jehovah's Witnesses, the Seventh Day Adventists and a thousand other sects and denominations with whom they do not see eye to eye.



The outcasts are:

- The Book of Judith
- The Book of Tobias
- The Book of Baruch
- The Book of Esther, etc.

## THE PROTESTANT BIBLE

Sir Winston Churchill has some pertinent things to say about the Authorised Version (**AV**) of the Protestant Bible, which is also widely known as the "King James Version (**KJV**).

"THE AUTHORISED VERSION OF THE BIBLE WAS PUBLISHED IN 1611 BY THE **WILL AND COMMAND OF HIS MAJESTY KING JAMES THE 1ST** WHOSE NAME IT BEARS TILL TODAY."

The Roman Catholics, believing as they do that the Protestants have mutilated the Book of God, are yet aiding and abetting the Protestant "crime" by forcing their native converts to purchase the Authorised Version (**AV**) of the Bible, which is the only Bible available in some 1500 languages of the lesser developed nations of the world. The Roman Catholics milk their cows, but the feeding is left to the Protestants! The overwhelming majority of Christians — both Catholics and Protestant — use the **Authorised (AV)** or the **King James Version (KJV)** as it is alternatively called.

## GLOWING TRIBUTES

First published, as Sir Winston says, in 1611, and then revised in 1881 (**RV**), and now re-revised and brought up to date as the **Revised Standard Version (RSV)** 1952, and now again re-revised in 1971 (still **RSV** for short). Let us see what opinion Christendom has of this most revised Bible, the **RSV**:-

1. "THE FINEST VERSION WHICH HAS BEEN PRODUCED IN THE PRESENT CENTURY." — (**Church of England Newspaper**)
2. "A COMPLETELY FRESH TRANSLATION BY SCHOLARS OF THE HIGHEST EMINENCE." — (**Times Literary Supplement**)
3. "THE WELL-LOVED CHARACTERISTICS OF THE AUTHORISED VERSION COMBINED WITH A NEW ACCURACY OF TRANS-

LATION." — **(Life and Work)**

4. "THE MOST ACCURATE AND CLOSE RENDERING OF THE ORIGINAL" — **(The Times)**

The publishers (Collins) themselves, in their notes on the Bible at the end of their production, say on page 10: "THIS BIBLE (**RSV**), IS THE PRODUCT OF **THIRTY-TWO SCHOLARS**, ASSISTED BY AN ADVISORY COMMITTEE REPRESENTING **FIFTY** CO-OPERATING DENOMINATIONS." Why all this boasting? To make the gullible public buy their product? All these testimonies convince the purchaser that he is backing the right horse, while the purchaser little suspecting that he is being taken for a ride.

### "THE WORLD'S BEST SELLER"

But what about the Authorised Version of the Bible (**AV**), the "World's Best Seller?" These Revisers, all good salesmen, have some very pretty things to say about it. However, their page iii, paragraph six of the PREFACE of the **RSV** reads: \*

"THE KING JAMES VERSION (alternative description of AV) HAS WITH GOOD REASON BEEN TERMED '**THE NOBLEST MONUMENT OF ENGLISH PROSE.**' ITS REVISERS IN 1881 EXPRESSED ADMIRATION FOR '**ITS SIMPLICITY, ITS DIGNITY, ITS POWER, ITS HAPPY TURNS OF EXPRESSION . . . THE MUSIC OF ITS CADENCES, AND THE FELICITIES OF ITS RHYTHM.**' IT ENTERED, AS NO OTHER BOOK HAS, INTO THE MAKING OF THE PERSONAL CHARACTER AND THE PUBLIC INSTITUTIONS OF THE ENGLISH-SPEAKING PEOPLES. WE OWE TO IT AN INCALCULABLE DEBT."

Can you, dear reader, imagine a more magnificent tribute being paid to the "Book of Books" than the above? I, for one, cannot. Let the believing Christian now steel himself for the unkindest blow of all from his own beloved Lawyers of Religion; for in the very same breath they say:

**"YET THE KING JAMES VERSION HAS GRAVE DEFECTS."**

---

\* See page 85 for actual reproduction

And, "THAT THESE DEFECTS ARE SO MANY AND SO SERIOUS AS TO CALL FOR REVISION . . ." This is straight from the horse's mouth, i.e. the orthodox Christian scholars of "the highest eminence." Another galaxy of Doctors of Divinity are now required to produce an encyclopaedia explaining the cause of those GRAVE AND SERIOUS DEFECTS in their Holy Writ and their reasons for eliminating them.

## PREFACE

**T**HE Revised Standard Version of the Bible is an authorized revision of the American Standard Version, published in 1901, which was a revision of the King James Version, published in 1611.

The first English version of the Scriptures made by direct translation from the original Hebrew and Greek, and the first to be printed, was the work of William Tyndale. He met bitter opposition. He was accused of willfully perverting the meaning of the Scriptures, and his New Testaments were ordered to be burned as "untrue translations." He was finally betrayed into the hands of his enemies, and in October 1536, was publicly executed and burned at the stake.

Yet Tyndale's work became the foundation of subsequent English versions, notably those of Coverdale, 1535; Thomas Matthew (probably a pseudonym for John Rogers), 1537; the Great Bible, 1539; the Geneva Bible, 1560; and the Bishops' Bible, 1568. In 1582 a translation of the New Testament, made from the Latin Vulgate by Roman Catholic scholars, was published at Rheims.

The translators who made the King James Version took into account all of these preceding versions; and comparison shows that it owes something to each of them. It kept felicitous phrases and apt expressions, from whatever source, which had stood the test of public usage. It owed most, especially in the New Testament, to Tyndale.

The King James Version had to compete with the Geneva Bible in popular use; but in the end it prevailed, and for more than two and a half centuries no other authorized translation of the Bible into English was made. The King James Version became the "Authorized Version" of the English-speaking peoples.

The King James Version has with good reason been termed "the noblest monument of English prose." Its revisers in 1881 expressed admiration for "its simplicity, its dignity, its power, its happy turns of expression . . . the music of its cadences, and the felicities of its rhythm." It entered, as no other book has, into the making of the personal character and the public institutions of the English-speaking peoples. We owe to it an incalculable debt.

Yet the King James Version has grave defects. By the middle of the nineteenth century, the development of Biblical studies and the discovery of many manuscripts more ancient than those upon which the King James Version was based, made it manifest that these defects are so many and so serious as to call for revision of the English translation. The task was undertaken, by authority of the Church of England, in 1870. The English Revised Version of the Bible was published in 1881-1885; and the American Standard Version, its variant embodying the preferences of the American scholars associated in the work, was published in 1901.

Because of unhappy experience with unauthorized publications in the two decades between 1881 and 1901, which tampered with the text of the English Revised Version in the supposed interest of the American public, the American Standard Version was copyrighted, to protect the text from unauthorized changes. In 1928 this copyright was acquired by the International Council of Religious Education, and thus passed into the ownership of the churches of the United States and Canada which were associated in this Council through their boards of education and publication.

The Council appointed a committee of scholars to have charge of the text of the American Standard Version and to undertake inquiry as to whether

## CHAPTER FOUR

### *Fifty Thousand Errors (?)*

The Jehovah's Witnesses in their "**AWAKE!**" Magazine, dated 8 September, 1957, carried this startling headline — "**50 000 ERRORS IN THE BIBLE?**" (See page 87 for the reproduction).

While I was still formulating the theme of this booklet, I heard a knock at my door one Sunday morning. I opened the door. A European gentleman stood there, grinning broadly. "Good morning!" he said. "Good morning," I replied. He was offering me his "**Awake**" and "**Watchtower**" magazines. Yes, a Jehovah's Witness! If a few had knocked at your door previously, you will recognize them immediately. The most supercilious lot of people who ever knocked at people's doors! I invited him in.

As soon as he settled down, I produced the full reproduction of what you see on page 87. Pointing to the monograph



at the top of the page, I asked, "Is this your's?" He readily recognised his own. I said, "It says: 50 000 Errors in the Bible, is it true?" "What's that!" he exclaimed. I repeated, "I said, that it says, that there are 50 000 errors in your Bible." "Where did you get that?" he asked. (This was published 35 years ago, when he was perhaps a little nipper). I said, "Leave the fancy talk aside — is this yours?" pointing again to the monograph — "**Awake!**" He said, "Can I have a look?" "Of course," I said. I handed him the page. He started perusing. They (the Jehovah's Witnesses) are trained. They attend classes five times a week in their "**King-**

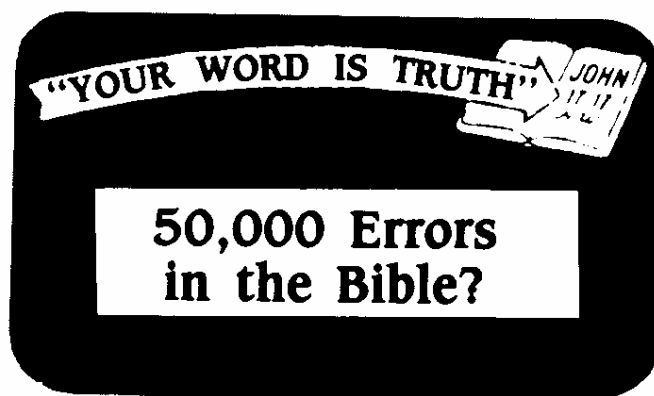
# Awake!

"Now it is the time to awake."  
Romans 13:11

Volume XXXVIII

Brooklyn N.Y., September 8, 1957

Number 17



→ OF SCHOLARS?

RECENTLY a young man purchased a King James Version Bible thinking it was without error. One day when glancing through a back issue of *Look* magazine he came across an article entitled "The Truth About the Bible," which said that "as early as 1720, an English authority estimated that there were at least 20,000 errors in the two editions of the New Testament commonly read by Protestants and Catholics. Modern students say there are probably 50,000 errors." The young man was shocked. His faith in the Bible's authenticity was shaken. "How can the Bible be reliable when it contains thousands of serious discrepancies and inaccuracies?" he asks.

FOR THE COMPLETE ARTICLE WRITE TO OR CALL AT THE

**IPI** ISLAMIC PROPAGATION CENTRE INTERNATIONAL  
124 QUEEN STREET, DURBAN 4001 PHONE (031) 3060026

**dom Halls.**" Naturally, they are the fittest missionaries among the thousand-and-one sects and denominations of Christendom. They are taught that when cornered, do not commit yourself to anything, do not open your mouths. Wait for the Holy Ghost to inspire you with what to say.

I silently kept watching him, while he browsed the page. Suddenly he looked up. He had found it. The "Holy Ghost" had tickled him. He began, "The article says that **"most of those errors have been eliminated."** I asked "If **MOST** are eliminated, how many remain out of the 50 000? — 5 000? 500? 50? Even if 50 remain, do you attribute those errors to God?" He was speechless. He excused himself by suggesting that he will come again with some senior member of his Church. That will be the day!

If I had this booklet ready, I would have offered him, saying — "I would like to do you a favour, give me your name and address, and your telephone number.<sup>1</sup> I will **lend** you this booklet — **"IS THE BIBLE GOD'S WORD?"** for 90 days. I want a written reply!" If you do this, and a few other Muslims do the same, they and the other missionaries will never darken your doors again. I believe that this publication will prove the most effective talisman to date. **Insha-Allah!**

This "cult" of Jehovah's Witnesses which is so strong in its condemnation of the orthodox Trinitarians, for playing with the "Word of God," is itself playing the same game of semantic gymnastics. In the article under review — **"50 000 ERRORS IN THE BIBLE?"** — they say: "there are **probably** 50 000 errors . . . errors that have **crept** into the Bible text . . . 50 000 **such serious** (?) errors . . . **most** of those **so-called** errors . . . **as a whole** the Bible is accurate." (?)

---

1. When any Bible-peddler knocks on your door, make a point of asking his name, address and telephone number. Write it down. If he or she does not co-operate, show them the door. Follow them up in their own homes. **You owe it to them!**

We do not have the time and space to go into the tens of thousands of — grave or minor — defects that the authors of the Revised Standard Version (**RSV**) have attempted to revise. We leave that privilege to the Christian scholars of the Bible. Here I will endeavour to cast just a cursory glance at a “half-a-dozen” or so of those “minor” changes.

1. ***“Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign: Behold, a VIRGIN shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel.”***

(**HOLY BIBLE**) Isaiah 7:14 — AV

The indispensable “VIRGIN” in the above verse has now been replaced in the **RSV** with the phrase “**a young woman,**” which is the correct translation of the Hebrew word **almáh**. **Almáh** is the word which has occurred all along in the Hebrew text and NOT **bethulah** which means VIRGIN. This correction is only to be found in the English language translation, as the **RSV** is only published in this tongue. For the African and the Afrikaner, the Arab and the Zulu, in fact, in the 1 500 other languages of the world, Christians are made to continue to swallow the misnomer “VIRGIN.”

### **BEGOTTEN, NOT MADE**

“Jesus is the only begotten son of God, **begotten** not **made,**” is an adjunct of the orthodox catechism, leaning for support on the following:

2. ***“For God so loved the world, that he gave his only BEGOTTEN son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.”***

(**HOLY BIBLE**) John 3:16 — AV

No priest worth his cloth would fail to quote **“the only BEGOTTEN of the Father!”** when preaching to a prospective convert. But this fabrication — “BEGOTTEN” — has now been unceremoniously excised by the Bible Revisers, without a word of excuse. They are as silent as church mice and would not draw the reader's attention to their furtive excision. This blasphemous word “BEGOTTEN” was another of the many such interpolations in the “Holy Bible.” God Almighty condemned this blasphemy in the strongest terms soon after its innovation. He did not wait for 2000 years for Bible scholars to reveal the fraud.

**AND THEY SAY:**

**“(GOD) MOST GRACIOUS  
HAS BEGOTTEN A SON!”**

وَقَالُوا اتَّخَذَ الرَّحْمَنُ وَلَدًا ۗ

**INDEED YE HAVE PUT FORTH  
A THING MOST MONSTROUS!**

لَقَدْ جِئْتُمْ شَيْئًا إِدًّا ۙ

**AT IT THE SKIES  
ARE READY TO BURST,**

تَكَادُ السَّمَاوَاتُ يَتَفَطَّرْنَ مِنْهُ

**AND THE EARTH TO SPLIT ASUNDER,**

وَتَشَقُّ الْأَرْضُ

**AND THE MOUNTAINS  
TO FALL DOWN IN UTTER RUIN,**

وَتَخْرُجُ الْجِبَالُ هَدًّا ۙ

**THAT THEY SHOULD INVOKE  
A SON FOR (GOD) MOST GRACIOUS.**

أَنْ دَعَوْا لِلرَّحْمَنِ وَلَدًا ۗ

**FOR IT IS NOT CONSONANT  
WITH THE MAJESTY OF (GOD)  
MOST GRACIOUS**

وَمَا يَنْبَغِي لِلرَّحْمَنِ

**THAT HE SHOULD BEGET A SON.**

أَنْ يَتَّخِذَ وَلَدًا ۗ

(SŪRA MARYAM) Holy Qur'an 19:88-92

The Muslim World should congratulate the **“Fifty co-operating denominations”** of Christendom and their Brains Trust the **“Thirty-two scholars of the highest eminence”** for bringing their Holy Bible a degree nearer to the Qur'anic truth.



**HE (God Almighty) BEGETS NOT  
NOR IS HE BEGOTTEN**

لَمْ يَلِدْ  
وَلَمْ يُولَدْ

(SÚRA IKHLÁS) Holy Qur'an 112:3

### “CHRISTIAN MESS-A-MATHICS”

3. **“For there are three that bear record  
in heaven, the FATHER, the WORD,  
and the HOLY GHOST:  
and these three are one.”**

(HOLY BIBLE) 1st Epistle of John 5:7 — AV

This verse is the closest approximation to what the Christians call their **Holy Trinity** in their encyclopaedia called the BIBLE. This keystone of the Christian faith has also been scrapped from the **RSV** without even a semblance of explanation. It has been a pious fraud all along and well-deservedly has it been expunged in the **RSV** for the English-speaking people. But for the 1499 remaining language groups of the world who read the Christian concoctions in their mother tongues, the fraud remains. These people will never know the truth until the Day of Judgement. However, we Muslims must again congratulate the galaxy of D.D.'s who have been honest enough to eliminate another lie from the English (**RSV**) Bible, thus bringing their Holy Book yet another step closer to the teachings of Islam. For the Holy Qur'an says:

**... AND DON'T SAY 'TRINITY':**

وَلَا تَقُولُوا ثَلَاثَةً

**DESIST: IT WILL BE BETTER FOR YOU:**

إِنَّتَهُوَ خَيْرٌ لَّكُمْ

**FOR ALLAH IS ONE GOD: \* ...**

إِنَّمَا اللَّهُ إِلَهٌ وَاحِدٌ

(SÚRA NISÁA) Holy Qur'an 4:171

### THE ASCENSION

One of the most serious of those “grave defects” which the authors of the **RSV** had tried to rectify concerned the Ascension

\* Not one in a trinity

of Christ. There have been only two references in the Canonical Gospels of Matthew, Mark, Luke and of John to the most stupendous event in Christianity — OF JESUS BEING TAKEN UP INTO HEAVEN. These two references were obtained in every Bible in every language, prior to 1952, when the RSV first appeared. These were:

- 4a. ***“So then the Lord Jesus,  
after he had spoken to them,  
was TAKEN UP INTO HEAVEN,  
and sat down at the right hand of God.”***  
(HOLY BIBLE) Mark 16:19
- 4b. ***“While he blessed them, he parted from them,  
and was CARRIED UP INTO HEAVEN.”***  
(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 24:51

Now please turn to page 93, which is a photocopy where the quotation 4a above ought to appear. You will be shocked to note that Mark 16 ends at verse **8**, and after an embarrassing expanse of blank space the missing verses appear in “small print” as a footnote at the bottom of the page. If you can lay your hands on a RSV **1952**, you will find the last six words of 4b above, i.e. **“AND WAS CARRIED UP INTO HEAVEN”** replaced by a tiny “k” to tell you to see the footnote if you please, where you will find these missing words. Every honest Christian has to admit that he does not consider **any** footnote in **any** Bible as the Word of God. Why should the paid servants of Christianity consign the mightiest miracle of their religion to a mere footnote?

From the Chart — **“The Origin and Growth of the English Bible”** — appearing on page 95, you will note that all the Biblical “Versions” prior to the Revised Version of 1881 were dependent upon the ANCIENT COPIES — those dating only five or six hundred years after Jesus. The Revisers of the RSV 1952, were the first Bible scholars who were able to tap the **“MOST**

MARK 16

52

"He has risen"

saw a young man sitting on the right side, dressed in a white robe; and they were amazed. 6And he said to them, "Do not be amazed; you seek Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified. He has risen, he is not here; see the place where they laid him. 7 But go, tell his disci-

ples and Peter that he is going before you to Galilee; there you will see him, as he told you." 8And they went out and fled from the tomb; for trembling and astonishment had come upon them; and they said nothing to any one, for they were afraid.4

NOTE MARK 16 ENDS AT VERSE 8

NOTE THE HUGE EXPANSE BETWEEN THE TEXT AND THE FOOTNOTE

MARK 16:9-20 RELEGATED TO FOOTNOTE

4Other texts and versions add as Mk 16:9-20 the following passage: 9 Now when he was risen on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven demons. 10 She went and told those who were with her, but they did not believe her. 11 But when they heard that he was alive and had been seen by her, they would not believe it. 12 After this he appeared in another form to two of them, as they were walking into the country. 13 And they went back and told the rest, but they did not believe them. 14 Afterward he appeared to the whole group and rebuked them for their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they had not believed those who saw him after he had risen. 15 And he said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the gospel to the whole creation. 16 He who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who does not believe will be condemned. 17 And whoever drinks any deadly thing, it will not hurt them; they will lay their hands on the sick, and they will recover." 19 So then the Lord Jesus himself, after he had risen, sat down at the right hand of God. 20 And they went forth and preached everywhere, while the Lord worked with them and confirmed the message by the signs that attended it. Amen.

Other ancient authorities add after verse 8 the following: But they reported briefly to Peter and those with him all that they had been told. And after this, Jesus himself sent out by means of them, from east to west, the sacred and imperishable proclamation of eternal salvation. REVISED A.D. 1952

COMPARED WITH THE MOST ANCIENT AUTHORITIES

REVISED A.D. 1952

Ancient Copies" fully, dating three and four centuries after Christ. We agree that the closer to the source the more authentic is the document. Naturally "**MOST**" Ancient deserves credence more than mere "**ANCIENT.**" But not finding a word about Jesus being "**taken up**" or "**carried up**" into heaven in the **MOST ANCIENT** manuscripts, the Christian fathers expurgated those references from the RSV 1952.

### THE DONKEY CIRCUS

The above facts are a staggering confession by Christendom that the "**inspired**" authors of the Canonical Gospels did not record a single word about the ASCENSION of Jesus. Yet these "**inspired**" authors were unanimous in recording that their Lord and Saviour rode a donkey into Jerusalem as his mission drew to a close.

***“ . . . and they sat him thereon.”*** (The Donkey)  
(Matt. 21:7)

***“ . . . and he sat upon him.”***  
(The Donkey) (Mark 11:7)

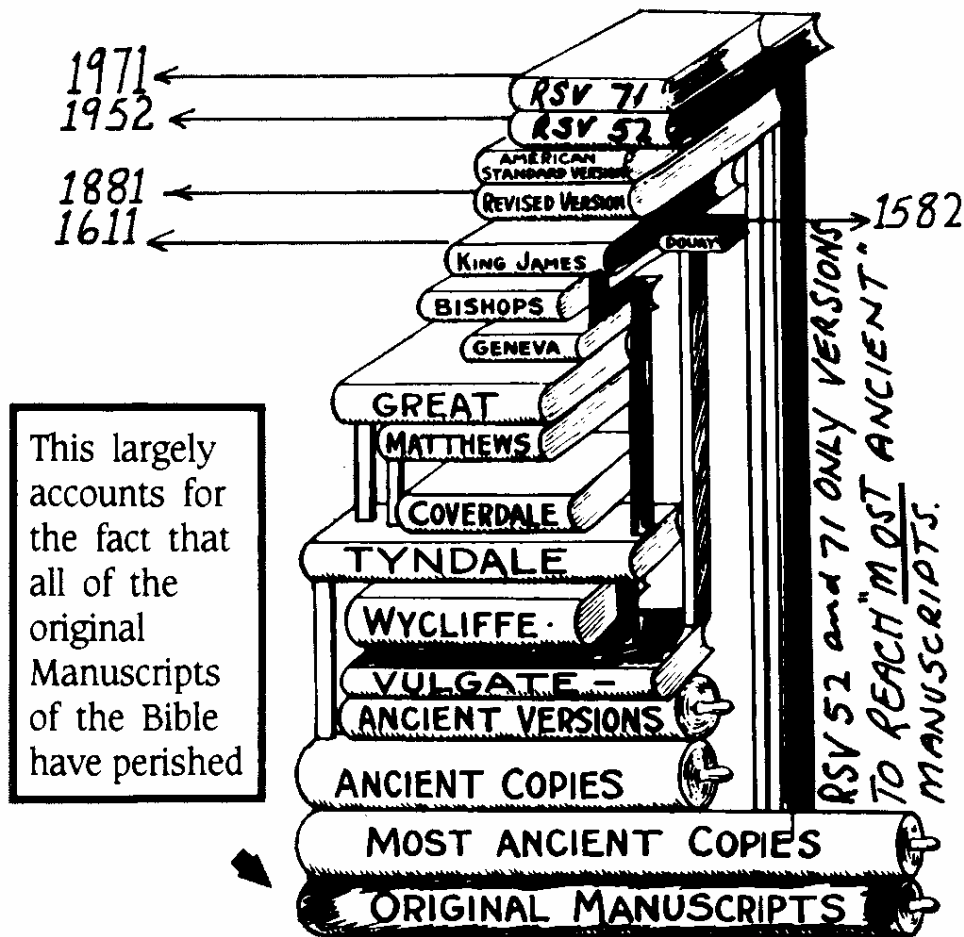
***“ . . . and they set Jesus thereon.”*** (The Donkey)  
(Luke. 19:35)

***“ . . . Jesus . . . sat thereon:”***  
(The Donkey) (John 12:14)

Could God Almighty have been the author of this incongruous situation — going out of His Way to see that all the Gospel writers did not miss their recording of His “son's” donkey-ride into the Holy City — and yet “**inspiring**” them to black out the news about His “son's” heavenly flight on the wings of angels?

### NOT FOR LONG!

The **hot-gospellers** and the **Bible-thumpers** were too slow in catching the joke. By the time they realised that the corner-stone of their preaching — THE ASCENSION OF JESUS — had been undermined as a result of Christian Biblical erudition, the



In the above drawing is shown the gradual development of the English Bible as well as the foundations upon which each successive version rests.

We are living in an age of printing.

It is hard for us to realize that when the books of the Bible were originally written, there was no printing press to multiply the copies.

Each copy must be made slowly and laboriously by hand. Under these conditions it was inevitable that many ancient books should be lost. This largely accounts for the fact that all the original manuscripts of the Bible have perished.

The question arises, what have we then as the literary foundation of our Bible?

(1) We have the most ancient copies made from the original manuscripts. We mention only three principal ones.

(a) The Codex Sinaiticus, originally a codex of the Greek Bible belonging to the fourth century. Purchased from the Soviet Republic of Russia in 1933 by Great Britain and is now in the British Museum.

(b) The Codex Alexandrinus, probably written in the fifth century, now in the British Museum. It contains the whole Greek Bible with the exception of forty lost leaves.

(c) The Codex Vaticanus, in the Vatican library at Rome, originally contained the whole Bible but parts are lost. Written probably about the fourth century.

publishers of the **RSV** had already raked in a nett profit of 15 000 000 dollars! (Fifteen Million). The propagandists made a big hue and cry, and with the backing of two denominational committees out of the fifty, forced the Publishers to re-incorporate the interpolations into the "INSPIRED" Word of God. In every new publication of the **RSV** after 1952, the expunged portion was "**RESTORED TO THE TEXT.**"

It is an old, old game. The Jews and the Christians have been editing their "Book of God" from its very inception. The difference between them and the ancient forgers is that the ancient forgers did not know the art of writing "prefaces" and "footnotes", otherwise they too would have told us clearly as our modern heroes have about their tampering, and their glib excuses for transmuting forged currency into glittering gold.

"MANY PROPOSALS FOR MODIFICATION WERE SUBMITTED TO THE COMMITTEE BY INDIVIDUALS AND BY TWO DENOMINATIONAL COMMITTEES. ALL OF THESE WERE GIVEN CAREFUL ATTENTION BY THE COMMITTEE.

"TWO PASSAGES, THE LONGER ENDING OF MARK (16:9-20) . . . AND LUKE 24:51 ARE **RESTORED** TO THE TEXT."  
(**Preface — Collins' pages vi and vii**)

"Why '**restored**'"? Because they had been previously expunged! Why had the references to the Ascension expunged in the first place? The **MOST** Ancient manuscripts had no references to the Ascension at all. They were interpolations similar to 1 John 5:7 about the Trinity. (Refer page 91 example 3). Why eliminate one and re-instate the other? Do not be surprised! By the time you lay your hands on a **RSV**, the "Committee" might also have decided to expunge the whole of their invaluable Preface. The Jehovah's Witnesses have already eliminated 27 revealing pages of their FOREWORD to their "**New World Translation of the CHRISTIAN GREEK SCRIPTURES,**" (this is their way of saying — New Testament).

## ALLAH IN THE CHRISTIAN BIBLE

The Rev. C.I. Scofield, D.D. with a team of 8 Consulting Editors, also all D.D.'s, in the "**Scofield Reference Bible**," thought it appropriate to spell the Hebrew word "**Elah**" (meaning **God**) alternatively as "**Alah**." The Christians had thus swallowed the camel — they seemed to have accepted at last that the name of God is Allah — but were still straining at the gnat by spelling Allah with one "L"! (Photographic reproduction of the Bible page showing the word "**ALAH**" is preserved here for posterity on page 98). References were made in public lectures to this fact by the author of this booklet. Believe me, the subsequent "**Scofield Reference Bible**" has retained word for word the whole commentary of Genesis 1:1, but has, by a clever sleight-of-hand, blotted out the word "**Alah**" altogether. There is not even a gap where the word "**Alah**" once used to be. This is, in the Bible of the orthodox! One is hard pressed to keep up with their jugglery.

THE FIRST BOOK OF MOSES

CALLED

[ 1 ]

GENESIS.

[ 1 4 ]

GENESIS is the book of beginnings. It records not only the beginning of the heavens and earth, and of plant, animal, and human life, but also of all human institutions, from the beginning, especially, it speaks of the new birth, in regeneration, which all was has had run.

What was the beginning of the progressive revelation of God which culminates in Christ. The three primary names of Deity, Elohim, Jehovah, and Adonai, and the three most important of the compound names, occur in Genesis; and that in an ordered progression which could not be changed without confusion.

The problem of sin, affecting man's condition in the east, and his relation to God and the divine service of that empire, are in essence the same as the great problems which confront our nation in the divine redemption, through the Edenic, Abrahamic, Noahic, and Abrahamic Covenants, are in this book; and they are the fundamental covenants to which the other four, the Mosaic, Palestinian, Davidic, and New Covenants, are related, chiefly as adding detail or development.

Genesis is the first of the five books of the New Testament, in which it is quoted above all others, in its present form. In a profound sense, therefore, the roots of all subsequent Christian activities are planted deep in the soil of Genesis, and whoever would truly comprehend the Christian religion must first understand the book of Genesis.

The inspiration of Genesis and its character as a divine revelation are authenticated by the testimony of history, and by the testimony of Christ (Mt. 19. 4-6; 24. 37-39; Mk. 10. 49; Lk. 11. 49-51; 17. 26-29; 32; John 1. 5; 7. 21-23; 8. 44, 56).

Genesis is in five chief divisions: I. Creation (1. 1-2. 25). II. The Fall and Redemption (3. 1-4. 7). III. The Diverse Seeds, Cain and Seth, to the Flood (4. 8-7. 24). IV. The Flood to Babel (8. 1-11. 9). V. From the call of Abram to the death of Joseph (11. 10-50. 26).

The events recorded in Genesis cover a period of 2,255 years (1 other)

CHAPTER 1.	B.C.	1. 1-2. 25
The original creation	John 1. 1.	upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.
IN the beginning God created the heaven and the earth	Gen 1. 1.	The new beginning--the first day: light diffused.
Earth made waste and empty by judgment	Mal. 3. 18.	
2. 1-11. 9	Holy Spirit	
2. 1-11. 9	Gen. 6. 3.	
2. 1-11. 9	Gen. 1. 25.	
2. 1-11. 9	Gen. 2. 15.	
2. 1-11. 9	Gen. 6. 13.	
2. 1-11. 9	Gen. 8. 1-11. 9.	

<sup>1</sup> Elohim (sometimes El or Elah), English form "God," the first of the three primary names of Deity, is a uni-plural noun formed from El = strength, or the strong one, and Alah, to swear, to bind oneself by an oath, so implying faithfulness. This uniplurality implied in the name is directly a sequel to Gen. 1. 26 (plurality), 27 (uniplurality), also Gen. 3. 22. The uniplurality is latent in Elohim. As meaning primarily the Strong One, it is fittingly used in the first chapter of Genesis, which is the O. T. about 2500 times. See also Gen. 2. 4, note; 2. 4, note; 4. 1, note; 2. note; 17. 1, note; 21. 33, note; 1 Sam. 1. 2, note.

<sup>2</sup> But three creative acts of God are recorded in this chapter: (1) the heavens and the earth, (2) animal life, and (3) human life, vs. 26, 27. The first creative act covers the entire past, and gives scope for all geologic ages.

<sup>3</sup> Gen. 1. 23, 27, Isa. 24. 1 and 45. 12 clearly indicate that the earth had undergone a cataclysmic change as the result of a divine judgment. In fact, the earth bears everywhere the marks of such a catastrophe. The earth is not wanting intimations which connect it with the testing and fall of angels. See Ezk. 28. 12, 15 and Isa. 14. 12, which allude to the kings of Tyre and Babylon.

<sup>4</sup> The sun, here nor in verses 14-18 is not made visible. A different word is used. The sun is made visible. The sun and moon were created "in the light" of course came from the sun, but the vapour diffused the light. Later the sun appeared in an unclouded sky.



## CHAPTER FIVE

### *Damning Confessions*

Mrs. Ellen G. White, a “prophetess” of the Seventh Day Adventist Church, in her Bible Commentary Vol. 1, page 14, has this confession to make about the fallibility of the “Holy Bible.”

“THE BIBLE WE READ TODAY IS THE WORK OF MANY COPYISTS WHO HAVE IN MOST INSTANCES DONE THEIR WORK WITH MARVELLOUS ACCURACY. BUT COPYISTS HAVE **NOT BEEN INFALLIBLE**, AND GOD MOST EVIDENTLY HAS **NOT SEEN FIT** TO PRESERVE THEM ALTOGETHER **FROM ERROR** IN TRANSCRIBING.”

In the following pages of her commentary, Mrs. White testifies further: “I SAW THAT GOD HAD ESPECIALLY GUARDED THE BIBLE,” (from what?) “YET WHEN COPIES OF IT WERE FEW, LEARNED MEN HAD IN SOME INSTANCES **CHANGED THE WORDS**, THINKING THAT THEY WERE MAKING IT PLAIN, WHEN IN REALITY THEY WERE **MYSTIFYING** THAT WHICH WAS PLAIN, BY CAUSING IT TO **LEAN TO THEIR ESTABLISHED VIEWS**, WHICH WERE GOVERNED BY TRADITION.”

### **DEVELOPED SICKNESS**

The mental malady is a cultivated one. This authoress and her followers can still trumpet from rooftops that “**Truly, the Bible is the infallible Word of God.**” “**Yes, it is adulterated, but pure.**” “**It is human, yet divine.**” Do words have any meaning in their language? Yes, they have in their courts of law, but not in their theology. They carry a “poetic licence” in their preaching.

***IN THEIR HEARTS IS A DISEASE;***

فِي قُلُوبِهِمْ مَرَضٌ

**AND ALLAH HAS INCREASED  
THEIR DISEASE:**

فَزَادَهُمُ اللَّهُ مَرَضًا

**AND GRIEVOUS IS THE PENALTY  
THEY (INCUR),**

وَلَهُمْ عَذَابٌ أَلِيمٌ

**BECAUSE THEY ARE FALSE  
(TO THEMSELVES).**

بِمَا كَانُوا يَكْذِبُونَ

(SÛRA BAQARA) Holy Qur'an 2:10

## THE WITNESSES

The most vociferous of all the Bible-thumpers are the Jehovah's Witnesses. On page 5 of their "FOREWORD," mentioned earlier, they confess:

"IN COPYING THE INSPIRED ORIGINALS BY HAND THE ELEMENT OF **HUMAN FRAILITY** ENTERED IN, AND SO **NONE** OF THE THOUSANDS OF COPIES EXTANT TODAY IN THE ORIGINAL LANGUAGE **ARE PERFECT DUPLICATES**. THE RESULT IS THAT **NO TWO** COPIES ARE **EXACTLY ALIKE**." Now you see, why the whole "foreword" of 27 pages is eliminated from their Bibles. Allah was making them to hang themselves with their own erudition.

## POTLUCK

Out of over twenty four thousand differing manuscripts the Christians boast about, the Church fathers just selected four which tallied with their prejudices, their preconceived notions, and called them Gospels of Matthew, Mark, Luke and John. We will deal with each of them in their proper place. Here, let us go over the conclusion of the Jehovah's Witnesses' research as recorded in the now expunged Foreword:

"THE EVIDENCE IS, THEREFORE, THAT THE ORIGINAL TEXT OF THE CHRISTIAN GREEK SCRIPTURES<sup>1</sup> **HAS BEEN**

---

1. New Testament.

TAMPERED WITH, THE SAME AS THE TEXT OF THE LXX<sup>1</sup> HAS BEEN,”

Yet this incorrigible Cult has the effrontery to publish 9 000 000 (Nine Million) copies as a First Edition of a 192-page book entitled — “**Is the Bible REALLY the Word of God?**” We are dealing here with a sick mentality, **for no amount of tampering**, as they say, will “APPRECIABLY AFFECT THE AUTHENTICITY OF THE BIBLE” (?). This is Christian logic!

### A PATIENT HEARING

Dr Graham Scroggie in his aforementioned book, pleads, on page 29, for the Bible:-

“AND LET US BE PERFECTLY FAIR AS WE PURSUE THE SUBJECT, (**Is the Bible the Word of God?**). BEARING IN MIND THAT WE ARE TO HEAR **WHAT THE BIBLE HAS TO SAY ABOUT ITSELF**. IN A COURT OF LAW WE ASSUME THAT A WITNESS WILL SPEAK THE TRUTH, AND MUST ACCEPT WHAT HE SAYS UNLESS WE HAVE GOOD GROUNDS FOR SUSPECTING HIM, OR CAN PROVE HIM A LIAR. SURELY THE BIBLE SHOULD BE GIVEN THE SAME OPPORTUNITY TO BE HEARD, AND SHOULD RECEIVE A LIKE PATIENT HEARING.”

The plea is fair and reasonable. We will do exactly as he asks and let the Bible speak for itself.

In the first five books of the Bible — **Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy** — there are more than 700 statements which prove not only that God is **NOT** the Author of these books, but that **EVEN** Moses himself had no hand in them. Open these books at random and you will see:

---

1. “LXX” meaning **Seventy**, is the JW’s alternative title of the Old Testament. Do not be mystified; they even call a “**four**” letter word, a “**tetragrammaton**.”

- “And the **Lord said unto him**, Away, get thee down . . .”
- “And **Moses said unto the Lord**, the people cannot come . . .”
- “And the **Lord said unto Moses**, Go on before the people . . .”
- “And the **Lord spake unto Moses**, saying . . .”
- “And the **Lord said unto Moses**, Get down, charge the . . .”

It is manifest and apparent that these are **NEITHER** the Words of God **NOR** of Moses. They indicate the voice of a third person writing from hearsay.

### **MOSES WRITES HIS OWN OBITUARY?**

Could Moses have been a contributor to his own obituary before his demise? Did the Jews write their own obituaries? “**So Moses . . . DIED . . . And he** (God Almighty) **BURIED HIM** (Moses) **. . . he was 120 years old when he DIED . . . And there arose not a prophet SINCE in Israel like unto Moses . . .**” (Deut. 34:5-10). We will analyze the rest of the Old Testament presently from other angles.

## CHAPTER SIX

# *The Book Christened "The New Testament"*

### WHY "ACCORDING TO"?

What about the so-called New Testament?<sup>1</sup> Why does every Gospel begin with the introduction — ACCORDING TO . . . ACCORDING TO . . . (See page 104). Why "**according to**"? Because not a single one of the vaunted twenty four thousand copies extant carries its author's autograph! Hence the supposition "**according to**"! Even the internal evidence proves that Matthew was not the author of the first Gospel which bears his name.

*"And as Jesus passed forth thence,  
HE (JESUS) saw a man,  
named Matthew,  
sitting at the receipt of custom:  
and HE (JESUS) saith unto HIM  
(MATTHEW), follow ME (JESUS)  
And HE (MATTHEW) arose,  
and followed HIM (JESUS)."*

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 9:9

Without any stretch of the imagination, one can see that the "**He's**" and the "**Him's**" of the above narration do not refer to Jesus or Matthew as its author, but some third person writing what he saw and heard — a hearsay account. If we cannot even attribute this "**book of dreams**", (as the first Gospel is also described) to the disciple Matthew, how can we accept it as the Word of God? We are not alone in this discovery that Matthew did not write the "**Gospel according to St. Matthew**" and that

(Continued on page 106).

---

1. "So-called," because nowhere does the "New Testament" call itself the New Testament, and nowhere the Old Testament call itself the Old Testament. And also the word "Bible" is unknown within the pages of the Bible. God did not give a title to "HIS" books!

## WHY "ACCORDING TO"?

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO Saint Luke ?

Saint  
Matthew

ST. MATTHEW 9

*Matthew Called*

9 ¶ And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

"HE"  
AND "HIM"  
NOT  
MAT-  
THEW!

FORASMUCH as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us,

2 Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses, and ministers of the word;

3 It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things, wherein thou hast been instructed.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ?

Saint Mark

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ?

Saint John

"HE" AND "HIM"  
NOT JOHN!

ST. JOHN 19

35 And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe.

ST. JOHN 21

24 This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.

*The Conclusion*

25 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.

# THE GOSPELS

translated  
into Modern English

by

J. B. PHILLIPS

THE GOSPEL OF  
MATTHEW

The Master taught the disciples not to steal but here Matthew stole whole-sale from Mark!

*Early tradition ascribed this Gospel to the apostle Matthew, but scholars nowadays almost all reject this view.*

*The author, whom we still can conveniently call Matthew, has plainly drawn on the mysterious "Q", which may have been a collection of oral traditions. He has used Mark's Gospel freely, though he has rearranged the order of events and has in several instances used different words for what is plainly the same story. The style is lucid, calm and "tidy". Matthew writes with a certain judiciousness as though he himself had carefully digested his material and is convinced not only of its truth but of the divine pattern that lies behind the historic facts.*

*If Matthew wrote, as is now generally supposed, somewhere between 85 and 90, this Gospel's value as a Christian document is enormous. It is, so to speak, a second generation view of Jesus Christ the Son of God and the Son of Man. It is being written at that distance in time from the great Event where sober reflection and sturdy conviction can perhaps give a better balanced portrait of God's unique revelation of Himself than could be given by those who were so close to the Light that they were partly dazzled by it.*

LONDON

GEOFFREY BLES

it was written by some anonymous hand. J.B. Phillips concurs with us in our findings. He is the paid servant of the Anglican Church, a prebendary of the Chichester Cathedral, England. He would have no reason to lie or betray to the detriment of the official view of his Church! Refer to his introduction to the "Gospel of St. Matthew" (reproduced here on page 105). Phillips has this to say about its authorship.

"EARLY TRADITION ASCRIBED THIS GOSPEL TO THE APOSTLE MATTHEW, BUT SCHOLARS NOWADAYS **ALMOST ALL REJECT THIS VIEW.**" In other words, St. Matthew did not write the Gospel which bears his name. This is the finding of **Christian scholars** of the highest eminence — not of Hindus, Muslims and Jews who may be accused of bias. Let our Anglican friend continue: "THE AUTHOR, WHOM WE STILL CAN CONVENIENTLY CALL MATTHEW." "**Conveniently,**" because otherwise every-time we made a reference to "Matthew," we would have to say — "**THE FIRST BOOK OF THE NEW TESTAMENT**" Chapter so and so, verse so and so. And again and again "**The first book . . .**" etc. Therefore, according to J.B. Phillips it is **convenient** that we give the book some name. So why not 'Matthew?' Suppose it is a good a name as any other! Phillips continues: "THE AUTHOR HAS PLAINLY DRAWN ON **THE MYSTERIOUS 'Q'** WHICH MAY HAVE BEEN A COLLECTION OF ORAL TRADITIONS." What is this "**mysterious 'Q'**"? "Q" is short for the German word "**quella,**" which means "**sources.**" There is supposed to be another document — a common source — to which our present Matthew, Mark and Luke had access. All these three authors, whoever they were, had a common eye on the material at hand. They were writing as if looking through "**one**" eye. And because they saw eye to eye, the first three "Gospels" came to be known as the Synoptic Gospels.

### WHOLESALE CRIBBING

But what about that "**inspiration**" business? The Anglican prebendary has hit the nail on the head. He is, more than anyone else, entitled to do so. A paid servant of the Church, an orthodox



evangelical Christian, a Bible scholar of repute, having direct access to the "original" Greek manuscripts, let HIM spell it out for us. (Notice how gently he lets the cat out of the bag): "**HE** (Matthew) **HAS USED MARK'S GOSPEL FREELY,**" which in the language of the schoolteacher — "**has been copying WHOLESALE from Mark!**" Yet the Christians call this wholesale plagiarism the "Word of GOD"!

Does it not make you wonder that an eye-witness and an ear-witness to the ministry of Jesus, which the disciple Matthew was supposed to be, instead of writing his own first-hand impressions of the ministry of "his Lord," would go and steal from the writings of a youth (Mark), who was a ten year old lad when Jesus upbraided his nation? Why would an eye-witness and ear-witness like Matthew copy from a fellow (Mark) who himself was writing from hearsay? The disciple Matthew would not do any such silly thing. For an anonymous document has been imposed on the fair name of Matthew.

### **PLAGIARISM OR LITERARY KIDNAPPING**

Plagiarism means literary theft. Someone copies verbatim (word for word) from another's writing and palms it off as his own, is known as plagiarism. This is a common trait amongst the 40 or so anonymous authors of the books of the Bible. The Christians boast about a supposedly common cord amongst the writers of the 66 Protestant booklets and the writers of the 73 Roman Catholic booklets called the "Holy Bible." Some common cord there is, for Matthew and Luke, or whoever they were, had plagiarised 85% word for word from Mark! God Almighty did not dictate the same wordings to the synoptists (one-eyed). The Christians themselves admit this, because they do not believe in a verbal inspiration, as the Muslims do about the Holy Qur'an.<sup>1</sup>

This 85% plagiarism of Matthew and Luke pales into insignificance compared to the literary kidnapping of the authors of the Old Testament where a hundred per cent stealing occurs in the

---

1. Write for your free copy of "**AL-QUR'AN — THE MIRACLE OF MIRACLES.**"

so-called Book of God. Christian scholars of the calibre of Bishop Kenneth Cragg euphemistically call this stealing, "reproduction"<sup>1</sup> and take pride in it.

### PERVERTED STANDARDS

Dr. Scroggie (referred to earlier on) most enthusiastically quotes in his book<sup>2</sup> a Dr. Joseph Parker for his unique eulogy of the Bible:

"WHAT A BOOK IS THE BIBLE IN THE MATTER OF VARIETY OF CONTENTS! . . . WHOLE PAGES ARE TAKEN UP WITH OBSCURE NAMES, AND MORE IS TOLD OF A GENEALOGY THAN OF THE DAY OF JUDGMENT. STORIES ARE HALF TOLD, AND THE NIGHT FALLS BEFORE WE CAN TELL WHERE VICTORY LAY. WHERE IS THERE ANYTHING" (in the Religious Literature of the world) "TO CORRESPOND WITH THIS?" A beautiful necklace of words and phrases undoubtedly! It is much ado about nothing, and rank blasphemy against God Almighty for authorising such an embarrassing hotchpotch. Yet the Christians gloat over the very defects of their book, like Romeo over the "mole" on Juliet's lip!

### NOTHING LESS THAN 100%

To demonstrate the degree of plagiarism practised by the "inspired" Bible writers, I asked my audience during a symposium at the University of Cape Town conducted between myself and Professor Cumpsty the Head of the Department of Theology on the subject "**Is the Bible God's Word?**" to open their Bibles.

Some Christians are very fond of carrying their Bibles under their arms when religious discussions or debates take place. They seem to be utterly helpless without this book. At my suggestion a number of the audience began ruffling the pages. I asked them to open chapter 37 in the "**Book of Isaiah.**" When the audience was ready, I asked them to compare my "Isaiah 37" with their "Isaiah 37" while I read, to see whether they were identical. I began, reading slowly. Verses 1, 2, 4, 10, 15, and so on, until the end of the chapter. I kept on asking after every verse if what I had been reading, was

---

1. See page 73 for full quotation.

2. "**Is the Bible the Word of God?**" by the Moody Press.

identical with the verses in their Bibles. Again and again they chorused — "Yeh!", "Yeh!". At the end of the chapter with the Bible still open in my hands at the place from which I had been reading, I made the Chairman to reveal to the audience that I was not reading from Isaiah 37 at all but from **2 KINGS 19!** There was a terrible consternation in the audience! I had thus established 100% plagiarism in the "Holy Bible." (See next page)

In other words, Isaiah 37 and 2 Kings 19 are identical word for word. Yet they have been attributed to two different authors, centuries apart, whom the Christians claim have been inspired by God.

Who is copying from whom? Who is stealing from whom? The 32 renowned Bible scholars of the RSV say that the author of the Book of Kings is "**UNKNOWN!**" See page 139 for a reproduction from the RSV by "**Collins**". These notes on the Bible were prepared and edited by the Right Rev. David J. Fant, Litt. D., General Secretary of the New York Bible Society. Naturally, if the Most Reverend gentlemen of Christendom had an iota of belief about the Bible being the Word of God, they would have said so, but they honestly (shamefacedly?) confess: "**Author — UNKNOWN!**" They are prepared to pay lip-service to Scriptures which could have been penned by any Tom, Dick or Harry and expect everyone to regard these as the Word of God — Heaven forbid!

### **NO VERBAL INSPIRATION**

(For a complete list of all the books of the Bible and their authors, avail yourself of the "**Collins**" R.S.V. 'with' its annotations). What have Christian scholars to say about the "**Book of Isaiah?**" They say: "**MAINLY CREDITED TO ISAIAH. PARTS MAY HAVE BEEN WRITTEN BY OTHERS.**" In view of the confessions of Bible scholars, we will not take poor Isaiah to task. Can we then nail this **plagiarism** on the door of God? What blasphemy! Professor Cumptsy confirmed at question time, at the end of the aforementioned symposium that the "**Christians do not believe in a verbal inspiration of the Bible.**" So God Almighty had not absent-mindedly dictated the same tale twice! Human hands, all too human, had played havoc with this so-called Word of God — the Bible. Yet, Bible-thumpers will insist that "every word, comma and full stop of the Bible is God's Word!"

## 100% PLAGIARISM

## II KINGS 19

AND it came to pass, when king Hēz-ē-ki'-āh heard *it*, that he rent his clothes, and covered himself with sackcloth, and went into the house of the LORD.

2 And he sent Ē-li'-ā-kim, which was over the household, and Shebna the scribe, and the elders of the priests, covered with sackcloth, to Isaiah the prophet the son of Amoz.

3 And they said unto him, Thus saith Hēz-ē-ki'-āh, This day *is* a day of trouble, and of rebuke, and blasphemy: for the children are come to the birth, and *there is* not strength to bring forth.

5 So the servants of king Hēz-ē-ki'-āh came to Isaiah.

10 Thus shall ye speak to Hēz-ē-ki'-āh king of Judah, saying, Let not thy God in whom thou trustest deceive thee, saying, Jerusalem shall not be delivered into the hand of the king of Assyria.

11 Behold, thou hast heard what the kings of Assyria have done to all lands, by destroying them utterly: and shalt thou be delivered?

12 Have the gods of the nations delivered them which my fathers have destroyed; *as* Gozan, and Haran, and Rezeph, and the children of Eden which *were* in Thēl'-ā-sār?

14 ¶ And Hēz-ē-ki'-āh received the letter of the hand of the messengers, and read it: and Hezekiah went up into the house of the LORD, and spread it before the LORD.

15 And Hēz-ē-ki'-āh prayed before the LORD, and said, O LORD God of Israel, which dwellest *between* the chēr'-ū-bims, thou art the God, *even* thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth; thou hast made heaven and earth.

36 So Sēn-nāch'-ēr-ib king of Assyria departed, and went and returned, and dwelt at Nin'-ē-vēh.

37 And it came to pass, as he was worshipping in the house of Nis'-rōch his god, that Ā-drām'-mē-lēch and Shā-rē'-zēr his sons smote him with the sword: and they escaped into the land of Armenia. And Ē-sār-hād'-dōn his son reigned in his stead.

## ISAIAH 37

AND it came to pass, when king Hēz-ē-ki'-āh heard *it*, that he rent his clothes, and covered himself with sackcloth, and went into the house of the LORD.

2 And he sent Ē-li'-ā-kim, who was over the household, and Shebna the scribe, and the elders of the priests covered with sackcloth, unto Isaiah the prophet the son of Amoz.

3 And they said unto him, Thus saith Hēz-ē-ki'-āh, This day *is* a day of trouble, and of rebuke, and of blasphemy: for the children are come to the birth, and *there is* not strength to bring forth.

5 So the servants of king Hēz-ē-ki'-āh came to Isaiah.

10 Thus shall ye speak to Hēz-ē-ki'-āh king of Judah, saying, Let not thy God, in whom thou trustest, deceive thee, saying, Jerusalem shall not be given into the hand of the king of Assyria.

11 Behold, thou hast heard what the kings of Assyria have done to all lands by destroying them utterly; and shalt thou be delivered?

12 Have the gods of the nations delivered them which my fathers have destroyed, *as* Gozan, and Haran, and Rezeph, and the children of Eden which *were* in Tē-lās'-sār?

14 ¶ And Hēz-ē-ki'-āh received the letter from the hand of the messengers, and read it: and Hezekiah went up unto the house of the LORD, and spread it before the LORD.

15 And Hēz-ē-ki'-āh prayed unto the LORD, saying,

16 O LORD of hosts, God of Israel, that dwellest *between* the chēr'-ū-bims, thou art the God, *even* thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth: thou hast made heaven and earth.

37 ¶ So Sēn-nāch'-ēr-ib king of Assyria departed, and went and returned, and dwelt at Nin'-ē-vēh.

38 And it came to pass, as he was worshipping in the house of Nis'-rōch his god, that Ā-drām'-mē-lēch and Shā-rē'-zēr his sons smote him with the sword; and they escaped into the land of Armenia: and Ē-sār-hād'-dōn his son reigned in his stead.

## CHAPTER SEVEN

### *The Acid Test*

How do we know that a book claimed to be from God is really the Book of God? One of the tests, out of many such tests, is — that a Message emanating from an Omniscient Being **MUST** be consistent with itself. It ought to be free from all discrepancies and contradictions. This is exactly what the **LAST TESTAMENT**, the Book of God says:

**DO THEY NOT CONSIDER  
THE QUR'AN (WITH CARE)**

أَفَلَا يَتَدَبَّرُونَ الْقُرْآنَ

**HAD IT BEEN FROM ANY  
OTHER THAN ALLAH**

وَلَوْ كَانَ مِنْ عِنْدِ غَيْرِ اللَّهِ

**THEY WOULD HAVE  
FOUND THEREIN MANY  
A DISCREPANCY**

لَوْجَدُوا فِيهِ اخْتِلَافًا كَثِيرًا ﴿٥٠﴾

(SÚRA NISÁA) Holy Qur'an 4:82

### **GOD OR THE DEVIL?**

If God Almighty wants us to verify the authenticity of His Book (The Holy Qur'an) with this acid test, why should we not apply the very same test to any other Book claiming to be from Him? We do not want to bamboozle anybody with words as the Christians have been doing. It would be readily agreed from the references I have given from Christian scholars, that they have been proving to us that the Bible is **NOT** the Word of God, yet making us believe that they have actually convinced us to the contrary.

A classic example of this sickness was in evidence again only "yesterday." The Anglican synod was in session in Grahamstown. The Most. Rev. Bill Burnett, the Archbishop was preaching to his flock. He created a confusion in his Anglican community. An erudite Englishman, addressing a group of learned English priests and bishops, in their own mother tongue — English, which his

learned colleagues drastically misunderstood to such an extent that Mr. McMillan, perhaps also an Anglican, the Editor of an English daily — “**The Natal Mercury**,” dated December 11, 1979, had this to say about the confusion the Archbishop had created among his own learned clergy:

“ARCHBISHOP BURNETT'S REMARKS AT THE SYNOD WERE **HARDLY A MODEL OF CLARITY** AND WERE **WIDELY AND DRAMATICALLY MISINTERPRETED** BY **MANY** OF THOSE PRESENT.”

There is nothing wrong with English as a language, but we know that the Christian is trained in muddled thinking in all matters religious. The “bread” in his Holy Communion is not “bread” but “flesh?” The “wine” is “blood?” “Three is one?” and “Human is Divine?” But do not make a mistake. He is not that simple when it comes to dealing with the earthly kingdom, where he is then most precise. You will have to be doubly careful when entering into a contract with him! He can have you sold out, without your realising it.

The examples that I shall furnish in substantiating the points I have raised about the contradictions in the so-called Book of God, would be found very easy — even for a child to follow and understand.

## II SAMUEL 24

### *The Numbering*

**A**ND again the anger of the **LORD** was kindled against Israel, and he moved David against them to say, **Go, number Israel and Judah.**

While the author of Samuel 24 above, makes God the boss of the situation, the author of Chronicles (see next page) gives credit to the Devil.

## I CHRONICLES 21

### *The Numbering*

**AND Satan stood up against Israel, and provoked David to number Israel.**

Apart from showing allegiance to God as is noted elsewhere, the **Devil** (Satan) is also given his due. This dichotomy on the part of the author of Chronicles reminds one of the story of the old woman who lit one candle to St. Michael and another to the **devil**, so that whether she went to Heaven or Hell, she would have a friend. This Chronicles fellow, made sure that he had a friend at court Above, as well as a friend at court Below. He wanted to have it both ways, or wanted to have his cake and eat it too.

You will observe that the authors of the books of "**Chronicles**" and of "**Samuel**" are telling us the same story about David taking a census of the Jews. Where did David get his "inspiration" to do this novel deed? The author of 2 Samuel 24:1 says that it was the "**LORD**" God who MOVED (RSV: "incited") David, but the author of 1 Chronicles 21:1 says that it was "**SATAN**" who PROVOKED (RSV: "incited") David to do such a dastardly thing! How could the Almighty God have been the source of these contradictory "**INSPIRATIONS?**" Is it God **or** is it Satan? In which religion is the DEVIL synonymous with GOD? I am not talking about "Satanism," a recent fungus growth of Christianity, in which ex-Christians worship the Devil. Christianity, has been most prolific in spawning isms: Atheism, Communism, Fascism, Totalitarianism, Nazism, Mormonism, Moonism, Christian Scientism and now Satanism. What else will Christianity give birth to?

The "Holy Bible" lends itself to all kinds of contradictory interpretations. This is the Christian boast! "SOME CLAIM AND RIGHTLY SO. THAT BIBLICAL PASSAGES HAVE BEEN CONTINUOUSLY MISUSED AND MISAPPROPRIATED TO JUSTIFY ALMOST EVERY EVIL KNOWN TO MAN" (From: "**The Plain Truth**," an American-based Christian Journal under the heading: "**THE BIBLE — World's Most Controversial Book.**" (July 1975).

### WHO ARE THE REAL AUTHORS?

As further evidence will be adduced from "**Samuel**" and "**Chronicles**," I deem it advisable first to determine their authors instead of ascribing those books' incongruities to God. The Revisers of the **RSV** say:

- (a) SAMUEL: Author "**Unknown**" (Just one word)
- (b) CHRONICLES: Author "**Unknown**, probably collected and edited by Ezra."

We must admire the humility of these Bible scholars, but their "**possiblys**," "**probablys**" and "**likelys**" are always construed as ACTUALLY'S by their fleeced sheep. Why make poor Ezra or Isaiah the scapegoats for these anonymous writers?

### WHAT DID THE LORD DECREE: 3 YEARS FAMINE OR 7 YEARS FAMINE?

#### II SAMUEL 24:13

13 So Gad came to David, and told him, and said unto him, Shall seven years of famine come unto thee in thy land? or wilt thou flee three months before thine enemies, while they pursue thee?



## I CHRONICLES 21:11

11 So Gad came to David,  
and said unto him, Thus saith  
the LORD, Choose thee

12 Either three years' fam-  
ine; or three months to be  
destroyed before thy foes,  
while that the sword of thine  
enemies overtaketh *thee*;

If God is the Author of every single word, comma and full-stop in the Bible, as the Christians claim, then is He the Author of the above mentioned discrepancy as well!

### THREE OR SEVEN?

Note the reproduction on page 114 and above. Compare both the quotations. 2 Samuel 24:13 tells us — “**So Gad came to David, AND TOLD HIM**, and said unto him, . . .” These words are repeated word for word in 1 Chronicles 21:11, except the redundant “**AND TOLD HIM**” is removed! But while trimming the useless phrase, the author also pruned the time factor from “SEVEN” years to “THREE” years. **What did God say to Gad — Three or Seven** years plague — “on both your houses?”

### EIGHT OR EIGHTEEN?

See page 116. Compare the two quotations. 2 Chronicles 36:9 tells us that JEHOIACHIN was “**eight**” years old when he began to reign, while 2 Kings 24:8 says that he was “**eighteen**” when he began to reign. The “**unknown**” author of KINGS must have reasoned that what possible “evil” could a child of eight do to deserve his abdication, so he generously added ten years to make JEHOIACHIN mature enough to become liable to God’s wrath. However, he had to balance his tampering, so he cut short his reign by 10 days! Add **TEN** years to age and deduct **TEN** days from rule? Could God Almighty say two widely differing things on the same subject?

## HOW OLD WAS JEHOIACHIN? 8 OR 18?

Between Eight and Eighteen years, there is a gap or difference of a full 10 years. Can we say (God forbid!) that the All-knowing Almighty could not count, and thus did not know the difference between 8 and 18? If we are to believe in the Bible as the Word of God, then the Dignity and Status of the Lord Almighty will hit an all-time low!

### II CHRONICLES 36

**9 ¶ Jehoiachin was eight years old when he began to reign, and he reigned three months and ten days in Jerusalem: and he did *that which was evil* in the sight of the LORD.**

### II KINGS 24

**8 ¶ Jehoiachin was eighteen years old when he began to reign, and he reigned in Jerusalem three months. And his mother's name was Nehushta, the daughter of Elnathan of Jerusalem.**

## CAVALRY OR INFANTRY?

Compare the two quotations on page 118. How many chariot riders did David slay? Seven **hundred** or seven **thousand**? And further, did he slay 40 000 "HORSEMEN" or 40 000 "FOOT-MEN?" The implication in the conflicting records between 2 Samuel 10:18 and 1 Chronicles 19:18 is not only that God could not discern the difference between hundreds and thousands, but that He could not even distinguish "**CAVALRY**" from "**INFANTRY!**" It is obvious that blasphemy masquerades in the Christian dictionary as "inspiration!"

## PRACTICAL HOMEWORK

Solomon in his glory began building a royal palace for himself which took him thirteen years. We learn this from the 1st Book of Kings, chapter 7. You remember Dr. Parker's boast (Page 108) about "**whole pages being taken up by obscure names**"? Well, for sheer puerility you cannot beat this chapter 7 and Ezekiel chapter 45. You owe it to yourself to read it just once in your lifetime. After that, you will really appreciate the Holy Qur'an! Reproduced on pages 119 and 120, you will read the passages for your **boring** pleasure. Obtain your own Bible and colour code it for easy reference. You may colour the various references from this booklet in your Bible: "**Yellow**" for all contradictions; "**Red**" for pornographic passages, and "**Green**" for sensible, acceptable quotations as the ones I have mentioned at the beginning of this essay — that is, words that you can effortlessly recognize as being those of God and His Holy Messengers. With just this preparation, you will be ready to confute and confuse any missionary or Bible scholar that comes your way! "IF WE PERSPIRE MORE IN TIMES OF PEACE, WE WILL BLEED LESS IN TIMES OF WAR." (Chiang Kai-Shek)

## HOW HYGIENIC?

Turn, now to page 121 and note that the author of 1 Kings 7:26 has counted 2 000 baths in Solomon's palace, but the author of

Continued on page 123

## 700 or 7 000?

It is certainly naught for Bible-lovers' comfort that a whole nought (0) was either added to 700, or subtracted from 7 000, thus making the confused Biblical Mathematics even more confounded!\*

## II SAMUEL 10

**18 And the Syrians fled before Israel; and David slew *the men of seven hundred chariots of the Syrians, and forty thousand horsemen,* and smote Shobach the captain of their host, who died there.**

## I CHRONICLES 19

**18 But the Syrians fled before Israel: and David slew of the Syrians seven thousand men which fought in chariots, and forty thousand footmen, and killed Shophach the captain of the host.**

### GOD CONFUSED BETWEEN "CAVALRY" AND "INFANTRY" ?

As for the "inspired writers" of the Bible not knowing the difference between "**footmen**" and "**horsemen,**" it is all the more serious because God Himself here stands accused, as a source of that "inspiration" for not knowing the difference between cavalry and infantry. Or is it possible that the Syrians who fled before Israel were centaurs (i.e. a race of creatures with the body and legs of a horse and the torso, head and arms of a man). Is it possible that these "creatures" had suddenly stepped out of Classical Greek Mythology to bemuse the all too gullible authors?

---

\* See page 123 for remarks on the Zero.

## GOD, AS BUILDER, ENGINEER AND CRAFTSMAN

**7** But Solomon took <sup>13</sup>thirteen years to build his own house; so he finished all his house. 2 Chr. 8:1

**2** He also built the <sup>1</sup>House of the Forest of Lebanon; its length was <sup>1</sup>one hundred cubits, its width fifty cubits, and its height thirty cubits, with four rows of cedar pillars, and cedar beams on the pillars. 2 Chr. 9:16 - About 150 feet

**3** And it was paneled with cedar above the beams that were on forty-five pillars, fifteen to a row.

**4** There were windows with beveled frames in three rows, and window was opposite window in three tiers.

**5** And all the doorways and doorposts had rectangular frames; and window was opposite window in three tiers.

**6** He also made the Hall of Pillars: its length was fifty cubits, and its width thirty cubits; and in front of them was a portico with pillars, and a canopy was in front of them.

**7** Then he made a hall for the throne, the Hall of Judgment, where he might judge; and it was paneled with cedar from floor to <sup>1</sup>ceiling. Lit. floor of the upper level

**8** And the house where he dwelt had another court inside the hall, of like workmanship. Solomon also made a house like this hall for Pharaoh's daughter, whom he had taken as wife.

**9** All these were of costly stones hewn to size, trimmed with saws, inside and out, from the foundation to the eaves, and also on the outside to the great court.

**10** The foundation was of costly stones, large stones, some ten cubits and some eight cubits.

**11** And above were costly stones, hewn to size, and cedar wood.

**12** The great court was enclosed with three rows of hewn stones and a row of cedar beams. So were the <sup>1</sup>inner court of the house of the LORD <sup>2</sup>and the vestibule of the temple. 1 Kin. 6:36 - John 10:23

**13** Now King Solomon sent and brought Hiram from Tyre.

**14** <sup>1</sup>He was the son of a widow from the tribe of Naphtali, and <sup>2</sup>his father was a man of Tyre, a bronze worker; he was filled with wisdom and understanding and skill in working with all kinds of bronze work. So he came to King Solomon and did all his work. 2 Chr. 2:14 - 2 Chr. 4:16

**15** And he <sup>1</sup>cast <sup>2</sup>two pillars of bronze, each one eighteen cubits high, and a line of twelve cubits measured the circumference of each. fashioned - Jer. 52:21

**16** Then he made two capitals of cast bronze, to set on the tops of the pillars. The height of one capital was five cubits, and the height of the other capital was five cubits.

IF YOU HAVE PATIENCE COMPLETE READING THE CHAPTER IN YOUR BIBLE.

## GOD, AS LAND SURVEYOR AND ARCHITECT

**45** “Moreover, when you <sup>R</sup>divide the land by lot into inheritance, you shall <sup>R</sup>set apart a district for the LORD, a holy portion of the land; its length shall be twenty-five thousand cubits, and the width ten thousand. It shall be holy throughout its territory all around. Ezek. 47:22 - Ezek. 48:8, 9

**2** “Of this there shall be a square plot for the sanctuary, <sup>R</sup>five hundred by five hundred rods, with fifty cubits around it for an open space. Ezek. 42:20

**3** “So this is the district you shall measure: twenty-five thousand cubits long and ten thousand wide; in it shall be the sanctuary, the Most Holy Place.

**4** “It shall be <sup>R</sup>a holy portion of the land, belonging to the priests, the ministers of the sanctuary, who come near to minister to the LORD; it shall be a place for their houses and a holy place for the sanctuary. Ezek. 48:10, 11

**5** “An area twenty-five thousand cubits long and ten thousand wide shall belong to the Levites, the ministers of the temple; they shall have twenty chambers as a possession.

**6** <sup>R</sup>“You shall appoint as the property of the city an area five thousand cubits wide and twenty-five thousand long, adjacent to the district of the holy portion; it shall belong to the whole house of Israel. Ezek. 48:15

**7** <sup>R</sup>“The prince shall have a por-

tion on one side and the other of the holy district and the city's property; and bordering on the holy district and the city's property, extending westward on the west side and eastward on the east side, the length shall be side by side with one of the tribal portions, from the west border to the east border. Ezek. 48:21

**8** “The land shall be his possession in Israel; and <sup>R</sup>My princes shall no more oppress My people, but they shall give the rest of the land to the house of Israel, according to their tribes.” Ezek. 22:27

**9** “Thus says the Lord God: “Enough, O princes of Israel! Remove violence and plundering, execute justice and righteousness, and stop dispossessing My people,” says the Lord God.

**10** “You shall have just <sup>R</sup>balances, a just ephah, and a just bath. Lev. 19:36

**11** “The ephah and the bath shall be of the same measure, so that the bath contains one-tenth of a homer, and the ephah one-tenth of a homer; their measure shall be according to the homer.

**12** “The <sup>R</sup>shekel shall be twenty gerahs; twenty shekels, twenty-five shekels, and fifteen shekels shall be your mina. Ex. 30:13

**13** “This is the offering which you shall offer: you shall give one-sixth of an ephah from a homer of wheat, and one-sixth of an ephah from a homer of barley.

IF YOU HAVE PATIENCE COMPLETE READING THE CHAPTER IN YOUR BIBLE.

## THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN 2 000 and 3 000 IS ONLY 50% EXAGGERATION!

### I KINGS 7

26 And it *was* an hand breadth thick, and the brim thereof was wrought like the brim of a cup, with flowers of lilies: it contained two thousand baths.

### II CHRONICLES 4

5 And the thickness of it *was* an handbreadth, and the brim of it like the work of the brim of a cup, with flowers of lilies; *and* it received and held three thousand baths.

Whether it is witting or unwitting, the "inspired" writer's singular inability to grasp the difference between 2 000 and 3 000 is unforgivable. It is an obvious contradiction. "AND NO MIRACLE WOULD PROVE THAT TWO AND TWO MAKES FIVE, OR THAT A CIRCLE HAS FOUR ANGELS; AND NO MIRACLES, HOWEVER NUMEROUS, COULD REMOVE A CONTRADICTION WHICH LIES ON THE SURFACE OF THE TEACHINGS AND RECORDS OF CHRISTIANITY." — (Albert Schweizer), from his book: "**In Search of the Historical Jesus.**" Page 22.

**The Difference  
between 4 thousand and  
40 thousand**

**II CHRONICLES**

**CHAPTER 9**

**25 ¶ And Solomon had four thousand stalls for horses and chariots, and twelve thousand horsemen; whom he bestowed in the chariot cities, and with the king at Jerusalem.**

**is only  
36 000!**

**I KINGS  
CHAPTER 4**

**26 ¶ And Solomon had forty thousand stalls of horses for his chariots, and twelve thousand horsemen.**

**The Jews did not use  
The "0" (Zero) in  
the Old Testament**



2 Chronicles 4:5 increases the kingly count by 50% to 3 000! What extravagance and error in the “Book of God”! Even if God Almighty had nothing else to do, would He occupy Himself “inspiring” such trivial contradictory nonsense to the Jews? Is the Bible God’s Book? Is it the Word of God?

### PILED CONTRADICTIONS

Before I conclude this series of contradictions, let me give you just one more example. There are hundreds of others in the Bible. See page 122. It is Solomon again. He really does things in a big way. The ex-Shah of Iran was a nursery kid by comparison! The author of 2 Chronicles 9:25 gives Solomon one thousand more stalls of horses than the number of baths he had given him. **“And Solomon had FOUR thousand stalls for horses . . .”** But the author of 1 Kings 4:26 had real kingly thoughts about his royal patron. He multiplied Solomon’s stalls by 1 000% — from 4 000 to 40 000 stalls of horses! Before some glib evangelist draws the wool over your eyes that the difference is only a nought, a zero — “0”; that some scribe or copyist had inadvertently added a zero to 4 000 to make 40 000, let me tell you that the Jews in the time of Solomon knew nothing about the zero — “0”! It was the Arabs who introduced the zero to the Middle East and to Europe centuries later. The Jews spelt out their figures in words in their literary works and did not write them in numerals. Our Question is — Who was the real author of this staggering discrepancy of 36 000? Was it God or man? You will find these references and many more allied facts in a very comprehensive book — **“THE BIBLE — Word of God or Word of Man?”** by A.S.K. Joommal.

## CHAPTER EIGHT

### *Most Objective Testimony*

The Christian propagandist is very fond of quoting the following verse as proof that his Bible is the Word of God.

***“All scripture IS given  
by inspiration of God,  
and IS profitable for doctrine,  
for reproof, for correction,  
for instruction in righteousness.”***

(**HOLY BIBLE**) 2 Timothy 3:16 — AV by Scofield

Note the “IS’s” in capitals, Rev. Scofield is telling us silently that they do not occur in the original Greek. “**THE NEW ENGLISH BIBLE,**” translated by a committee representing the Church of England, the Church of Scotland, the Methodist Church, the Congregational Church, the Baptist Union, the Presbyterian Church of England, etc., etc., **and** the **BRITISH AND FOREIGN BIBLE SOCIETY** has produced the closest translation of the original Greek which deserves to be reproduced here:

**“EVERY INSPIRED SCRIPTURE HAS ITS USE FOR TEACHING THE TRUTH AND REFUTING ERROR, OR FOR REFORMATION OF MANNERS AND DISCIPLINE IN RIGHT LIVING.”** (2 Timothy 3:16)

The Roman Catholics in their “Douay” Version, are also more faithful to the text than the Protestants in their Authorised Version (**AV**). They say: “ALL SCRIPTURE, INSPIRED OF GOD, IS PROFITABLE TO TEACH, TO REPROVE, TO CORRECT ...”

We will not quibble with words. Muslims and Christians are agreed that whatever emanates from God, whether through inspiration or by revelation, must serve one of four purposes:-

1. It must either teach us **DOCTRINE**;
2. **REPROVE** us for our error;

3. Offer us **CORRECTION**;
4. Guide us into **RIGHTEOUSNESS**.

I have been asking learned men of Christianity for the past forty years, whether they can supply a **FIFTH** "peg" to hang the Word of God on. They have failed signally. That does not mean that I have improved upon their performance. Let us examine the "**Holy Bible**" with these objective tests.

### **NOT FAR TO SEEK**

The very first book of the Bible — **Genesis** — provides us with many beautiful examples. Open Chapter 38 and read. We are given here the history<sup>1</sup> of Judah, the father of the Jewish race, from whom we derive the names "**Judea**" and "**Judaism**." This patriarch of the Jews got married and God granted him three sons, Er, Onan and Shelah. When the first-born was big enough, Judah had him married to a lady called Tamar. "**BUT ER, JUDAH'S FIRST-BORN WAS WICKED IN THE SIGHT OF THE LORD; AND THE LORD SLEW HIM.**" (*Genesis 38:7*). Under what heading, from the above four principles of Timothy will you place this sad news? The **second** — "REPROVE" is the answer. Er was wicked so God killed him. A lesson for all, God will destroy us for our wickedness. **REPROOF!**

Continuing with this Jewish history, according to their custom, if a brother died and left no offspring, it was the duty of the other brother to give "seed" to his sister-in-law so that the deceased's name might be perpetuated. Judah, in honour of this custom, orders his second son Onan to do his duty. But jealousy enters his heart. It will be **his seed** but the name will be his brother's! So at the climactic moment "**HE SPILLED IT ON THE GROUND ... AND THE THING HE DID DISPLEASED THE LORD: WHEREFORE HE SLEW HIM ALSO.**" (*Genesis 38:9-10*). Again, where does this slaying fit into Timothy's tests? "REPROOF!" is the

---

1. You remember Dr. Kenneth Cragg in his "**Call of the Minaret**" and his "**HISTORY**." See full quotation on page 73. **This is that "history!"**

answer again. No prizes are offered for these easy answers. They are so basic. Do wrong and bear the consequence! Onan is forgotten in the "Book of God," but Christian sexologists have immortalized him by referring to "coitus interruptus," as Onanism<sup>1</sup> in their "Books of Sex."

Now Judah tells his daughter-in-law, Tamar, to return to her father's house until his third son Shelah attains manhood, when she will be brought back so that he can do his duty.

### A WOMAN'S REVENGE

Shelah grows up and is, perhaps, married to another woman. But Judah had not fulfilled his obligation to Tamar. Deep in his **heart** he is terrified. He has already lost two sons on account of this "witch," — "*LEST PERADVENTURE HE (Shelah) DIE ALSO, AS HIS BRETHREN DID.*" (*Genesis 38:11*). So Judah conveniently forgets his promise. The aggrieved young lady resolves to take revenge on her father-in-law for depriving her of her "seed" right.

Tamar learned that Judah is going to Timnath to shear his sheep. She plans to get even with him on the way. She forestalls him, and goes and sits in an open place en route to Timnath. When Judah sees her, he thinks she is a harlot because she had covered her face. He comes up to her and proposes — "*ALLOW ME TO COME IN UNTO THEE; AND SHE SAID WHAT WILT THOU GIVE ME, THAT THOU MAYEST COME IN UNTO ME?*" He promises that he would send her a goat kid from his flock. What guarantee could she have that he would send it? What guarantee did she require, Judah queried. "*His ring, his bracelet and his staff*" is the ready answer. The old man hands those possessions to her, and "*CAME IN UNTO HER, AND SHE CONCEIVED BY HIM.*" (**HOLY BIBLE**) *Genesis 38:16-18.*

### THE MORAL LESSON

Before we seek the heading from Timothy 3:16, under which to categorize this filthy, dirty story from the "Book of God," I am

---

1. "**ONANISM:**" Now immortalized in the Oxford Dictionary.

tempted to ask, as you would be tempted to ask: what is the moral (?) lesson that our children will learn from Tamar's sweet revenge? Of course we do tell our children fables, not really for their entertainment value, but that through them some moral may be imparted. "The Fox and the Grapes," "The Wolf and the Lamb," "The Dog and his Shadow," etc. However simple or silly the story, a **moral** is aimed at.

### **'CHRISTIAN PARENTAL DILEMMAS'**

Dr. Vernon Jones, an American psychologist of repute, carried out experiments on groups of schoolchildren to whom certain stories had been told. The heroes of the stories were the same in the case of the different groups of children, but the heroes behaved contradictorily to each group. To one group "St. George," slaying the dragon emerged a very brave figure, but to another group, fleeing in terror and seeking shelter in his mother's lap. "THESE STORIES MADE CERTAIN SLIGHT BUT PERMANENT CHANGES IN CHARACTER, EVEN IN THE NARROW CLASSROOM SITUATION," concluded Dr. Jones.

How much more permanent damage the rapes and murders, incests and bestialities of the "Holy Bible" have done to the children of Christendom, can be measured from reports in our daily newspapers. If such is the source of Western morality, it is no wonder, then, that Methodists and Roman Catholics have already solemnized marriages between HOMOSEXUALS in their "Houses of God." And 8 000 "gays" (an euphemistic term for sodomites) parade their "wares" in London's Hyde Park in July 1979, to the acclaim of the news and TV media!

You must get that "Holy Bible" and read the whole chapter 38 of Genesis. Mark in "**red**" the words and phrases deserving this adornment. We have reached verse 18 in our moral (?) lesson — "*AND SHE CONCEIVED BY HIM.*"

### **CAN'T HIDE FOR EVER**

Three months later, as things were bound to turn out, news reached Judah that his daughter-in-law, Tamar, had played the

"harlot" and that she was with "*CHILD BY WHOREDOM AND JUDAH SAID, BRING HER FORTH, AND LET HER BE BURNT.*" (*Genesis 38:24*). Judah had deliberately spurned her as a "witch" and now he sadistically wants to burn her. But this wily Jewess was one up on the old man. She sent the "ring," the "bracelet," and the "staff," with a servant, beseeching her father-in-law to find the culprit responsible for her pregnancy. Judah was in a fix. He confessed that his daughter-in-law was more "RIGHTEOUS" than himself, and "HE KNEW HER AGAIN NO MORE." (verse 26). It is quite an experience to compare the choice of language in which the different Versions describe the same incident. The Jehovah's Witnesses in their "**New World Translation**" translate the last quotation as — "*HE HAD NO FURTHER INTERCOURSE WITH HER AFTER THAT.*"<sup>1</sup> This is not the last we will hear about in the "Book of God" of this Tamar whom the Gospel writers have immortalized in their "Genealogy of their Lord."

### INCEST HONOURED

I do not want to bore you with details, but the end verses of Genesis 38 deal with a duel in Tamar's womb: about the twins struggling for ascendancy. The Jews were very meticulous about recording their "first-borns." The first-born got the lion's share of their father's patrimony. Who are the lucky winners in this prenatal race? There are four in this unique contest. They are "**PHAREZ** and **ZARAH** of **TAMAR** by **JUDAH.**" How? You will see presently. But first, let us have the moral. What is the moral in this episode? You remember Er and Onan: how God destroyed them for their several sins? And the lessons we have learnt in each case was "**REPROOF.**" Under what category of Timothy will you place the incest of Judah, and his illegitimate progeny? All these characters are honoured in the "Book of God" for their bastardy. They become the great grandfathers and great grandmothers of the "**only begotten son of God.**" (?)

---

1. The Jehovah's Witness Version is more explicit in its choice of words. It does not hesitate to call a spade a spade! Compare Ezekiel 23 with any other Version, and see the difference.

See Matthew 1:3. In every Version of the Bible, the Christians have varied the spelling of these characters' names from those obtained in the Old Testament (Genesis chapter 38) with those contained in the New Testament (Matthew chapter 1) to put the reader off the scent. From PHAREZ in the "Old" to PARES in the "New," and ZARAH to ZARA and TAMAR to THAMAR. But what about the moral? God blesses Judah for his incestuous crime! So if you do "evil" (Er), God will slay you; if you spill "seed" (Onan), God will kill you, but a daughter-in-law (Tamar) who vengefully and guilefully collects her father-in-law's (Judah's) "seed" is rewarded. Under what category will the Christians place this "honour" in the "Book of God"? Where does it fit? Is it your . . .

1. **DOCTRINE?**
2. **REPROOF?**
3. **CORRECTION?** or
4. **INSTRUCTION INTO RIGHTEOUSNESS?**

Ask him who comes and knocks at your door — that professional preacher, that hot-gospeller, that Bible-thumper. Here, he deserves a prize if he can advance an explanation for the correct answer. There is none born who can justify this filth, this pornography under any of the above headings. But a heading has to be given. It can only be recorded under — "PORNOGRAPHY!"

### **BAN THE BOOK!**

George Bernard Shaw said that the Bible is "THE MOST DANGEROUS BOOK ON EARTH. KEEP IT UNDER LOCK AND KEY." Keep the Bible out of your children's reach. But who will follow his advice? He was not a "B.A.,<sup>1</sup> a "reborn" Christian.

According to the high moral scruples of the Christian rulers of South Africa, who have banned the book, "**Lady Chatterley's Lover,**" because of a "tetragrammaton" — a four-letter word, they

---

1. "B.A." short for "**born again**", it is a new sickness. It destroyed the "SUICIDE CULT" of Rev. Jim Jones, in Jonestown, Guyana.

would most assuredly have placed a ban on the "Holy Bible" if it had been a Hindu religious Book, or a Muslim religious Book. But they are utterly helpless against their own "Holy Book," their "SALVATION" depends upon it!

Reading Bible stories to children  
can also open up all sorts of opportunities to discuss the morality of sex. An unexpurgated Bible might get an X-rating from some censors,

*The PLAIN TRUTH* October 1977

### DAUGHTERS SEDUCE THEIR FATHER

Read Genesis 19, verses 30 to the end and mark again in "**red**" the words and phrases deserving this honour. Do not hesitate and procrastinate. Your "coloured" Bible will become a priceless heirloom for your children. I agree with Shaw, to keep the Bible "under lock and key," but we need this weapon to meet the Christian challenge. The Prophet of Islam said that "WAR IS STRATEGY," and strategy demands that we use the weapons of our enemy. It is not what we like and what we do not like. It is what we are forced to use against the "ONE BOOK" (Bible) professors, who always knock on our doors with "**the Bible says this**" and "**the Bible says that.**" They want us to exchange our Holy Qur'an for their "Holy Bible." Show them the holes in the "holiness" which they have not yet seen. At times these robots pretend to see the filth for the first time. They have been programmed with selected verses for their propagation.

To continue: "history" has it that, night after night, the daughters of Lot seduce their drunken father with the noble (?) motive of preserving their father's "**seed.**" "Seed" figures very prominently in this "Holy Bible": forty seven times in the little booklet of



Genesis alone! Out of this another incestuous relationship comes: the “**Ammonites**” and the “**Moabites**,” for whom the God of Israel was supposed to have had special compassion. Later on in the Bible we learn that the Jews are ordered by the same compassionate God to slaughter the Philistines mercilessly — men, women, and children. Even trees and animals are not to be spared, but the Ammonites and the Moabites are not to be “**harassed**”, “**distressed**” or “**meddled**” with because they are the seed of Lot! (Deuteronomy 2:19).

No decent reader can read the seduction of Lot to his mother, sister or daughter, not even to his fiancée if she is a chaste and moral woman. Yet you will come across perverted people who will gorge this filth. Tastes can be cultivated!

Read again and mark Ezekiel 23. You will know what colour to choose. The “whoredoms” of the two sisters, Aholah and Aholibah. The sexual details here put to shame even the unexpurgated editions of many banned books. Ask your “**born again**” Christian visitors, under which category will they classify all this lewdness? Such filth certainly has no place in any “Book of God.”

Al-Haj A.D. Ajjola in his book — “**The Myth of the Cross**,” gives a masterly exposé of the fallacy of the Bible as well as of the crucifixion, in short, the whole of Christianity. No student of comparative religion can afford to be without this publication and “**THE BIBLE: Word of God or Word of Man?**” mentioned earlier on page 123.

## CHAPTER NINE

### *The Genealogy of Jesus*

Watch now how the Christian fathers have foisted the incestuous progenies of the Old Testament upon their Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ, in the New Testament. For a man who had no genealogy, they have manufactured one for him. And what a genealogy! Six adulterers and offsprings of incest are imposed upon this holy man of God. Men and women deserving to be stoned to death according to God's own law, as revealed through Moses, and further to be ostracised and debarred from the House of God for generations.<sup>1</sup>

#### IGNOBLE ANCESTRY

Why should God give a "father" (Joseph) to His "son" (Jesus)? And why such an ignoble ancestry? "**This is the whole beauty of it,**" says the pervert. "**God loved the sinners so much that he disdaineth not to give such progenitors for His 'son.'**"

#### ONLY TWO COMMISSIONED

Of the four Gospel writers, God "inspired" only two of them to record the genealogy of His "son." To make it easy for you to compare the "fathers and grandfathers" of Jesus Christ in both the "inspired" lists, I have culled the names only, minus the verbiage. See page 133. Between David and Jesus, God "inspired" Matthew to record only 26 ancestors for His "son." But Luke, also "inspired," gathered up 41 forefathers for Jesus. The only name common to these two lists between David and Jesus is **JOSEPH** and that, too, a "supposed" father according to Luke 3:23 (AV). This one name is glaring. You need no fine tooth-

---

1. "The **bastard** shall not enter the congregation of the Lord even unto the tenth generation." (Deut. 23:2 — AV). The "Witnesses" have been hypersensitive to this word. Swallowing the camel and straining at the gnat!

# GENEALOGY

## From DAVID TO JESUS

**According to  
MATTHEW 1:6-16**

**According to  
LUKE 3:23-31**



comb to catch him. It is Joseph the carpenter. You will also easily observe that the lists are grossly contradictory. Could both the lists have emanated from the same source, i.e. God?

### **FULFILLING PROPHECY?**

Matthew and Luke are over-zealous in making **DAVID** the King, the prime ancestor of Jesus, because of that false notion that Jesus was to sit on the "THRONE OF HIS FATHER DAVID" (Acts 2:30). The Gospels belie this prophecy, for they tell us that instead of Jesus sitting on his father's (David's) throne, it was Pontius Pilate, a Roman Governor, a pagan who sat on that very throne and condemned its rightful (?) heir (Jesus) to death. "Never mind," says the evangelist, "**if not in his first coming, then in his second coming he will fulfill this prophecy and three hundred others beside.**" But with their extravagant enthusiasm to trace the ancestry of Jesus **physically** to David, (for this is actually what the Bible says — **THAT OF THE FRUIT OF HIS (David's) LOINS, ACCORDING TO THE FLESH**" (literally, not metaphorically Acts 2:30), both the "inspired" authors trip and fall at the very first step.

Matthew 1:6 says that Jesus was the son of **David** through SOLOMON, but Luke 3:31 says that he (Jesus) was the son of **David** through NATHAN. One need not be a gynaecologist to tell that by no stretch of the imagination could the seed of David reach the mother of Jesus both through Solomon and Nathan at the same time! We know that both the authors are confounded liars, because Jesus was conceived miraculously, without any male intervention. Even if we concede a physical ancestry through David, both authors would still be proved liars for the obvious reason.

### **BREAKING PREJUDICE**

As simple as the above logic is, the Christian is so emotionally involved that it will not penetrate his prejudiced mind. Let us give him an identical example, but one where he can afford to be objective.

We know from history that Muhammed the Prophet of Islam, was the son of Abraham through ISHMAEL, so if some "inspired" writer came along and tried to palm off his "revelation" to the effect that Muhammed was the son of Abraham through ISAAC, we would, without any hesitation, brand such a writer as a liar, because the seed of Abraham could never reach Amina (Muhammed's mother) through Ishmael and through Isaac at the same time! The differences of lineage between these two sons of Abraham is the difference between the JEWS and the ARABS.

In the case of Muhammed, we would know then that anyone who says that Isaac is his progenitor, was a liar. But in the case of Jesus both Matthew and Luke are suspect. Until the Christians decide which line of ancestors they prefer for their "god," both Gospels will have to be rejected. Christendom has been battling tooth and nail with these genealogies for the past 2 000 years, trying to unravel the mystery. They have not given up yet. We admire their perserverance. They still believe that **"TIME WILL SOLVE THE PROBLEM."** Perhaps another 2 000 years?!

"THERE ARE CLAIMED CONTRADICTIONS THAT THEOLOGIANS HAVE NOT RESOLVED TO EVERY ATHEIST'S SATISFACTION. THERE ARE TEXTUAL DIFFICULTIES WITH WHICH SCHOLARS ARE **STILL WRESTLING**. ONLY A BIBLE ILLITERATE WOULD DENY THESE AND OTHER PROBLEMS." **"The Plain Truth,"** July 1975.

### **THE SOURCE OF LUKE'S "INSPIRATION"**

We have already nailed 85% of Matthew and Luke to Mark or that **"mysterious 'Q'"**.<sup>1</sup> Let us now allow Luke to tell us who "inspired" him to tell his **"most excellent Theophilus"** (Luke 1:3) the story of Jesus. See page 136 for Luke's preamble to his "Gospel." He tells us plainly that he was only following in the footsteps of others who were less qualified than himself, others

---

1. Refer pages 105, 106

## WHY LUKE WROTE "HIS" GOSPEL?

### THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO Saint Luke

**F**ORASMUCH as many  
have taken in hand to  
set forth in order a  
declaration of those things  
which are most surely believed  
among us,

2 Even as they delivered  
them unto us, which from the  
beginning were eyewitnesses,  
and ministers of the word;

3 It seemed good to me also,  
having had perfect under-  
standing of all things from  
the very first, to write unto  
thee in order, most excellent  
Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know  
the certainty of those things,  
wherein thou hast been in-  
structed.

who had the temerity to write accounts of his hero (Jesus). As a physician, as against fishermen and tax collectors, he was no doubt better equipped to create a literary masterpiece. This he did, because **“IT SEEMED GOOD TO ME ALSO”** to **“PUT IN ORDER.”** These are his prominent justifications over his predecessors.

In the introduction to his translation of the **“Gospel of St. Luke,”** A Christian scholar, J.B. Phillips, has this to say — **“ON HIS OWN ADMISSION LUKE HAS CAREFULLY COMPARED AND EDITED EXISTING MATERIAL, BUT IT WOULD SEEM THAT HE HAD ACCESS TO A GOOD DEAL OF ADDITIONAL MATERIAL, AND WE CAN REASONABLY GUESS AT SOME OF THE SOURCES FROM WHICH HE DREW.”** And yet you call this the Word of God?! Obtain **“The Gospels in Modern English,”** in soft cover by ‘FONTANA’ publications. It is a cheap edition. Get it quickly before the Christians decide to have Phillips’ invaluable notes expunged from his translation! And do not be surprised if the authors of the RSV also decide to eliminate the **“Preface”**<sup>1</sup> from their translation. It is an old, old habit. As soon as those who have vested interests in Christianity realize that they have inadvertently let the cat out of the bag, they quickly make amends. They make my current references “past” history overnight!

### THE REMAINING GOSPEL

Who is the author of **“The Gospel of St. John?”** Neither God nor St. John! See what “he” (?) says about it “himself” (?) on page 138 — John 19:35 and 21:24-25. Who is his **“HE”** and **“HIS”** and **“THIS?”** A-N-D, his **“WE KNOW”** and **“I SUPPOSE.”** Could it be the fickle one who left him in the lurch in the garden, when he was most in need, or the fourteenth man at the table, at the “Last Supper,” the one that “Jesus loved?” Both were Johns. It was a popular name among the Jews in the time of Jesus, and among Christians even now. Neither of these two was the author of this Gospel. That it was the product of an anonymous hand, is crystal-clear.

---

1. See page 85.

WATCH THE PRONOUNS!

## ST. JOHN 19

35 And he that saw *it* bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe.

WHO IS  
"HE" and  
"HIS"?

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO

## Saint John

## ST. JOHN 21

24 This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.

WHO  
IS  
"WE"  
and  
"I"  
?

*The Conclusion*

25 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.

▶ WHAT AN EXAGGERATION!



## AUTHORS IN A NUTSHELL

Let me conclude this "authorship" search with the verdict of those 32 scholars, backed by their 50 co-operating denominations. God had been eliminated from this authorship race long ago. In the **RSV** by "Collins," invaluable notes\* on "**The Books of the Bible**" are to be found at the back of their production. I am reproducing only a bit of that information on page 140. We start with "**GENESIS**" — the first book of the Bible. The scholars say about its "AUTHOR": "**One of the 'five books of Moses'.**" Note the words "**five books of Moses**" are written in inverted commas — " " This is a subtle way of admitting that this is what people say — that it is the book of Moses, that Moses was its author, but we (the 32 scholars) who are better informed, do not subscribe to that tittle-tattle.

The next four books, "**EXODUS, LEVITICUS, NUMBERS and DEUTERONOMY**": AUTHOR? "**Generally credited to Moses.**" This is the same category as the book of **Genesis**.

Who is the author of the book of "**JUDGES?**" Answer: "**Possibly Samuel.**"

Who is the author of "**RUTH?**" Answer: "**Not definitely known**" AND

Who is the author of:

1ST SAMUEL? ..... Answer: Author "**Unknown**"  
 2ND SAMUEL? ..... Answer: Author "**Unknown**"  
 1ST KING? ..... Answer: Author "**Unknown**"  
 2ND KING? ..... Answer: Author "**Unknown**"  
 1ST CHRONICLES? .... Answer: Author "**Unknown, probably ...**"  
 2ND CHRONICLES? ... Answer: Author "**Likely collected ...**"

And so the story goes. The authors of these anonymous books are either "**UNKNOWN**" or are "**PROBABLY**" or "**LIKELY**" or are

---

\* Its first page is preserved for posterity herein on page 85.

## SOME BOOKS OF THE BIBLE

### GENESIS

AUTHOR. One of the “**five books of Moses.**”

### EXODUS

AUTHOR **Generally** credited to Moses.

### LEVITICUS

AUTHOR. **Generally** credited to Moses.

### NUMBERS

AUTHOR. **Generally** credited to Moses.

### DEUTERONOMY

AUTHOR. **Generally** credited to Moses.

### JOSHUA

AUTHOR. **Major part** credited to Joshua.

### JUDGES

Author. **Possibly** Samuel.

### RUTH

AUTHOR. Not definitely known, **perhaps** Samuel.

### FIRST SAMUEL

AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

### SECOND SAMUEL

AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

### FIRST KINGS

AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

### SECOND KINGS

AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

### FIRST CHRONICLES

AUTHOR. **Unknown,** probably collected and edited by Ezra.

### SECOND CHRONICLES

AUTHOR. **Likely** collected and edited by Ezra.

### EZRA

AUTHOR. **Probably** written or edited by Ezra.

### ESTHER

AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

### JOB

AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

### PSALMS

AUTHOR. Principally David, though there are **other writers.**

### ECCLESIASTES

AUTHOR. Doubtful, but **commonly** assigned to Solomon.

### ISAIAH

AUTHOR. Mainly credited to Isaiah. Parts **may** have been written **by others.**

### JONAH

AUTHOR. **Unknown.**

### HABAKKUK

AUTHOR. **Nothing known** of the place or time of his birth.

of “**DOUBTFUL**” origin. Why blame God for this fiasco? The long-suffering and Merciful God did not wait for two thousand years for Bible scholars to tell us that He was not the Author of Jewish peccadilloes, prides and prejudices; of their lusts, wranglings, jealousies and enormities. He said it openly what they do:

**AND WOE TO THOSE WHO**

**WRITE THE BOOK WITH THEIR  
OWN HANDS**

**AND THEN SAY:**

**“THIS IS FROM ALLAH.”**

**TO TRAFFIC WITH IT FOR  
A MISERABLE PRICE!**

**SO WOE TO THEM FOR WHAT  
THEIR HANDS DO WRITE,**

**AND WOE TO THEM FOR  
WHAT THEY EARN THEREBY! <sup>1</sup>**

فَوَيْلٌ لِلَّذِينَ

يَكْتُبُونَ الْكِتَابَ بِأَيْدِيهِمْ

ثُمَّ يَقُولُونَ

هَذَا مِنْ عِنْدِ اللَّهِ

لِيَشْتَرُوا بِهِ ثَمَنًا قَلِيلًا

فَوَيْلٌ لَهُمْ مِمَّا كَتَبَتْ أَيْدِيهِمْ

وَوَيْلٌ لَهُمْ مِمَّا يَكْسِبُونَ ﴿٧٠﴾

(SÚRA BAQARA) Holy Qur'an 2:79

We could have started the thesis of this book with the above Qur'anic verse and ended with it, with the satisfaction that God Almighty had Himself delivered His verdict on the subject — “**Is the Bible God's Word?**”, but we wished to afford our Christian brethren an opportunity to study the subject as objectively as they wished,<sup>2</sup> allowing believing Christians, “**reborn**” Christians, and their own Holy Book the Bible to testify against their “better” judgement.

What about the Holy Qur'an? Is the Qur'an the Word of God? The author of this humble publication has endeavoured to answer this question in a most scientific manner in his book “**AL-QUR'AN — The Miracle of Miracles,**” available FREE of charge from the “Centre” on request, or consult Volume I, Part 4.

1. “**THE BIBLE**” — “**The World's Best Seller!**” the Publishers of the RSV made a net profit of 15 000 000 dollars on the first edition alone! “**What a miserable price in exchange for eternity!**”

2. See Dr. Scroggie's plea on page 101

## *Epilogue*

The reader must by now be convinced, that is if he has an open mind, that the Bible is not what it is claimed to be by the protagonists and propagandists of Christianity.

For nearly four decades people have asked me as to how I have such an "in depth" knowledge of the Bible and Christianity.

Frankly speaking my present position as a Muslim "expert" on Judaism and Christianity is not of my own volition. I have been forced into being what I am.

### **EARLY PROVOCATION**

It was in 1939 when I was working as a shop assistant at Adams Mission near a Christian seminary by that name; producing preachers and priests, that I and my fellow Muslim workers were the target of young aspiring men of the cloth. Not a day passed when these young Christians did not harass me or my brothers-in-faith, through insults which they piled on Islam, the Holy Prophet and the Qur'an.

Being a sensitive young man of 20, I spent sleepless nights in tears for not being able to defend the one dearer to me than my own life, **that mercy unto all mankind** — Muhammed P.B.U.H. I resolved to study the Qur'an, the Bible and other literature. My discovery of the book — "**IZHARUL HAQ**" was the turning point in my life. After a short while I was able to invite the trainee missionaries of Adams Mission College and cause them to perspire under the collar until they developed a respect for Islam and its Holy Apostle.

### **MUSLIMS UNDER CONSTANT ATTACK**

It made me ponder as to how so many unwary Muslims are being constantly assaulted by Christian evangelists who carry out

a door to door campaign, and being invited in by the proverbially hospitable Muslim, I thought of how the merciless missionary munched the **samoosas** and punched the wind out of the Muslim with snide remarks against his beliefs.

Determined to bring home to the Muslims their right to defend themselves and to arm them with enough knowledge to counter the hot-gospeller, the door-to-door peddler of Christianity and the shameless insulter of Islam and its Holy Apostle. I undertook to deliver lectures to show the Muslim masses that they had nothing to fear from the assaults of the Christians.

My lectures were also an invitation to the Christians to witness the truth of Islam and the fabrications which had penetrated the true teachings of Jesus (P.B.U.H.).

### **ATTACK NOT NEW**

Christian missionaries in the past hundred years and more have challenged Muslims on many aspects and quite a number of these challenges have, to my knowledge, gone unanswered or have been partly answered. Perhaps by the will of Allah my contribution in this field can also be answers or part-answers to the challenges of the detractors of Islam. It is of paramount importance that we do not lose by default.

One such challenge comes to mind viz. Geo G. Harris, the author of "**How to lead Muslims to Christ**". This missionary who tried to convert the Muslims of China says in the usual arrogant and condescending manner of the Westerner on page 19 under the heading — "**THE THEORY OR CHARGE OF CORRUPTION.**"

*"WE NOW COME TO THE MOST SERIOUS CHARGE BY THE MOSLEM WORLD, AGAINST OUR CHRISTIAN SCRIPTURES. THERE ARE THREE ASPECTS OF THIS CHARGE.*

1. *That the Christian scriptures have been so changed and altered that they bear little, if any, resemblance to the glorious Injil praised in the Qur'an. This can be answered by the asking of one of the following questions: Wherein have these been so changed or altered? Can you obtain a copy of a true Injil and*

*show it that I may compare it with mine? At what date in past history was the unaltered Injil in circulation?*

2. *That our Gospels have suffered corruption. The following five questions are definite and we have a perfect right to ask them:*
  - (a) *Was such corruption or alteration intentional?*
  - (b) *Can you point out in my Bible one such passage?*
  - (c) *How did this passage read originally?*
  - (d) *When, by whom, how or why was it corrupted or altered?*
  - (e) *Was such corruption of the text or of the meaning?*
3. *That our Gospels are "faked" substitutes for the original Injil. Or that our Gospels are the handiwork of men, not the noble Injil which descended upon Jesus. A little questioning will usually reveal the true situation, that usually the Moslem making the charge is woefully ignorant of the Bible or New Testament as it actually existed in the past or exists today.*

*BEFORE GOING ON TO THE LATTER HALF OF THIS DISCUSSION, A REMINDER IS IMPORTANT THAT AS SOON AS THE OBJECTOR IS WILLING TO SENSE THE FLIMSINESS OF SUCH A CHARGE WE SHOULD PRESS HOME SOME TEACHING FROM OUR SCRIPTURES, THAT OUR EFFORT MAY BE POSITIVE AND NOT NEGATIVE.*

### **HAVE MUSLIMS THE ANSWER?**

Have we as Muslims no answers for these questions? **If you, gentle reader, have read this book you will admit that Geo G. Harris has no feet to stand on.** I have been able to give actual pages from the Bible to disprove his assertions.

### **MUSLIMS CHALLENGED**

On page 16 of Geo G. Harris' book he teaches his comrades a basic missionary rule in order to corner the Muslim prospective:

*"In this chapter it is assumed that the question of the authenticity and genuineness of our scriptures has been raised by the*

*Mohammedan. When this is the case, before we undertake defence of our position we should bear in mind a basic rule. THE BURDEN OF PROOF RESTS WITH THE MOSLEM."*<sup>1</sup>

Praise be to Allah that in my 40 years of disproving the authenticity of the Bible which the Christians have so boldly asked for, I have been able to win the day.

Remember, we Muslims do not go from door to door peddling our religion, whereas Christians of different denominations encroach upon our privacy and peace and take advantage of our hospitality to harass the unwary Musalmán.

Those who are afraid to project the truth when they are provoked by these Christians, who even go to the extent of insulting our beloved Nabee Muhammed (S.A.W.) should re-examine their Eemaan.

The lectures I hold are to sound out these slinking missionaries who "attack" the home and hearth of the unsuspecting Muslim who goes about minding his own business.

The lectures are also aimed at restoring the damaged dignity of the Muslim who has been ruffled by the ruthless attacks of the Christian peddler. Ask the poor Muslims of Chatsworth, Hanover Park or Riverlea<sup>2</sup> as to how they are subjected to the tyranny of certain missionaries.

If this humble little contribution of mine — **"Is the Bible God's Word?"** — finds a place in the Muslim home as a bulwark against the missionary menace, my efforts would be amply rewarded.

A greater reward would be if even one sincere disciple of Jesus (on whom be peace) were to be led to the truth and be removed from fabrications and falsehood.

The greatest reward of course lies with Allah Almighty whom I supplicate for guidance and mercy and pray and crave that He accepts my effort which I dedicate to Him in all humility.

- 
1. **Alhamdu-lillah!** (Praise be to Allah), the reader will agree that in this and our other publications listed on the back cover, we have been constantly meeting this Christian challenge.
  2. These are just a couple of the many townships in which the poorer Muslims is made to live by law under the South African **"Group Areas Act."**

FROM VERY SMALL BEGINNINGS WE  
 HAVE SOUGHT TO SERVE THE CAUSE OF  
 ALLAH IN DISSEMINATING HIS ETERNAL MESSAGE  
 AND IN THE PROCESS SILENCING THE ENEMIES OF ISLAM:  
 WE ARE TRULY GRATEFUL TO ALLAH SUBHAA NAHU WA TA AALA  
 FOR THIS OPPORTUNITY TO EARN HIS PLEASURE  
 AND INLEED, ALLAH NEVER BREAKS HIS PROMISE!

AND TO ALL WHO  
 WILLAMLY WILL ADD  
 MORE INTO YOU

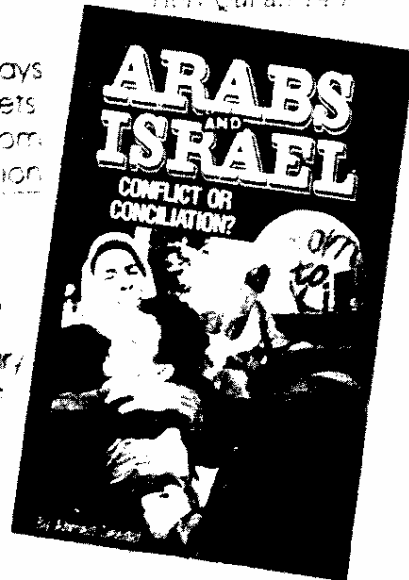
*Handwritten signature in Arabic script*

Holy Quran 147

We could only afford to publish in the days  
 gone by, one to five thousand pamphlets.  
 Today we are able to produce apart from  
 other numerous literature, a quarter million  
 copies of -

**“ARABS and ISRAEL  
 Conflict or Conciliation?”**

Do you consider these efforts necessary  
 and worth while? If you do, then we solicit  
 your help to assist us in extending our  
 ever increasing activities - in  
 particular, we want to "add the word"  
 with a million copies of this book  
 done.



**KEEP  
 THE  
 FLAME  
 ALIVE!**

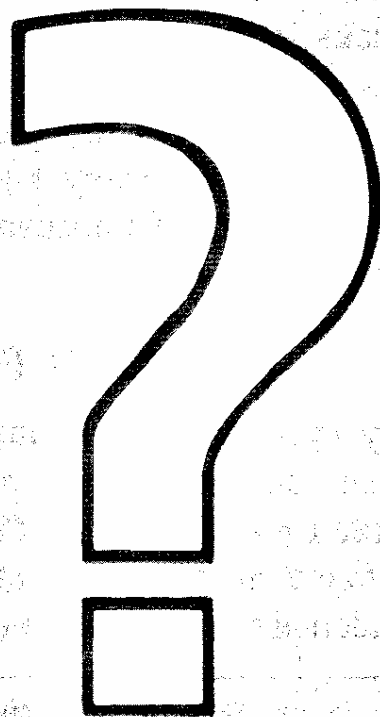
**WE NEED  
 YOUR  
 HELP!**



**ISLAMIC PROPAGATION  
 CENTRE INTERNATIONAL**  
 124 QUEEN STREET,  
 DURBAN 4001, SOUTH AFRICA  
 PHONE (27-31) 3060026  
 FAX (27-31) 3040326



# OR CRUCI- FICTION



## CHAPTER ONE

### *The Only Sales-Point*

#### **“MOST INFLUENTIAL MEN”**

Recently, an American historical researcher and mathematician, Michael H. Hart, published a book : **“THE 100, THE TOP HUNDRED OR THE GREATEST HUNDRED IN HISTORY.”** In his book he gives the names of the **100 “Most Influential Men in History”** and his reasons for their positions in his list. Amazingly, **he** (most probably a Christian) puts Muhammed (peace be upon him) **FIRST**<sup>1</sup> in his hundred, and with good reasons too. And with equally good reasons he places Jesus Christ (peace be upon him), the man accepted as “Lord” and “Saviour” by nearly all his fellow Americans, number **THREE**.

#### **REAL FOUNDER OF CHRISTIANITY**

Though there are at the moment 200 million more nominal Christians in the world than the 1000 million Muslims, Mr. Hart divides the credit for founding Christianity between Paul and Jesus, and he gives the greater credit to Paul. Hence the 3rd position for Jesus. Every knowledgeable Christian concedes that the real founder of Christianity is St. Paul and not Jesus Christ (peace be upon him).

#### **REASON FOR DIFFERENCE**

In any event, if there is any division between a Muslim and a Christian on the grounds of dogma, belief, ethics or morality, then the cause of such conflict could be traced to an utterance of Paul found in his books of Corinthians, Philippians, Galatians, Thessalonians, etc., in the Bible.

---

1. Write for your **FREE** copy of – **Muhummed (pbuh) No. 1, A Chapter by Michael H. Hart.**

As against the teaching of the Master (Jesus) that salvation only comes through keeping of the commandments (*Matthew 19:16-17*), Paul nails the law and the commandments to the cross (*Colossians 2:14*)<sup>1</sup>, and claims that salvation can only be obtained through the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ:-

***“If Christ be not risen from the dead,  
then our preaching is vain,  
and your faith is also vain.”***

(**HOLY BIBLE**) 1 *Corinthians 15:14*

## THE KINGPIN OF CHRISTIANITY

According to St. Paul, there is nothing that Christianity can offer mankind, other than the blood and gore of Jesus. If Jesus did NOT die, and he was NOT resurrected from the dead, then there can be NO salvation in Christianity! ***“For all your good deeds,”*** says the Christian dogmatist, ***“are like filthy rags”*** —

(**HOLY BIBLE**) *Isaiah 64:6*

## NO CRUCI-FICTION — NO CHRISTIANITY

“THE DEATH OF JESUS ON THE CROSS IS THE **CENTRE** OF ALL CHRISTIAN THEOLOGY . . . ALL CHRISTIAN STATEMENTS ABOUT GOD, ABOUT CREATION, ABOUT SIN AND DEATH HAVE THEIR FOCAL POINT IN THE CRUCIFIED CHRIST. ALL CHRISTIAN STATEMENTS ABOUT HISTORY, ABOUT THE CHURCH, ABOUT FAITH AND SANCTIFICATION, ABOUT THE FUTURE AND ABOUT HOPE STEM FROM THE CRUCIFIED CHRIST”, says Professor Jurgen Moltmann in his — ***“The Crucified God.”***<sup>2</sup>

In a nutshell, No Crucifixion! — No Christianity! This is the experience of us Muslims, in this ocean of Christianity, which is

- 
1. One of the multifarious letters/correspondence of Paul among the 27 Books of the New Testament.
  2. **“GOD”**: The bulk of Christendom accept Jesus Christ as God incarnate — God in human flesh. According to the Christian dogma, Jesus must die as God, for a million human sacrifices cannot redeem mankind from their sin.

South Africa. A thousand sects and denominations of Christianity are vying with one another to redeem the “**heathen**” (as they say) from hellfire. However, in this battle no Christian priest, parson or predikant, or hot-gospeller, local or imported, will ever endeavour to teach the Muslim something about **hygiene**; for we Muslims can claim to be the most hygienic people (I am talking about personal hygiene). Nor do they endeavour to teach us about **hospitality**; for we are the most hospitable of people. Nor about ethics or morality; for we are the most moral people — (as a whole) i.e. we don't drink, we don't gamble, we don't date, court or dance; we pray 5 times a day, we fast for one whole month during the Muslim Holy month of Ramadaan; and we take pleasure in being a charitable people. Despite any of our shortcomings, we venture to suggest that there is not another group of people that can “hold a candle” to us in brotherhood, piety, or sobriety.

### BLOOD FOR SALVATION

“**Yes! Yes!**” says the Christian missionary, “**but you do not have salvation.**” Because salvation comes “only through the blood of the Lord Jesus.” “All your good works are like filthy rags,” he says. “If only you Muslims would accept the redeeming blood of Jesus, and take Jesus as your ‘Personal Saviour’, you Muslims, then would be like angels walking the earth.”

### AN ANSWER SUPREME

What are we Muslims to say to this Christian claim? Nothing better than Allah's<sup>1</sup> shattering reply to the Jewish boast!

**AND THEY SAID (IN BOAST),**

**“WE KILLED CHRIST**

**JESUS THE SON OF MARY,  
THE APOSTLE OF GOD”:-**

وَقَوْلِهِمْ  
إِنَّا قَتَلْنَا الْمَسِيحَ  
عِيسَى ابْنَ مَرْيَمَ رَسُولَ اللَّهِ ۗ

1. **Allah:** Allah is the name of God Almighty in the Semitic languages, i.e. in the language of Moses, Jesus and Muhammed (May the peace of God be upon them all). Write for your **FREE** copy of the book — “**What is His Name?**” from the Centre.

**BUT THEY KILLED HIM NOT,  
 NOR CRUCIFIED HIM,  
 BUT IT WAS MADE  
 TO APPEAR TO THEM SO,  
 AND THOSE WHO  
 DIFFER THEREIN  
 ARE FULL OF DOUBTS<sup>1</sup>  
 WITH NO (CERTAIN)  
 KNOWLEDGE,<sup>2</sup>  
 BUT THEY FOLLOW  
 ONLY CONJECTURE,<sup>3</sup>  
 FOR OF A SURETY  
 THEY KILLED HIM NOT.**

وَمَا قَتَلُوهُ  
 وَمَا صَلَبُوهُ  
 وَلَكِنْ شُبِّهَ لَهُمْ  
 وَإِنَّ الَّذِينَ اخْتَلَفُوا فِيهِ  
 لَفِي شَكٍّ مِنْهُ  
 مَا لَهُمْ بِهِ مِنْ عِلْمٍ  
 إِلَّا اتِّبَاءَ الظَّنِّ  
 وَمَا قَتَلُوهُ يَقِينًا

(SÚRA NISÁA) Holy Qur'an 4:157

Could anyone have been more EXPLICIT, more EMPHATIC, more DOGMATIC, more UNCOMPROMISING in rejecting the dogma of a faith than this? **"IMPOSSIBLE!"** is the answer. The only One Who could, would be the All-Knowing, the Omniscient, the Omnipotent Lord of the Universe — GOD ALMIGHTY Himself!

The Muslim believes this categorical Quranic statement to be from God. Hence he asks no questions and seeks no proof.

**"My Lord saith!"** he says:  
 — We hear and we affirm!

أَمَّا وَصَدَّقْنَا

Had the Christians accepted the Holy Qur'an as the Word of God, the problem of the crucifixion would never have arisen. They vehemently oppose the Qur'anic teaching and attack everything Islamic. In the words of Thomas Carlyle — "THEY (the Christians) HAVE BEEN TRAINED TO HATE THE MAN MOHAMED AND HIS RELIGION."

- 
1. "Full of Doubts!" — In a state of confusion.
  2. "Without Knowledge!" — In ignorance.
  3. "Only follow Conjecture!" — Guesswork — Fiction!

## CHAPTER TWO

### *Call Your Witnesses*

#### **HIGH-PRESSURE SALESMANSHIP**

In trying to prove their dogmas<sup>1</sup>, they invent shocking statements and posers — one of which has been used as the title of this book — “CHRIST CRUCIFIED — Hoax or History?”<sup>2</sup> No doubt it sounds provocative; but it is a borrowed title — from the Christian’s own extravagances; from his own vocabulary.

Garner Ted Armstrong, the Executive Vice-President and Co-Publisher of the “**PLAIN TRUTH**” (a Christian Magazine from America, which boasts a current, FREE, worldwide circulation of 6 million copies a month)<sup>3</sup>, attempts to answer his own puzzle under the heading: “**WAS THE RESURRECTION A HOAX?**” This is the typical American way of selling religion. He elucidates his poser — “**HOAX?**” with the words, “THE RESURRECTION OF JESUS CHRIST OF NAZARETH IS EITHER THE SUPREME FACT OF HISTORY OR A **FLAGRANT, DELIBERATE FABRICATION** FOISTED OFF ON THE FOLLOWERS OF CHRISTIANITY.”

Another budding, young “Billy Graham” from America, Josh McDowell effuses in his book “**THE RESURRECTION FACTOR,**” saying, “I WAS FORCED TO THE CONCLUSION THAT THE RESURRECTION OF JESUS CHRIST IS EITHER ONE OF THE **MOST WICKED, HEARTLESS, VICIOUS, HOAXES** EVER FOISTED UPON THE MINDS OF MEN, OR IT IS THE MOST FANTASTIC FACT OF HISTORY.” Since it is not possible for an Oriental to match American superlatives and extravagant verbiage, I do not have to apologise for humbly borrowing their words for my book: “**CHRIST CRUCIFIED — Hoax or History?**”<sup>4</sup>

---

1. **Dogma:** “Principle, tenet, doctrinal system; arrogant declaration of opinion.” — Oxford Dictionary.

2. Original title of this book.

3. As claimed in their February 1984 issue.

4. Now changed to — “CRUCIFIXION OR CRUCI-**FICTION?**”

## CHRISTIAN OBJECTION

To the Muslim belief that Jesus Christ was “**neither killed nor crucified**”, the Christian objects, “how can a man (Muhummed pbuh) a thousand miles away from the scene of a happening, and 600 years after an event, pronounce as to what had transpired?” The Muslim says that the words Muhummed (pbuh) uttered were not his own, but that the Words were “put into his mouth” by the All-Knowing, All-Seeing God. The Christian retorts that he is not prepared to accept the metaphysical aspect of Muhummed's revelation; moreso, in view of the written records by “eye-witnesses” (?) and “ear-witnesses” (?) as regards the happenings on that Easter weekend some two thousand years ago.

The Christian plea is valid. Their logic is good. To entertain their plea we will call up their witnesses and cross-examine them to discover the truth or falsity of the matter from their own authorities. Admittedly, the key witnesses in the case are Matthew, Mark, Luke and John — the alleged authors of the Canonical Gospels. But they have all died and are in their graves. “Yes, that is true, but we have in our possession their sworn affidavits!” says the Christian.

## DEMAND FOR PROOF

When confronted with the extravagant and conflicting claims of the Jews and the Christians to their exclusive rights to salvation, Allah (**Suhba Nahu wa-Ta aala**) commands us to demand for proof. He says:

**SAY: PRODUCE  
YOUR PROOF**

**IF YE BUT SPEAK  
THE TRUTH”.**

قُلْ هَاتُوا بُرْهَانَكُمْ

إِنْ كُنْتُمْ صَادِقِينَ ﴿٢٠١﴾

(SÚRA BAQARA) Holy Qur'an 2:111

And they have produced the only proof they have; in over fifteen hundred different languages! Eleven different dialects of the Bible for the Arabs alone!<sup>1</sup> Are we going to swallow them hook, line and sinker? No! It is presupposed that when Allah commands us to demand for proof, that we would be in a position to analyse the proof, once it is produced. Otherwise, it makes no sense to demand for proof; it would be nonsense.

1. See Page 37 of this Book for reproduction.

## CHAPTER THREE

### *Establishing God's Kingdom*

#### **THIRD PARTY EVIDENCE — “ACCORDING TO . . .”**

The amazing thing about the Christians' sworn affidavits (writings attributed to Matthew, Mark, Luke and John) is that not a single one of them is duly attested. Not a single one bears the signature, mark or thumb-print of its author in the so-called originals. They now boast of being in possession of over 24 000 “originals” of which no two “originals” are identical. Amazing! Little wonder the Christians themselves label their Gospels as — “The Gospel **according** to St. Matthew,” “The Gospel **according** to St. Mark,” “The Gospel **according** to St. Luke” and “The Gospel **according** to St. John.”

When Christian scholars are asked why the words “**according to**”<sup>1</sup> are repeated at the beginning of every Gospel, the obvious implication is that they are not autographed. It is only assumed that they are authored by the names the Gospels carry today. The translators of the “**New International Version**” have unceremoniously expunged the “**According to's**” from the four Gospels in their latest translation. Of the alleged Gospel writers, viz., Matthew, Mark, Luke and John it can be categorically stated that 50% were not even the elected Twelve Disciples of Jesus (pbuh).

#### **PRIMA FACIE CASE**

I dare to claim humbly that such unattested documents would be thrown out of hand, in any court of law, in any civilised country, in just two minutes. Furthermore, one of the alleged witnesses, St. Mark, tells us that at the most critical juncture in

---

1. “**According to**”; This aspect is dealt with in detail in the book — “**Is the Bible God's Word?**” available absolutely **FREE** on request from the Centre.



the life of Jesus —

**“All his disciples  
forsook him and fled”**

*(HOLY BIBLE) Mark 14:50*

Please ask your Christian friend, “Does **“all”** mean **all** in your language, you Englishman?” (This applies to the North American as well) And he will no doubt say — **“Yes!”** “Does **‘almal’** mean **almal** in your language, you Afrikaner?” And no doubt he will say — **“ja!”** (pronounced **Yaa**); “And does **‘bonke’** mean **bonke** in your language, you Zulu?” And he will say — **“Ahe!”** This is true of every language. Why not memorise this verse from the Bible in your own dialect? Even in some additional languages?

So the so-called “eye-witnesses” were not really **eye-witnesses** to the happenings, unless St. Mark is not telling us the whole truth, the “gospel truth.” Yet he is supposed to be speaking under oath! You will agree that a case based on such hearsay evidence would be thrown out of Court, **TWICE** in two minutes, in any court of law, in any civilised country; that is **TWICE** in just 120 seconds flat! But a ghost (dogma) of two thousand years standing, upon which hangs the salvation of 1200 million Christians, should not be summarily dismissed. It deserves a little more circumspection. We will therefore entertain the alleged testimonies of Matthew, Mark, Luke and John as if they were duly attested.

## **WHERE DO WE BEGIN?**

At the beginning of course! — exactly as the Bible does (“In the beginning . . .” — Genesis 1:1) — just 24 hours before the cataclysmic events of **“a thunderstorm; an eclipse of the sun; an earthquake; rocks being rent; the veil of the temple being torn from the top to bottom; graves being opened and sleeping corpses marching through the streets**

of Jerusalem . . .” as narrated by the Christians’ Witnesses. What a scenario for a billion dollar, record-breaking film production!

We must not forget that the Jews are in the dock, allegedly for the murder of Jesus Christ; and we as Muslims are constrained to defend them against the Christian charge, because justice must be done. Whatever their sins of commission and omission, Allah exonerates them from the charge of murder. He says:

**FOR OF A SURETY  
THEY KILLED HIM NOT.**

وَمَا قَتَلُوهُ يَقِينًا ۝

(SÚRA NISÁA) Holy Qur’an 4:157

### PLAYING THE “CRUCI-FICTION” CARD

The Christian world has been unjustly persecuting and hounding and killing our Jewish cousins for nearly two thousand years for a murder they did not commit. Attempted murder? — maybe! But murder? — **NO!** By absolving the Jew of a crime he did not commit, we are also taking the wind out of the hot-gospellers’ and the Bible-thumpers’ sail. In the battle for the hearts and minds of mankind, “cruci-FICTION” is the only card the Christian holds. Free him from his infatuation and you will have freed the Muslim world from missionary aggression and harassment.

### AROUND THE TABLE

On the eve of the Passover Feast, Jesus and his twelve disciples are seated around a huge Table with their host — the “**beloved disciple,**” whose name also happened to be **JOHN**. Johns’ and Jesus’<sup>1</sup> were names, common among the Jews in the year 30 A.C. as Toms, Dicks, Johns and Jimmys are with us in the twentieth

---

1. Of the three candidates for the 3 crosses at Golgotha on the 1st Easter weekend, there were 2 Jesus’. The one released was Jesus Barabbas. See “**Christ in Islam,**” available **FREE** from the Centre.

century. There were at least 14 men at the table (count them if you wish) and not the unlucky thirteen of Western superstition.<sup>1</sup>

## MARCH INTO JERUSALEM

Jesus (pbuh) made his triumphant regal entry into Jerusalem at the head of an excited and enthusiastic following, with high hopes of establishing the “**Kingdom of God**” any minute; riding a donkey to fulfill a prophecy (Zechariah 9:9) —

*Tell ye the daughter of Zion,  
behold, thy KING cometh . . . .  
sitting upon an ass . . . .  
And a great multitude  
spread their garments . . .  
and branches in the way . . .  
and the multitude cried, saying,  
“Hosanna to the SON OF DAVID . . .  
Hosanna in the highest . . .”*

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 21:5-9

Let Luke the beloved physician, add his strokes to clarify the picture.

*“ . . . because he was near to Jerusalem,  
and because they thought  
that the kingdom of God  
should IMMEDIATELY appear” —*

(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 19:11

## HEAVENLY KINGDOM???

*“But those enemies,  
who would not that  
I should REIGN over them,*

---

1. A country as advanced as South Africa, like an adjunct of the U.S.A., has no Row 13 on any of its aeroplanes!!

**bring them hither,  
and SLAY them before me” —**

(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 19:27

**“... Blessed be the KING who cometh  
in the name of the Lord ...” —**

(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 19:38

And John adds that the excited throng exclaimed —

**“Hosanna!  
Blessed is the KING of ISRAEL,  
that cometh in the name of the Lord” —**

(HOLY BIBLE) John 12:13

**“The Pharisees said ...  
Behold, the world is gone  
(mad) after him (Jesus)” —**

(HOLY BIBLE) John 12:19

**“NOW is the judgement of this world;  
N-O-W shall the prince  
of this world be CAST OUT”**

(HOLY BIBLE) John 12:31

Who would withstand such heady-wine of impending glory? Little wonder that Jesus was tempted physically to oust those that bought and sold within the temple precincts. He overthrew the money-changer's tables and drove them out with a **“whip of cords”** — (John 2:15).

## AN ABORTED COUP

The overthrow of the Temple Authority was imminent, and a forerunner to the expulsion of the Romans, heralding the **“Kingdom of God.”** But alas his high hopes did not materialise. The whole performance fizzled out like a damp squib, despite all the **“Hosannas”** and hoorays to the **“Son of David”** and the **“King of Israel.”** All this ballyhoo was only forty years premature.

Jesus had failed to heed the warning of the Pharisees to curb the over-exuberance of his disciples (Luke 19:39). He had miscalculated. Now he must pay the price of failure. His nation was not ready for any sacrifice, in spite of all their infantile clamour.

### JEWISH REASONING

The Jewish leaders reasoned that this one man had almost brought the nation to destruction. Therefore,

***“It is expedient  
for one man to die for the nation” —***

*(HOLY BIBLE) John 11:50*

But with all the mass hysteria surrounding him, it was also NOT expedient to apprehend Jesus in public. They waited for the opportunity of a clandestine arrest. As luck would have it they found in Judas, an elected disciple of Jesus (pbuh), a traitor who would sell his Lord and Master for thirty miserable pieces of silver.

### JUDAS WAS DISGRUNTLED

In the opinion of Christian divines it was the greed of gold which enticed Judas to do his dastardly deed. But he had more money-sense than the Christians gave him credit for. As a purser for the elect group of Jesus he had endless opportunities of pinching pennies permanently. Why jeopardise that for all times for 30 paltry pieces? There is more to that than meets the eye. Judas was disgruntled, after all those mass demonstrations on Jesus' regal entry into Jerusalem — those hot outpourings of: **“The HOUR is come — and NOW is — the Prince of this World will be CAST OUT — I should REIGN over them — bring them HITHER and SLAY THEM before me.”** Jesus had now developed cold feet. If only Jesus could be provoked, he might react with miracles, and bring down fire and brimstones from Heaven upon his enemies; and, of course, the legions of

angels (which he boasted were at his disposal), which would enable him and his disciples to rule the world.

From close contact with the Master, Judas had learned that Jesus was kind, tender and loving. But, he was not a mealy-mouthed man; he was no milk-and-water Messiah. But he could not understand the "hot and cold" blowings of Jesus. Perhaps if Jesus was accosted, he would react, he would yet deliver the goods; to this end Judas schemed.

### THE TRAITOR KNOWN

The furtive looks and the suspicious behaviour of Judas had revealed everything to Jesus (pbuh). He did not need the Holy Ghost to interpret the misgivings in Judas's mind. At the Table in the Upper room where Jesus and his disciples were having that "Last Supper," Jesus dismissed Judas with the words:

***"... What thou doest, do quickly."***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** John 13:27

And Judas took off to put the seal on the deal to the stab-in-the-back.

## CHAPTER FOUR

# *Preparation For Jihaad*

### POLICY CHANGE

Jesus will not be a sitting-duck for a clandestine arrest by the Jews. He prepares his disciples for the impending showdown. Discreetly, so as not to frighten his disciples, he introduces the subject of defence. Gently he begins:

***“When I sent you without purse,  
and scrip, and shoes,  
lacked ye anything?”  
And they said, “Nothing.”  
Then said he unto them,  
“But now, he that hath no purse,  
let him take it,  
and likewise his bag;  
and he that hath no SWORD,  
let him sell his garment  
and buy one!”***

(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 22:35-36

This is a preparation for **Jihaad**, a Holy War — Jews against Jews! Why? Why this somersault? Did he not advise them to **“turn the other cheek”**; **“to forgive seventy times seven”** (70 x 7 = 490)? Did he not send his chosen Twelve with the advice:

***“Behold, I send you forth as sheep  
in the midst of wolves;  
be ye, therefore, as wise as serpents, (?)  
and as harmless as doves.”***

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 10:16

### TO ARMS! TO ARMS!

The situation and the circumstance have changed and as with any wise and able general, the strategy must also change.

The disciples were already armed. They had some foresight. They had not left Galilee with bare knuckles. They responded:

*“... Lord, behold, here are two SWORDS.”*

*And he said unto them, “It is enough.”*

*(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 22:38*

The missionary, so as to retain the impression of the “meek and gentle Jesus,” “the Prince of Peace,” pleads that the SWORDS were spiritual! If the swords were spiritual, then the “**garments**” must also be spiritual. If the disciples of Jesus were to sell their SPIRITUAL garments to buy SPIRITUAL swords, in that case they would all become SPIRITUALLY naked! Furthermore, one does not lop off peoples physical ears with spiritual swords —

*“And, behold,  
one of those who were with Jesus  
stretched out his hand,  
and drew his SWORD,  
and struck a servant of the high priest’s,  
and cut off his ear.”*

*(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 26:51*

The only purpose of swords or guns is to maim and to kill. People did not carry swords to pare apples and bananas in the time of Christ.

### **WHY COUPLE OF SWORDS ENOUGH?**

If this was a preparation for war, then why should two swords be “**enough?**” The reason is that Jesus was not contemplating a battle against the legions of Rome. Since his “**friend**” Judas was in league with the Temple authorities, he was expecting a sly, underhand attempt by the Jewish oligarchy to seize him. It would be a question of Jews against Jews. In such a battle against the Jewish temple servants and the riffraff of the town, he would prevail. Of that he was sure. He had with him Peter (**the Rock**) and John and James (**the sons of Thunder**) together with the



other eight, each vying with one another to go to prison for him; to die for him.<sup>1</sup> These were all Galilians. They had a reputation of zealotry, terrorism, and repeated insurrections against the Romans.

Armed with sticks and stones, and the swords, and fortified with the spirit of self-sacrifice which they had avowed for their Master, he was sure to knock hell into any Jewish rabble that dared to confront him.

### A MASTER TACTICIAN

He had proved himself a skilful strategist and planner, alert and resourceful. This was not the time to sit and twiddle thumbs; to be a sitting-duck, cooped up with his disciples in the upper-room! No, not for him. He leads his platoon, in the middle of the night, to Gethsemane. Gethsemane — an olive press — was a courtyard built of stone walls some 5 miles out of town.

On the way, he unburdens to them the seriousness of the situation. The implications and the explosive nature of the coup that failed. Now he must bear the wrath of the powers that be. The price of failure!

You do not have to be a military genius to appreciate that, Jesus (pbuh) deploys his forces as a master tactician, in a manner that would bring credit to any Officer out of "Sandhurst."<sup>2</sup> He places eight of the eleven disciples at the entrance to the courtyard, commanding them:

***“ . . . Sit ye here,  
while I go and pray yonder.”***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Matthew 26:36

The question that would bug any thinker is: "Why did they all go to Gethsemane?" To pray? Could they not have prayed in the

---

1. ***“Likewise also said all the disciples.”*** — (Matthew 26:35)

2. A leading military academy in England.

upper-room? Could they not have gone to the Temple of Solomon, a stone's throw from where they were, if prayer is all that they wanted to do? No! They went to the Garden so that they might be in a better position to defend themselves!

Observe, Jesus does not take the eight with him to pray. He positions them strategically at the entrance to the courtyard; armed to the hilt, as the circumstances would allow:

***“And he took with him Peter  
and the two sons of Zebedee . . .  
Then saith he unto them . . .  
tarry ye here and watch with me.”***

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 26:37-38

Where is he taking Peter and John and James now? Further into the Garden! To pray? No! To make an inner line of defence — he had put eight at the Gate, and, now these zealous Zealots (the fighting Irishmen of their day), armed with SWORDS, to **“wait and watch”** — TO KEEP GUARD! The picture is very vivid; Jesus leaves nothing to our imagination. A-n-d **HE** (alone) prayed!

### JESUS PRAYS FOR RESCUE

***“. . . and began to be sorrowful  
and very depressed.  
Then saith he unto them,  
'my soul is exceedingly sorrowful,  
even unto death' . . .”***

***“And he went a little further,  
and fell on his face  
(Exactly as the Muslim does in Salaat),  
and prayed, saying,  
'O my Father, if it be possible,  
let this cup pass from me;***

***nevertheless, not as I will,  
but as thou wilt."***

(This is the quality of a good Muslim who submits his will to the will of God).

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 26:37-39

***"And being in an agony,  
he prayed more earnestly;  
and his sweat was, as it were,  
great drops of blood  
falling down to the ground."***

(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 22:44

### MESSIAH SOBS FOR HIS PEOPLE

Why all this bewailing and lamentation? Is he crying to save his skin? It would be highly cynical on his part to do that! Did he not advise others:

***"And if thy right eye offend thee,  
pluck it out . . .  
And if thy right hand offend thee,  
cut it off, and cast it from thee;  
for it is profitable for thee that  
one of thy members should perish,  
and not that thy whole body  
should be cast into hell."***

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 5:29-30

We would be doing Jesus a grave injustice if we thought that he was crying like a woman to save his body from physical harm. He was crying for his people — the Jews. They held a queer logic, that if they succeeded in killing any would-be **Messiah** (Christ), it would be a sure proof of his imposture. For God Almighty will never allow His truly "**anointed one**" (Christ)<sup>1</sup> to be killed — (Deuteronomy 18:20). Hence the insistence of the

---

1. Messiah, "**Anointed**," Christos, "**Christ**." For full explanation, write for your **FREE** copy of the book — "**Christ in Islam**."

Jews as a people, as a whole, in rejecting Jesus, the son of Mary, as their promised Messiah — **“The eternal rejection.”**

### IMAGINATIVE VERSION

This harrowing sob-story, the blood-curdling cries and lamentations would evoke sympathy in the hardest of hearts. And the hot-gospeller and the Bible-thumper is not averse to its effective exploitation. We are told that Jesus was destined to die for the sins of mankind. That he was “being prepared for this vicarious sacrifice before the foundation of the world”. That even before the material universe came into being, there was a contract between “Father and son,” and that in the year 4000 A.A. (After Adam)<sup>1</sup>, God himself in the form of Jesus, as the second person from the enigmatic Trinity<sup>2</sup>, was to get himself hanged to redeem mankind from the Original Sin and their actual sins.

### JESUS UNAWARE OF HEAVENLY CONTRACT

From the “call to arms” in the upper-room, and the masterful deployment of forces at Gethsemane, and the blood-sweating prayer to the God of Mercy for help, it appears that Jesus knew nothing about the contract for his crucifixion. It reminds one of the Biblical Abraham, leading his son to the slaughter with the bluff that the Lord will provide a ‘scapegoat.’

### AN UNWILLING VICTIM

If this was God’s plan for a vicarious atonement to redeem mankind, then obviously He had chosen a wrong substitute. This

- 
1. According to Christian calculations the world and everything in it is 6000 years old.
  2. **“Trinity”**: The closest approximation to the Christian dogma of the trinity as found in the Bible — **“For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one”** - (1st Epistle of John 5:7) -- has now been unceremoniously thrown out as fabrication in the R.S.V., the most up-to-date translation of the Bible. Write for your **FREE** copy of — **“Is the Bible God’s Word?”** from the Centre, for further Biblical interpolations.

candidate was most reluctant to die. Arming! Wailing! Sweating! Crying! Complaining!<sup>1</sup> Contrast these responses with those of Lord Nelson, a war hero, who gave up the ghost with these undying words:

**“THANK GOD, I HAVE DONE MY DUTY!”** There are millions today, who would happily immolate themselves for king and country, with smiles on their faces, with shouts of **“Amand-hla!”** or **“Allahu-akbar!”** or **“God save the Queen!”** Jesus was an unwilling victim. If this was God's scheme of salvation, then it was a heartless plot. It was murder in the first degree, and not redeeming self-sacrifice.

Major Yeats-Brown, in his **“Life of a Bengal Lancer,”** summarises the Christian Doctrine of the Attonement in just a single sentence:

**“NO HEATHEN TRIBE HAS CONCEIVED SO GROTESQUE AN IDEA, INVOLVING AS IT DOES THE ASSUMPTION, THAT MAN WAS BORN WITH A HEREDITARY STAIN UPON HIM: AND THAT THIS STAIN (FOR WHICH HE WAS NOT PERSONALLY RESPONSIBLE) WAS TO BE ATONED FOR: AND THAT THE CREATOR OF ALL THINGS HAD TO SACRIFICE HIS ONLY BEGOTTEN SON TO NEUTRALISE THIS MYSTERIOUS CURSE.”**

### **GOOD FOR EXPORT**

**“No heathen tribe!”** proclaims this Britisher. But the mighty nations of the West, live and die by this **“FICTION.”** If it is no longer fit for home consumption, then it is still good for export! More than 62,000 full-time missionaries (Modern-day Crusaders) are raising the dust throughout the world, harassing the

---

1. **“Eli, Eli, La'ma sabach'thani? . . . Why hast thou foresaken me?”** For fuller explanation of this cry, see **“What is His Name?”** available **FREE** from the Centre.

“heathen” as they call them. Over 40% of these cultists are “**born-again**” Americans!<sup>1</sup>

Strange as it may sound, after every outpouring of prayer, Jesus Christ found his disciples lulled to sleep at their post. Again and again he bewailed:

### JESUS (PBUH) — HIS ORDEAL

*“What could ye not watch  
with me for one hour?”*

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 26:40

*“And again he (Jesus) went away,  
and prayed,  
and spoke the same words.  
And when he returned,  
he found them asleep again . . .”*

(HOLY BIBLE) Mark 14:39-40

Poor St. Mark bemoans that the disciples could give no excuse for their lassitude, their sleepiness. He records:

*“neither knew they  
what to answer him,”*

(HOLY BIBLE) Mark 14:40

However, the most lucid, the most coherent and systematic of all Gospel writers, St. Luke, hazards a guess for this sleepy state of his disciples.

---

1. **“Born-Again:”** The latest cult among the Christians. Billy Graham claims that there are 70 million such cultists in America. Immaculate people, veritable angels! Yet in that nation over a quarter million “gays” gathered in San Francisco last June on a pilgrimage, led by 50 lesbians on motorbikes. In New York, there are **only** one million more women than men and of the “men” it is said that one third are sodomites! Overall there are 10 million **“problem drinkers”** (meaning DRUNKARDS), in the U.S.A. If all this is true with 70 million veritable angels (**“Born-Again”**) in their midst, then it gives a lie to Paul’s: “. . . a little leaven leaveneth the whole . . .” — (1 Cor. 5:6). Here in the Christian West not even one third yeast can ferment the loaf. Strange!

He says:

***“And when he (Jesus) rose from prayer,  
and was come to his disciples,  
he found them sleeping for SORROW.”***

*(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 22:45*

## UNUSUAL REASONING

St. Luke, though he was never one of the elected Twelve disciples of Christ, holds numerous distinctions according to Christians. Among them, the **“most historical,”** the beloved **“physician,”** etc. As a physician, his theory of men **“SLEEPING FOR SORROW”** is unique. Cries and wailings, sobs and sorrows were in abundance from Jerusalem to Gethsemane on the lips of Jesus (pbuh) which would shock and alert to wakefulness any un-ebriated<sup>1</sup> person. Why were the “lullabies” of woe, lulling the disciples to slumber? Was their psychological make-up any different from that of twentieth century man? Professors of physiology opine that under shock, stress and fear the adrenal gland secretes a hormone into the bloodstream — nature’s own injection — which chases away all sleep. Is it not possible that the disciples of Jesus had eaten **too** much and drunk **too** much: remembering that food and drink was all **“on the house,”**<sup>2</sup> i.e. FREE!

---

1. **“Un-ebriated”**: a sober person, not drunk.

2. Note to translators: please do not attempt a literal translation of English idiom and figures of speech.

## CHAPTER FIVE

### *Discretion Or Valour?*

#### SECOND MISCALCULATION

Jesus had doubly miscalculated:-

1. regarding the enthusiasm demonstrated by the disciples in that upper-room, believing that he would only have to contend with the Jews in a furtive arrest.
2. The Jews were more wily than he had thought. They brought Roman soldiers with them.

The Christian scholars are no less wily in their translations and manipulations of the Bible. They have changed the words “**Roman soldiers**” to simply “**soldiers**” and now from the word soldiers, to “**band of men**” and “**the guard**”.

*“Judas then, having received  
a **BAND OF MEN**<sup>1</sup> and officers  
from the priests and Pharisees,  
cometh there with lanterns  
and torches and weapons.”*

(*HOLY BIBLE*) John 18:3

#### CAUGHT NAPPING

The disciples were caught, as the Englishman would say, “with their pants down”.<sup>2</sup> Literally they were caught napping. The enemy trod over them roughshod. Only one of the soldiers of Christ had the presence of mind to ask:

- 
1. “**Band of men**”: here and in the verse 12 following, the words in the so-called original manuscripts are **speira** and **chiliarchos** respectively. Both Roman military terms, meaning “**cohort**” and “**tribune**”. That John is the first Evangelist to mention **Roman soldiers** among the party which went out to arrest our Lord . . .” See Knox’s — “**A New Testament Commentary**”, page 260.
  2. “**Pants down**”: a figure of speech, meaning caught in an unguarded moment; unawares.



**“... Master, shall we smite them  
with the sword?”**

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Luke 22:49

But before Jesus could attempt a reply, the impetuous Peter struck out with his sword and cut off the right ear of one of the enemy. Jesus had not anticipated Roman soldiers. Realising that the tables were turned against his misconceived strategy, he advises his disciples:

**“... Put up again thy sword into its place;  
for all they that TAKE THE SWORD  
shall PERISH WITH THE SWORD.”**

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Matthew 26:52

## **CHANGE OF STRATEGY**

Did Jesus not know the truth of this statement when he ordered his disciples to sell their garments and buy SWORDS? He surely did! Then why the contradiction now? There is really no contradiction! The situation changes, so the strategy must also change. He had sense enough to realise that against trained and well-equipped Roman soldiers it would be suicidal for his sleepy warriors to offer even a pretence of resistance.

## **PRINCE OF PEACE???**

Why do not the Christian controversialists give their “Lord and Master” credit for this simple common sense? Because they have been programmed for a period of two thousand years that Jesus, the “**lamb,**” the “**prince of peace,**” couldn't harm a fly. They overlook the other side of his nature which demanded blood and fire! They forget his instructions to his soldiers regarding those of his enemies who would not like him to rule over them, to bring them forth:

**“... and SLAY<sup>1</sup> them before me.”**

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Luke 19:27

**“Think NOT that I am come  
to send PEACE on earth;  
I came NOT to send PEACE,  
but a SWORD.”**

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Matthew 10:34

**“I am come to send FIRE on earth;  
and what will I,  
if it be already kindled?  
Suppose ye that I am come  
to give PEACE on earth?  
I tell you, NAY;  
but rather DIVISION.”**

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Luke 12:49 & 51

In view of these solemn pronouncements and his repeated vitriolic outbursts against the learned men of his time, if the sword of Peter had prevailed, we would have witnessed a massacre without compunction, equal to that of his ancestor Joshua (meaning **Jehova — Saviour**)<sup>2</sup> who utterly destroyed all that was in Jericho:

**“both man and woman, young and old,  
and ox, and sheep, and ass,  
with the edge of the SWORD.”**

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Joshua 6:21

And the Gospel writers would not have been slow in putting words into the mouth of Jesus, word for word, as fulfilment of prophecies **VATICINIUM EX EVENTU** (prophecies after the event) as recorded<sup>3</sup> of his “father” (?) David.

- 
1. Means to KILL. Jesus broke the commandment — **“Thou shalt not kill.”** — (Exodus 20:13)
  2. **Joshua**: a type of Christ, says C.I. Scofield, D.D. in his Bible commentary.
  3. His “father’s” record: **“The conquered Ammonities he treated with even greater ferocity, tearing and hewing some of them in pieces with harrows, axes, and saws; and roasting others in brick-kilns”**. Maitland’s comment on 2 Samuels Chs. 8 to 12 in **“Jewish Literature and Modern Education”** — (page 21).

## FAILURE, AND TRIAL

The march on Jerusalem had fizzled out. The sabre rattling in the Garden had proved abortive. As there is a reward for success, likewise there is a price for failure. The odds are heavy! Hence the trial, the tribulation, the turmoil and the sweat and blood.

With heavy hands, the Roman soldiers dragged Jesus (pbuh) from Gethsemane to Annas, and from Annas to Caiphas the High Priest, and on to the Sanhedrin as directed by the Jews, for trial and execution.

Whilst Jesus was being manhandled and buffeted towards his doom, where were his heroes who were beating their breasts with the war-cry: **“Master, we are prepared to die for you, Master, we are prepared to go to prison for you!”** St. Mark, the first of the Gospel writers, unashamedly and without any apology reveals:

**“AND THEY ALL FORSOOK HIM, AND FLED.”**

*(HOLY BIBLE) Mark 14:50*

The authors of the 27 books of the New Testament could not find a similar dastardly desertion in the Jewish Bible<sup>1</sup> to fulfil prophecy. If there was, they would have been quick to exploit it.

## GLOATING OVER DEFEAT

In a debate between Islam and Christianity, on SABC T.V. one of the participants, claiming to be **“reborn,”** gloated over the word DESERTION. He articulated the word with such relish — D-E-S-E-R-T-I-O-N — which must have left a taste of triumph in the mouth of the cultists, instead of the bitterness of shame and defeat. The Bible-thumpers have developed a new sickness of glamourising despicability and ignominy. Everyone, male or

---

1. The Old Testament.

female, of these cultists, will not fail to relate their peccadillos, their adulteries and bestialities, their drinkings and druggings. It appears that one must have been part of the dregs of humanity to become a candidate for this "**born again**" cult.

---

Daily News March 25, 1975

## "The Winking Corpse"

Daily News Correspondent

MUNICH. Tuesday,

THE UNDERTAKER was about to put the lid on the coffin of 79-year-old Emma Sikorski when the "corpse" winked at him.

Relatives had found Mrs Sikorski apparently dead in bed in her Berlin home. They called a doctor, who pronounced the old lady dead and wrote out a death certificate.

Then they called an undertaker who prepared the body for burial, put it in a coffin and was about to lower the lid when - said the funeral director shakily - "it moved and an eye winked."

The old lady is now recovering in hospital. "She's got some colour back in her cheeks and is doing fine," was the latest report.

## CHAPTER SIX

### ***Trials Of Jesus***

#### **GONE IN HIS HOUR OF NEED**

In the history of the world, there is no parallel of such a contemptible betrayal. From the beginning to the end, Jesus (pbuh) received the most shabby response from his chosen ones. Professor Momerie succinctly sums up the "Disciples" and their reponse to the Master:

"HIS IMMEDIATE DISCIPLES WERE ALWAYS MISUNDERSTANDING HIM AND HIS WORKS. WANTING HIM TO DECLARE HIMSELF KING OF THE JEWS: WANTING HIM TO CALL DOWN FIRE FROM HEAVEN, WANTING TO SIT ON HIS RIGHT HAND AND ON HIS LEFT HAND IN HIS KINGDOM; WANTING HIM TO SHOW THEM THE FATHER, TO MAKE GOD VISIBLE TO THEIR BODILY EYES: WANTING HIM TO DO, AND WANTING TO DO THEMSELVES, ANYTHING AND EVERYTHING THAT WAS INCOMPATIBLE WITH HIS GREAT PLAN. THIS WAS HOW THEY TREATED HIM UNTIL THE END. AND WHEN THAT CAME, THEY ALL FORSOOK HIM, AND FLED."

If Muhammed (pbuh) was **the "Most Influential Man in History"** — *Michael H. Hart*;

If Muhammed (pbuh) was the **"Most Successful of all Religious Personalities"** — *Encyclopedia Britanica 11th Ed*;

If Muhammed (pbuh) was the **"Greatest Leader of all Time"** — *Lamartine in his "History of the Turks;"*

THEN IT CAN BE CLAIMED WITH JUSTIFICATION THAT Jesus Christ (pbuh) was the **"Most unfortunate of all of God's Messengers."**

The disciples of Jesus **always** misunderstood him. His nation, the Jews, **always** misrepresented his utterances, AND his so-called

**followers are always** misinterpreting his teachings, even to this day. If Jesus were a Japanese instead of being a Jew, he would most assuredly have committed that honourable "HARA-KIRI" (suicide) rather than endure the fickleness and infidelity of his followers.

### **PREDETERMINED JUDGEMENT**

The fate of Jesus (pbuh) was already sealed. Caiphas the High Priest, at the head of the Sanhedrin (a Religious Board of Jewish Deputies), was a man who could have recused himself in any civilised court of law, because of his prejudice against the defendant. He had already condemned Jesus to death without any hearing. He had recommended to his Council, even before the case that:-

***“ . . . it is expedient for us  
that one man die for the people,  
and the whole nation perish not.”***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** John 11:50

Jesus had to be liquidated! There was no question of right or wrong, justice or injustice; it was "EXPEDIENT!" The trial was a farce. By hook or by crook they would have Jesus convicted and done away with. In the middle of the night, what we might call at 2 o' clock in the morning. The Jews had mustered up false witnesses to testify against Jesus. A trial, past midnight was against Jewish practice; but who cares? Despite sympathetic and encouraging prosecutors and jurors, the false witnesses could not tally in their evidences.

It was too much for Jesus. He could not hold his peace. He had to remonstrate. He made a telling plea in his own defence, saying:

***“ . . . I spake openly to the world;  
I ever taught in the synagogue,***

***and in the temple,  
where the Jews always gather;  
and in secret have I said nothing.”***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** John 18:20

In essence, he said that he expounded no secret or esoteric doctrines. He did not teach anything in private which he would not be prepared to proclaim in public. In which case, the Jews would have been able to line up an army of witnesses to testify against him. But what a farce! The Jews could not get even two to agree<sup>1</sup> in their allegations! **“But neither did their witness agree together”** - (Mark 14:59). His argument was so potent that an officer standing by was provoked to strike him to silence. Did that intimidate Jesus? No! Instead, he protested further:

***“... if I have spoken evil,  
bear witness of the evil.  
But if well,  
why smitest thou me?”***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** John 18:23

The victim was slipping out from between their fingers. It was now or never. Legally they could not incriminate him. Direct intervention was necessary. The High Priest interjects with a side thrust. Tell us then:

***“... Art thou the Christ,  
the son of the Blessed?  
And Jesus said, I am ...”***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Mark 14:61-62

## **“SON OF GOD” — NO BLASPHEMY**

There was nothing blasphemous or treasonable in the simple avowal of Jesus (pbuh). **“Christ”** is the Greek translation of the

---

1. It reminds one of the 5000 (so-called original) Greek Manuscripts of the New Testament of which **“NO TWO ARE PERFECT DUPLICATES”**, say the Jehovah's Witnesses. The “cultists” are now claiming the discovery of a staggering 24 thousand Manuscripts; to which of course the same stricture will apply. See **“Is the Bible God's Word?”** for further information.

Hebrew word "**Messiah**," which meant the ANOINTED ONE or the APPOINTED ONE.<sup>1</sup> Nowhere was the word Christ equated with God. We must divorce this notion from the paganised Christian doctrine of the incarnation, wherein God becomes man. The Jewish expectation of a Messiah, did not identify the Messiah with God. Indeed, the nature of Jewish monotheism wholly excludes such pagan connotations. "**Son of God**" is also another harmless expression in Jewish theology. God seems to have sons by the tons in the Jewish Bible. But if you are looking for trouble, you do not have to go far.

You will find it round the corner. The High Priest was exultant. He felt that his rapier thrust had ripped open the defence of Jesus. To dramatise his contrived victory, he began rentng his clothes.

***"What need have we  
for any further witnesses?  
And they all condemned him  
to be guilty of death."***

(HOLY BIBLE) Mark 14:63-64

## **GUILTY OR NOT GUILTY — "JESUS MUST DIE!"**

The Jews falsely charged that Jesus had blasphemed, which is like treason in the spiritual realm. The Christians are "ONE" with the Jews regarding this "blasphemy" of Jesus, but contend that he was not guilty, because as God, he was entitled to "blaspheme" — it was no blasphemy. Between the two (Jews and Christians) they want poor Jesus to die. One for "**GOOD RIDDANCE**" and the other for "**GOOD REDEMPTION.**"

The verdict was quick and unanimous. It was cut and dried! But without the Roman consent, they could not hang him. In the

---

1. "**Christ**": For further references, write for your **FREE** copy of "**Christ in Islam**" in which you will get Biblical quotations of "**priests**" and "**pots**" and "**pans**" and "**pagans**" who are called **CHRISTS!**



morning they took their victim to Pontius Pilate, because, as they said:

***“It is not lawful for us (Jews)  
to put any man to death.”***

**(HOLY BIBLE) John 18:31**

### **PILATE “PASSES THE BUCK”**

On discovering that Jesus was a Galilean, the most troublesome of his subjects, Pilate felt it advisable to “pass the buck” to Herod.<sup>1</sup> You remember, the oldest game in the world. It started in the Garden of Eden according to the Christian Scriptures. But it did not work. After a fruitless attempt to elicit co-operation from Jesus, Herod sends him back to Pilate.

The Jews had condemned Jesus for blasphemy. A man claiming to be God, they alleged. This would not hold water before Pilate. He had his man-gods beyond counting. His Jupiter and Pluto, his Vulcan and Eros, his Mars and Neptune, his Appollo and Zeus, to name just a few out of his Pantheon. One more, or one less, would not make any difference to him. This the Jews very well knew. So they changed their charge from blasphemy to treason. They began accusing:

***“... We found this fellow  
perverting the nation,  
and forbidding to give tribute to Caesar,  
saying that he himself is Christ, a king.”***

**(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 23:2**

### **SECOND FALSE CHARGE**

The charge was absolutely false. Contrary to what they are alleging, he had said, on the subject of taxation:

---

1. Luke 23:7

***“Render unto Caesar  
the things that are Caesar’s,  
and unto God,  
the things that are God’s.”***

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 22:21

What is subversive about this? Like the Christians,<sup>1</sup> the Jews too, before them had invented a new meaning for the word “**Christ**,” viz. “A KING!” So that he could be more easily presented as a challenge to their Roman overlords. Pilate got the message. But this poor man, meek and passive, seemed to be no threat. He did not look like a Zealot, a political agitator, a subversive person, a terrorist!

### **A MASTERFUL DEFENCE — AND A JUST VERDICT**

Incredulously he asks Jesus:

***“... ‘Art thou the King of the Jews?’ ...  
Jesus answered him,  
‘MY KINGDOM IS NOT OF THIS WORLD,  
if my kingdom was of this world,  
then would my servants fight,  
that I should not be delivered to the Jews;  
but now is my kingdom not from hence.’”***

(HOLY BIBLE) John 18:33-36

A masterful defence! No Q.C.<sup>2</sup> could have done a better job. As a man of God, he could not disavow his religious status. His was a spiritual kingdom, a ruler to rescue his nation from sin and formalism. This was all nonsense to the Roman Governor. The man may be deluded, mad; but of no danger to the State. He was on no collision course with Rome. Pilate goes to the waiting Jews and delivers an unequivocal verdict —

---

1. The Christians equate the word “**Christ**” to “A GOD!”

2. **Q.C.** means Queen’s Counsellor, previously K.C. (King’s Counsellor). The highest legal representative in English court of law.

**“... I FIND IN HIM NO FAULT AT ALL!”**

**(HOLY BIBLE)** John 18:38

Though Matthew, Mark, Luke and John are supposed to be writing independent records on the life of Jesus, it is astonishing that the Synoptists<sup>1</sup>, the first three had never heard the words — **“My kingdom is not of this world”** — at all. If God dictated these words exclusively to John, or if he had been informed by some witness, then these words must have escaped the lips of Jesus. A most telling defence against the false allegation of the Jews. How did these words reach any ear, **without Jesus opening his mouth?**

### **SPEAKING WITH CLOSED MOUTH?**

The hot-gospellers are getting hoarse in the throat, singing and shouting, that Jesus was led

***“to the slaughter like a lamb,  
like a sheep before her shearers is dumb,  
so HE OPENED NOT HIS MOUTH”***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Isaiah 53:7

Poor deluded souls, they hymn songs:

***“Hy het sy mond nie  
ooggemaak nie!***

***Hy het sy mond nie  
ooggemaak nie!”***

(And he opened not his mouth). Now, an Attorney-at-Law, claiming to be “re-born” has joined the chorus of Bible-thumpers with the same senseless repetition. Let me quote, word for word from his Book, to enable you to diagnose this new sickness of cultism to which even people having undergone a discipline of

---

1. **Synoptists:** meaning one-eyed; looking from one angle.

Law are not immune. He says:

“ “ Isaiah predicts about Jesus Christ:-  
 1. He would **not defend** himself at his trial (Jesus did not): “He opened not his mouth”. ” ”

When you meet these cultists in the flesh, please ask them, “Did Jesus speak with his mouth closed?” How did the following utterances which are attributed to Jesus, escape his lips without him opening his mouth —

- (a) Before Pontius Pilate: **“My kingdom is not of this world”**  
 — (HOLY BIBLE) John 18:36.
- (b) Before the Sanhedrin: **“If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil, but if well, why smitest thou me”** — (HOLY BIBLE) John 18:23.
- (c) Before God in the Garden: **“O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass away . . .”** — (HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 26:39.

We Muslims believe in the many, many miracles of Jesus, but we would be reluctant to believe that he dabbled in ventriloquism.<sup>1</sup> Again and again, whenever the need arose, during his trials and tribulations, Jesus opened his mouth with telling effect, **“according to the Scriptures.”** But for those who refuse to see or hear, we can only seek solace in the words of the Master:

**“ . . . they seeing, see not;  
 and hearing, they hear not,  
 neither do they understand.”**

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 13:13

---

<sup>1</sup> **Ventriloquism:** The art of speaking, or uttering sounds in such a manner that the voice appears to come from some source other than the speaker. like Charlie McCarthy and his doll.

## THE BLACKMAIL

In the case under discussion, Pilate finds Jesus NOT GUILTY!  
His implacable enemies blackmail Pilate, saying :

***“. . . If thou let this man go,  
thou art not Caesar’s friend;  
whosoever maketh himself a king  
speaketh against Caesar.”***

(HOLY BIBLE) John 19:12

While the trial was under way, Pilate's wife sends him a message:

***“Have thou nothing to do  
with that just man (Jesus);  
for I have suffered many things this day  
in a dream because of him.”***

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 27:19

As reluctant as Pilate was to condemn an innocent and harmless subject, and despite the pleadings of his dear wife based on supernatural visions, he could not prevail against the Jewish “lobby!” He was forced to give in to the Jewish clamour of:

***“Crucify him, crucify him!”  
“Pilate took water, and washed  
his hands before the multitude,  
saying, I am innocent  
of the blood of this righteous man.”***

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 27:24

You (Jews) are culpable for this unjust crime. And he handed Jesus over to be crucified.

## CHAPTER SEVEN

# *Methods of Crucifixion*

### ORIGIN OF CRUCIFIXION

Crucifixion was the common mode of eliminating political prisoners, murderers and insurgents. Long before the birth of Jesus, the Phoenicians had experimented with various methods to get rid of their anti-social characters. They had tried hanging, impaling, stoning, drowning, etc. But all these were too quick in their effects; the culprits expired too soon for their liking. So they invented the crucifixion, a system which produced a slow L-I-N-G-E-R-I-N-G death.

### TWO METHODS OF CRUCIFIXION

The Romans borrowed and perfected the system. They developed a crucifixion for **fast** death and disposal, and another for a **slow** death and disposal.

The Christian Masters<sup>1</sup> are confused in their paintings of the gruesome scene. They portray the two robbers<sup>2</sup> who were simultaneously crucified with Jesus, his "crossmates," one on his right hand and the other on his left hand, as undergoing the FAST method, whereas Jesus himself is painted as undergoing a S-L-O-W process.

The Romans never combined these two different methods. They were never confused, as the Christian artists were, with the fast and the slow methods. The Old Masters have painted hybrid crosses (mixture) of the "fast" and "slow" methods in their

---

1. Meaning great artists like Michaelangelo, Rembrandt, Leonardo Da Vinci, etc.

2. Mark 15:27 — "**lestes**" in the original. Alternatively translated as "**thieves**" or "**brigandas**" is actually a derogatory term for "**Zealot**." These "crossmates" of Jesus were not common thieves or crooks. They were the terrorists of their day, heroes of their nation.

drawings of Jesus' bodily supports on the cross — i.e. with **Sadile** or without **sadile**<sup>1</sup>; either nails or leather thongs to bind the arms to the crossbar; and, either platforms to support the feet, or spikes.

### “THE GOSPEL UNTRUTH”

Contrary to common belief, Jesus was not nailed to the cross, but bound, if at all, like the other two. In the light of the knowledge available, we must regard the “Doubting Thomas” episode as a flagrant “gospel fabrication”, similar to the story of the woman caught in the act of adultery. See page 184 for a reproduction of the Bible page and note that John, Chapter 8, begins with verse 12. Can you imagine any chapter in any religious Book beginning with verse **12** as the **first verse**? Verses 1 to 11 are expunged as a fabrication by the 32 Christian Scholars of the highest eminence, backed by 50 co-operating denominations in their “Most up-to-date Version of the Bible” — the **R.S.V.**<sup>2</sup>

### THEIR HURRY A BLESSING IN DISGUISE

The Jews were in extreme haste to have Jesus done away with. Remember the midnight trial? Early in the morning, they dragged him to Pilate. From Pilate to Herod. From Herod back to Pilate. According to a boisterous American (another “**born-again**”) there were “SIX” trials within twelve hours. At the busiest time in Jerusalem, around the Feast of the Passover, it appears from the Gospel narratives that people of worth had nothing else to do but twiddle their thumbs in great expectation of interviewing Jesus. Exactly as things happen on the “set”, for the shooting of films. Hurry! hurry! hurry!

- 
1. **Sadile**: Obviously a SADDLE, or “horn” which was fitted in the middle of the upright piece of the cross, so that it projected between victim's legs at the crotch to support his body-weight, but for aesthetic reasons the Christian fathers have eliminated the “horn” from the cross. See illustrations on Page 185.
  2. **R.S.V.** stands for Revised Standard Version, first published in 1952. The translators claimed to have had access to the “**Most Ancient Manuscripts**” from which they learnt that the story about the adulteress was a fabrication. See “**Is the Bible God's Word?**” for further information on the R.S.V. available **FREE** from the Centre.





*which the Lord thy God giveth thee  
for an inheritance."*

(HOLY BIBLE) Deuteronomy 21:23

To appease the religious scruples of the Jews (or for any other reason) if it becomes necessary to expedite death on the cross, the executioners resorted to the "**cruri-fragium**," a club-like horror with which the legs were broken. The victim expired by suffocation within the hour. This was the **fast** method.



Note the leather thongs; no nails! This was the "**FAST**" method the Romans used when a quick death was required

Note the "**SADILE**" which was there to support body-weight. Now eliminated from Christian art for aesthetic reasons.

This drawing is an attempt at a more accurate representation of the "execution" of Jesus. To check his ideas, the artist, Charles Pickard, actually manoeuvred himself into this position.

## CHAPTER EIGHT

# *God's Ways Are Not Our Ways*

Was the prayer of Jesus (pbuh) being answered? He had cried to the loving Father in heaven for help, with strong crying and tears:

***“And being in an agony,  
he prayed more earnestly;  
and his sweat was, as it were,  
great drops of blood  
falling down to the ground.”***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Luke 22:44

What can be expected from such heartfelt prayer and importuning? One of the four brothers<sup>1</sup> of Jesus reminds us that:

***“The effectual fervent prayer  
of a righteous man availeth much.”***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** James 5:16

Such heartfelt prayers! Such blood-curdling cries! Such sorrow and sobs! A cynic remarked that it would even bring God down from His Throne.<sup>2</sup>

## **GOD ACCEPTED JESUS' PRAYER**

Paul confirms that his supplications did not fall on deaf ears:

***“Who, in the days of his flesh,  
when he had offered up prayers  
and supplications with strong crying  
and tears unto him that was able  
to save him from death,  
and was HEARD in that he feared.”***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Hebrews 5:7

- 
1. The Christians give brothers and sisters to Jesus, through a union of Mary with Joseph the Carpenter. (Matthew 13:55-56).
  2. God Almighty does not go up or down. He is Omnipresent, All-Prevading, Present everywhere!

What does it mean **“God heard”** his prayers! It means that God **accepted** his prayers. God Almighty is not deaf at any time. He is the All-Hearing God. He heard (accepted) the supplication of Jesus in the same way that He had heard (accepted) the prayer of father Abraham. Abraham, in his old age had prayed for a son, and Ishmael was born. The words of Abraham had become flesh. ‘Ishmael’ literally means ‘GOD HEARD’ in Hebrew. Zakariah also in his old age prayed for a son, and God heard (accepted) his prayers, and John the Baptist was born. Now Jesus cried for help, and God heard (accepted) his prayers:

***“And there appeared an angel  
unto him from heaven,  
strengthening him.”***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Luke 22:43

Strengthening him in the faith, in the hope that God will save him. This is actually what he was beseeching God to do for him. When and how rests alone in the Hands of God. His ways are not our ways. Count the blessings so far:

- (a) An assurance from Heaven.
- (b) Pilate finds him not guilty!
- (c) His wife shown a dream in which she is told that no harm should come to Jesus.
- (d) Legs not broken!
- (e) In a hurry to bring him down from the cross.

### **• WHAT USE — “THE BONES” . . .**

The fourth above: **“and they brake not his legs”**, we are told was in fulfilment of a prophecy:

***“He keepeth all his bones,  
not one of them is broken.”***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Psalm 34:20

If the bones of a victim were to be protected from harm, then they could only be of benefit if the person was ALIVE! For a person, already dead, intact bones means nothing whether they are sawed into pieces, or smashed into smithereens, it will not make any difference to the resurrected body, the spirit or the ghost. But for

living persons on the cross (like the "crossmates" of Jesus), the breaking of the legs made all the difference between life and death. The pagan Romans were not hell-bound to fulfil any prophecy. Their reason was that they

**"SAW that he was dead already,  
they brake not his legs."**

(HOLY BIBLE) John 19:33

**"SAW"** is a very simple word. We may yet ask, what did they see? Could it be the fulfilment of the words of Christ: **"seeing, ye shall see and shall not perceive"** — (Matthew 13:14). When John says that the soldiers "saw", he means that they surmised. For no modern-day stethoscope was used to verify death; nor did anyone touch his body or feel his pulse before concluding that **"he was already dead."** I see in the word "saw" another step in God's plan of rescue.

WEEKEND  
**WORLD**

## CRUCIFIED

This man is not being **CRUCIFIED** as the newspaper proclaimed but is being **CRUCI-FICTED!**<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Pieter van der Bergh is lowered to the ground after hanging on a cross for 20 minutes. Mr. van der Bergh, a barman from Newcastle, **Natal**, allowed himself to be nailed to the cross last week to prove "that man is master over his body."



1. See page 235 for explanation.

## CHAPTER NINE

### ***"Resurrections," Daily!***

#### **STRANGER THAN FICTION**

With all the advancement in the medical field since Christ; with all the modern, scientific instruments at our disposal; hundreds of people are being certified "dead" everyday all over the world. Whilst busy writing this, my attention is being drawn to the near murder of a Mr. Barnabas who was being carried to the mortuary after being "declared clinically dead" not by inexperienced ancient Roman soldiers, but by highly-qualified medical men. The news item is reproduced on the side, as it is, as a New Year '84 shock!<sup>1</sup> This, with another shocker from Ripley's "BELIEVE IT OR NOT!," is also reproduced on page 233, with a suggestion that some young journalist keep his eyes open for people who have come back from the "dead," and write an anthology, which may become a best-seller. Here is a list for a start. What would you say?

#### **RESURRECTED OR RESUSCITATED?**

1. LITTLE GIRL WHO "DIED" TELLS HOW SHE CAME BACK TO LIFE (After 4 Days) — ("Daily News" 15/11/55).
2. MAN DIED FOR TWO HOURS: STILL LIVES — "Miracle" amazes doctors — ("Sunday Tribune" 27/3/60).
3. HE DIED FOR 4 MINUTES — Man's heart stops but he lives on — ("Sunday Express" 23/7/61).
4. HE DOES NOT KNOW THAT HE DIED FOR 90 SECONDS — ("Cape Argus" 16/3/61).
5. DR. HITGE RETURNED FROM THE DEAD — ("Cape Argus" 4/5/61).
6. THE COFFIN MOVED — Young man narrowly escaped being buried alive — ("Sunday Tribune" 13/5/62).

---

1. See page 233.

7. BACK FROM THE DEAD — After being thought dead for 2 days — (“Post” 25/7/65).
8. “CORPSE” WINKS AT UNDERTAKER — Doctor wrote out a death certificate — (“Daily News” 25/3/75).
9. “CLINICALLY DEAD” — Toddler alive after hour-long revival battle — (“Natal Mercury” 5/12/82).
10. WAS HE DEAD OR ALIVE? — The dilemma facing transplant doctors — (“Sunday Tribune” 17/7/83).
11. SHAKEN AND STIRRED — Declared clinically dead “from too much Christmas liquor” — (“Daily News” 3/1/84).

This sombre list would be incomplete without the picture of an exclusive club, the only qualification of whose membership is — TO HAVE DIED AND LIVED AGAIN! If everything happened to Jesus “**according to the Scriptures,**” then, he could easily become its doyen (Senior member of a body).



**T**HIS picture is an undertaker's nightmare. It shows the first seven members of the most exclusive club in the world — motto: “It's Good to be Alive” — at a luncheon at London's Savoy Hotel.

Qualification for membership: To have died and lived again.

From the left are: Mr. Percy Hopcroft, Mrs. Dorothy Dickins, Timothy Poole, Mrs. Barbara Poole, Mr. Desmond White, Mrs. Kathleen Holder and Mrs. Molly Barnes. Mr. Hopcroft died 30 years ago in hospital, was brought back again by artificial respiration. Mrs. Dickins, mother of seven, died twice on the same day — Friday the 13th — during an operation. The first death lasted two-and-a-half minutes. The surgeon made an incision above her heart, revived her by massage. Just when

he had sewed her up her heart stopped again for four minutes.

Timothy Poole is the nine-year-old son of Mrs. Barbara Poole, whose heart stopped for two minutes when Timothy was born. And it took a doctor 30 minutes to bring Timothy to life. Desmond White, 22-year-old conscript serving in Germany, died for four minutes last December. Mrs. Kathleen Holder (39) died for six minutes 15 years ago. Mrs. Molly Barnes (41), died two years ago during a mastoid operation.

## CHAPTER TEN

### *Sympathy For Jesus*

God works in a mysterious way. He inspires the soldiers to think that the victim is “**dead already**” so as not to break his legs, but at the same time inspires another to lance him on the side<sup>1</sup> with a spear, and ...

“... **FORTHWITH came there out blood and water.**”

(**HOLY BIBLE**) John 19:34

It is a Blessing of God that when the human body cannot endure further pain or agony, unconsciousness supervenes. But immobility, fatigue and the unnatural stance on the cross<sup>2</sup> must have slowed down the blood circulation. The lancing came to the rescue. By “blood-letting”, the circulation could regain its rhythm. We are assured in the Encyclopedia Biblica, under the article “**cross,**” column 960, that “**Jesus was alive when the spear was thrust.**” This also confirms the statement of John that the flow of “**water and blood**” was instantaneous. In his own words he says: “FORTHWITH” — straightaway, immediately, which was a sure sign that Jesus was ALIVE!

But why the “Water and the Blood?” Dr. W.B. Primrose, a senior anaesthetist of the Glasgow Royal Infirmary, gave his expert opinion. In the “**Thinkers Digest,**” London, winter 1949 issue, he said that “THE WATER WAS A RESULT OF THE NERVOUS UPSET OF THE BLOOD VESSELS LOCALLY DUE TO THE OVER-STIMULATING EFFECT OF THE SCOURGING BY STAVES.” This may be an extreme case, but so was his sweating, like “**great drops of blood, falling down to the ground,**” when Jesus was in agony in the Garden of Gethsemane. Medical authorities also confirm the latter phenomenon.

- 
1. The “side” of his body and not the front.
  2. See page 239 for illustration reproduced from “A Campus Crusade” publication where a “**born-again**” cultist after 1000 hours study of the cruci-FICTION is inspired to draw that caricature of Jesus.

## EVANGELISTS DIFFER

The Gospel writers are not unanimous regarding the time when Jesus was hoisted onto the cross. But John tells us that Jesus (pbuh) was still before Pilate in the praetorium at 12 noon: “. . . **and about the sixth hour** (Hebrew time), **he saith unto the Jews, Behold, your King!**” — (*John 19:14*). And after much wrangling he was handed over for crucifixion. Imagine the disorderly mob, the heavy cross which Jesus himself is supposed to have been loaded with. The long climb to Gol'gotha could never have been accomplished in minutes. And the saddling, the tying and the lifting must have taken some time. On TV shots, they can do it all in 30 seconds! But we know that in real life it does not happen that fast. The author of John's Gospel failed to record the time when “**Jesus gave up the ghost**” (*John 19:30*), but the synoptists seem to be agreed that it was around the “**ninth hour,**” meaning 3 p.m.

Dean Farrar, in his “**Life of Christ,**” says on page 421, that “**JESUS WAS ON THE CROSS FOR ONLY THREE HOURS — WHEN TAKEN DOWN.**”

## PONTIUS PILATE MARVELS

We are told in the Gospels, in varying terms, that between the “**sixth**” and the “**ninth**” hours, there was THUNDER, an ECLIPSE and an EARTHQUAKE! — Without purpose? No, to disperse the sadistic mob after their enjoyment of a Roman holiday. To enable the hands of mercy, his “**secret**” and faithful disciples, to come to his succour.

Joseph of Arimathea together with a sympathetic Roman centurion who had declared: “**Truly this man was the Son of God**” (*Mark 15:39*), went to Pilate to claim the body of Jesus, and:

**“Pilate marvelled  
if he were already dead,  
and calling unto him the centurion,  
he asked him whether  
he had been any while dead.”**

(HOLY BIBLE) Mark 15:44



What was the reason for Pilate's amazement? Why did he marvel? He knew from experience that normally no man would die within 3 hours on the cross, unless the "**crurifragium**" was resorted to, which was not done in the case of Jesus; unlike in that of his "crossmates", who were given the treatment **because they were still ALIVE!**

### REASON FOR MARVELLING

It stands to reason, that if a man faces a firing squad, and shots are fired into his body, and he dies, there would be nothing to "marvel" about. If a person is taken to the gallows and is hanged, and he dies, there is nothing to "marvel" about. But should they survive, after our common knowledge expects them to die, then there is much to MARVEL about. Conversely, Pilate expects that Jesus should be ALIVE on the cross, and not dead as he is being told, therefore his marvelling is only but natural. He had no special reason for verifying whether Jesus was dead or alive. If he was ALIVE — so what? Had he not found Jesus innocent of the charges levelled against him by the Jews? Did his wife not warn him against doing any harm to "**that just man**"? So if Jesus was alive, — Good Luck to him. Pilate grants permission for Joseph to have the body.

### SO HE HAD "SECRET" DISCIPLES

The so-called disciples of Jesus, whom he called "**my mother and brethren!**"<sup>1</sup> (in preference to his own mother and his uterine brothers and sisters), were nowhere in sight when he was most in need. His "secret" disciples, Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus, would never have been heard of had it not been for Jesus' ordeal. And they were the only persons to handle the body of Jesus, with Mary Magdalene and the other Mary(s)<sup>2</sup> as the only spectators.

To satisfy the religious scruples of the Jews — the burial bath, the anointing and the shrouding — would well-nigh have taken more than two hours. If there were any signs of life in the limp body, no one was foolish enough to shout to the retreating curiosity mongers: "He is ALIVE! He is ALIVE!" They knew that the Jews would then make doubly sure that that life was snuffed out.

---

1. Matthew 12:49

2. Mark 15:47

## CHAPTER ELEVEN

### *Why The Inverted Commas "...”?*

#### **JEWES SUSPICIOUS AND UNEASY**

We must not suppose that Jesus was buried 6 feet underground. The sepulchre was a big, airy chamber and not a grave. Jim Bishop (a Christian authority of note), in his book **“The Day Christ Died,”** gives the dimensions as 5 feet wide by 7 feet high by 15 feet deep, with a ledge or ledges inside, which any “pondokkie” dweller in our slums would have been happy to own as his residence. The Jews were suspicious. It was all very “fishy.”

- (a) The tomb within easy reach.
- (b) Helping hands of his “secret” disciples.
- (c) His “crossmates” still alive.
- (d) His legs not broken, whereas those of his “crossmates” were!
- (e) Quick and easy permission granted by Pilate to obtain the body of Jesus.

For these and many more reasons, the Jews were suspicious. They felt that they had been cheated. Jesus was ALIVE! (?) So they ran to Pilate. But they had missed the bus again! They were 24 hours too late!

#### **JEWISH ERRORS**

***“Now the NEXT day . . . the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate, Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said . . . Command, therefore, that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest . . . the LAST error shall be worse than the FIRST (error).”***

**(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 27:62-64**

The Jews are talking about "**first**" and "**last**", not realising that in all their nervous haste they had made another slip. They had gone to Pilate only the NEXT day. They wanted to close the stable door after the horse had bolted. Pilate was not interested in their childish plots. He had had enough of them. So he says to them:

*"... Ye have a watch:<sup>1</sup> go your way,  
make it as sure as ye can."*

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 27:65

He was not going to pander to their whim. He had more than enough reasons to hate them.

### CULTISTS' MANIA

What the Jews did or did not do after Pilate's curt reply is immaterial. They had already lost a day! But the Christian cultists clutching at straws, transform the Jewish temple "**guard**" to soldiers, and make these "**soldiers**" into "**Roman**" soldiers. Then they fill pages expounding the efficiency of the Roman military machine, that it can never be caught napping or caught off-guard! And the dire consequences in store for any that slipped. Did all this make the Roman soldier impeccable, faultless (?). By the time the unwary and weary reader wades through the profuse, irrelevant details, he is ready to swallow everything hook, line, and sinker uncritically. It is a deception they have developed as an art!

What was the FIRST "**error**" that the Jews made in wanting to eliminate Jesus? The first was that they had permitted Jesus to be brought down from the cross without breaking his legs, under the false assumption that he had died. The LAST would be to allow the "secret" disciples of Jesus to render help to the wounded man, by NOT sealing off the tomb. But in the meantime, they made another mistake by approaching Pilate the "**NEXT**" day which

---

1. From the word "**watch**" in the King James Version of the Bible, and "**guard**" of the Roman Catholic Version; the 32 Christian scholars of the R.S.V. have now interpolated the words, "**of soldiers**" after the word "**GUARD**", reading "**guard of soldiers**". There is no end to Christian theological ingenuity! Further see page 184 again; the revisers have re-revised the R.S.V. and have re-inserted the spicy verses about the woman "**caught in the act**", once more into their 1971 Version.

was **TOO LATE!** God works in a mysterious way. His Ways are not our ways. He says:

**AND (THE UNBELIEVERS)  
PLOTTED AND PLANNED,**

وَمَكْرُوا

**AND ALLAH TOO PLANNED,**

وَمَكَرَ اللَّهُ ط

**AND THE BEST OF  
PLANNERS IS ALLAH!**

وَاللَّهُ خَيْرُ الْمَكْرِينِ ؕ

(SÚRA AL-i-'IMRÁN) Holy Qur'an 3:54

## SUNDAY MORNING

It was Sunday morning, the **FIRST** day of the week, according to Hebrew calculations, with Saturday the **Sabbath** as the seventh, when Mary Magdalene **alone** (Mark 16:9 and John 20:1) visited the tomb of Jesus.

The question arises: "Why did she go there?" "**TO ANOINT HIM,**" Mark 16:1 tells us. The Hebrew word for anoint is "**masaha,**" which means to rub, to massage, to anoint.<sup>1</sup> The second question is: "Do Jews massage dead bodies after 3 days?" The answer is "**No!**" "Do the Christians massage dead bodies after 3 days?" The answer again is, "**No!**" Do the Muslims (who are the nearest to the Jews in their ceremonial laws) massage dead bodies after 3 days? And the answer again is, "**No!**" Then why should a Jewess want to massage a dead, decaying body after 3 days? We know that within 3 hours **rigor mortis** sets in — the stiffening of the body after death. In 3 days' time, the body would be fermenting from within — the body cells would be breaking up and decomposing. If anyone rubs such a decaying body, it will fall to pieces. Does the rubbing make sense? **No!**

It would, however, make sense if she was looking for a **LIVE** person. You see, she was about the only person besides Joseph of Arimathe'a and Nicodemus who had given the final rites to

---

1. This aspect is dealt with in greater detail in a book: "**WHO MOVED THE STONE**", available **FREE** from the Centre.

the body of Jesus. If she had seen any sign of life in the limp body of Jesus when he was taken down from the cross, she was not going to shout, "HE IS ALIVE!" She returns after 2 nights and a day, when the Jewish Sabbath had passed, to take care of Jesus.

### STONE REMOVED — WINDING SHEETS UNWOUND

She was sorely amazed to find on arrival, that somebody had already removed the stone and, on peeping into the tomb, she finds that the winding sheets (shroud) were folded up inside. More questions arise? "Why was the stone removed?" Because for a resurrected body, one which had conquered death, it was not necessary for the stone to be removed for it to get out, nor was it necessary for the winding sheets to be unwound for it to move. Because, for a spiritualised body: "STONE WALLS DO NOT A PRISON MAKE, NOR IRON BARS A CAGE."

The removal of the stone and the unwinding of the winding sheets was the need of a **physically resuscitated body**, not that of a resurrected<sup>1</sup> body! The empty tomb was an anticlimax to what she had expected! So the hysterical woman (Jesus had had to cast out of her "**seven devils**" — *Mark 16:9*) breaks down and sobs. Jesus was all the while watching her from the vicinity — not from heaven, but from earth.

This burial vault (tomb) was a privately owned property belonging to Joseph of Arimathe'a (a very rich, influential Jew), who could afford to carve out of rock the big roomy chamber.<sup>2</sup> Around this tomb was his vegetable garden. Please do not try to tell me that this Jew was so generous that he was planting vegetables 5 miles out of town, for other people's goats and sheep to graze upon. Surely, he must also have built gardeners' quarters for his labourers and his own country home for himself and his family to relax during the weekends?

---

1. Obtain your **FREE** copy of "**RESURRECTION OR RESUSCITATION?**" from the Centre.

2. Dimensions already given on page 194.

## A PRACTICAL JOKE

Jesus is there! He is watching this woman. He knows who she is, and he knows why she is there. He approaches her from behind, and finds her crying. So he asks her:

***“Woman, why weepst thou?  
Whom seekest thou?”***

*(HOLY BIBLE) John 20:15*

Before she replies, allow me to interject: “Why does he ask what appears to be silly questions? Doesn’t he know the obvious reasons? Of course he does! Then why the silly questions?”

The answer is that in reality they are not silly questions, though they appear to be so. He knows that this woman is looking for him, and she is disappointed at not finding him; hence the weeping. But he also knows that because of his heavy disguise she would not be able to recognise him. So metaphorically speaking, he is pulling her leg. In describing this incident, John, referring to Mary Magdalene, says:

***“She supposing him  
to be the gardener,  
saith unto him.”***

*(Still John 20:15)*

Now why should she suppose that he is a **gardener**? Do resurrected persons look like “gardeners?” No!! Then why does she suppose him to be a gardener? Because he is **disguised** as a GARDENER! Why is he disguised as a gardener? Because he is **afraid** of the Jews! Why is he afraid of the Jews? Because he did **not die** and did **not conquer death**! If he had died, and if he had conquered death, then he would not be afraid anymore. Why not? Because a resurrected body cannot die twice! Who says so? The Bible says so. Where? In the Book of Hebrews 9:27. It says:

***“... it is ordained  
unto all men ONCE to die,  
and after that the judgement.”***

## BACK FROM THE DEAD

But what about the hundreds of people who have come back from the "dead?" We read about them daily in our newspapers. Those persons who were certified dead by medical men, and who subsequently came back to life; were not really DEAD, in the sense of DEATH AND RESURRECTION. Our doctors have erred and will continue to make mistakes; it cannot be helped. But I want you to note the word "**dead**" on page 145, and "**Corpse**" on page 120, and "**crucifixion**" on page 237. All these words are in inverted commas. The honest and alert newspaper reporter in each case is telling us, very subtly, that the "DEAD" was not really dead. That the "CORPSE" was not really a corpse, and that the "CRUCIFIXIONS" were not really crucifixions but cruci-**fictions!** They were SO-CALLED dead, the SO-CALLED corpse, the SO-CALLED crucifixions, etc. But from the newspaper circulation point of view, the word "SO-CALLED" would greatly diminish the sensationalism, lessen the news value, and reduce possible sales. After all business is business! Hence the inverted commas ". . ." In reality, **no** man ever dies twice, no matter how many death certificates are issued.

## THE DRAMA CONTINUES

Mary supposing the disguised Jesus to be a gardener, says unto him:

***"Sir, if you have taken HIM hence,  
tell me where have you laid HIM . . ."***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** John 20:15

She is not looking for a corpse, for "it". She is looking for a LIVE person, for "**HIM.**" And further she wants to know as to "where have you '**LAID**' him?" (i.e. To rest, to relax, to recuperate!) **NOT**, "where have you **BURIED** him?"

***"So that I might take HIM away."***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** John 20:15

Take **HIM** away, where? What could she want with a dead (?), decomposing body? She could only bury it. Who dug the grave? Carrying a corpse is one thing for an American Super woman, but another for this frail Jewess; carrying a corpse of at least a hundred and sixty pounds. That weight plus another 100 pounds of medicaments

(according to *John 19:39*) would make a neat load of 260 pounds. Carrying would be one thing, but burying? She would have to dump it in a hole! Does it make any sense?

The prank that Jesus was playing upon this woman had gone too far. The woman had not been able to see through the disguise yet and Jesus was "laughing under his breath," but could restrain himself no longer. He blurts out: "**M-A-R-Y!**" Only the one word! But it was enough. This one word, "**Mary!**" did what all the exchange of words failed to do. It enabled Mary to recognise her Master. Everyone has his or her unique and peculiar way of calling one's nearest and dearest. It was not the mere utterance of the word "Mary", but its deliberate intonation which made her respond: "Master! Master!". Mad with happiness, she lunges forward to grab her Master, to pay reverence. Jesus says,

***"Touch me not!"***

***(HOLY BIBLE) John 20:17***

## SOBERING QUESTIONS

Why not? Is he a bundle of electricity, a dynamo, that if she touches him, she might get electrocuted? No! "**Touch me not!**," because it would hurt. Though he appears normal to all intents and purposes, he had, nevertheless, been through a violent, physical and emotional ordeal. It would be excruciatingly painful if he allowed her any enthusiastic contact. Jesus continues:

***"For I am not yet ASCENDED  
unto my Father***

***(HOLY BIBLE) John 20:17***

She is not blind. She can see the man standing there before her. What does he mean by "**not yet ascended**" — GONE UP — when he was **DOWN** right there? He is, in fact, telling her that he is **not RESURRECTED** from the DEAD. In the language of the Jew, in the idiom of the Jew, he is saying: "I AM NOT DEAD YET!" — He is saying: "**I AM ALIVE!**"

***"And they (the disciples),  
when they heard that he was ALIVE,  
and had been seen by her  
(Mary Magdalene), they BELIEVED NOT."***

***(HOLY BIBLE) Mark 16:11***



## CHAPTER TWELVE

# *Disciples Disbelieved*

### JOURNEY TO EMMAUS

That very day, on the way to Emmaus, Jesus joins two of his disciples and discourses with them for 5 miles without being recognised by them! What a perfect masquerade! On reaching their destination, the disciples persuade the Master to join them for a meal.

***“And it came to pass,  
as he sat EATING with them,  
he took bread and blessed it,  
and broke it,  
and gave it to them.”***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Luke 24:30

By the manner in which he broke bread (meaning the way he blessed it), **“their eyes were opened.”** Did they walk from Jerusalem to Emmaus with closed eyes? No! We are being told that the disciples recognised him only at that juncture. Luke continues with his story, that when they recognised him, **“he vanished out of sight.”** Did he do the Indian “Rope Trick?” Please don’t be ridiculous! What it means is that he went away. He went out of their sight.

### INCREDIBLE SCEPTICISM

Full of excitement, the two disciples rushed up to that upper room, where the other disciples were:

***“And they went and told it  
unto the residue (of the disciples),  
NEITHER BELIEVED they them.”***

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Mark 16:13

What is wrong with these disciples of Jesus? Why are they reluctant to believe? What is their difficulty? The problem is that

they are confronted with evidence that Jesus is **ALIVE! Not resurrected** (i.e. not spiritualised), but evidence that he is the same **physical** Jesus, **flesh and bones** as any one of them! Eating food! In disguise — but not a spirit and not a ghost. This is what they could not believe. If they were told that Mary had seen the ghost of Jesus, they would have believed. If the above two had told the rest that they too had seen the ghost of Jesus, they would certainly have believed that. They were a people who had seen spirits going into pigs and stampeding two thousand of them to destruction — (*Mark 5:13*). They had seen spirits going into trees and drying them up from their very roots overnight — (*Mark 11:20*). They had seen “**seven devils**” coming out of Mary Magdalene — (*Mark 16:9*). All this was quite natural to their age. Spirits, ghosts and devils! They could accept that which was believable at that time and age. But a **LIVE** Jesus? A physical Jesus? One who had escaped the **stings of death** — (*Acts 2:24*)? This was too heavy for their “**little faith**” — (*Matthew 6:30, 8:26, 14:31, 16:8; and Luke 12:28*).

- (a) Mary Magdalene testifies that Jesus is **ALIVE.**<sup>1</sup>
- (b) The disciples from Emmaus testify that he is **ALIVE!**
- (c) Angels said that Jesus was **ALIVE!** (*Luke 24:23*).
- (d) Two men that stood by told the women “why seek ye the **living** among the dead?” That he is **ALIVE!** (*Luke 24:4-5*).

Yet they will not believe!! Let us see whether they will believe the words of their own “Lord and Master,” in the following chapter.

---

1. **ALIVE:** Here as well as in every other place where this word “**alive**” occurs, it has been faithfully reproduced from the Christian Scriptures, and it is not any interpretation of mine. If these verses were inspired by God, then, it seems, that the poor “Holy Ghost” did not have the word “**RESURRECTED**” in its vocabulary!

## CHAPTER THIRTEEN

# *Jesus No Phantom*

### ARITHMETICAL CONUNDRUM

The two from Emmaus,

***“rose . . . and returned to Jerusalem,  
and found the ELEVEN  
gathered together,  
and those who were with them***

*(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 24:33*

Which **“eleven?”** They **“found** the eleven.” Did they include themselves in the number they FOUND? Even then the disciples there (of the elected twelve of Jesus) could never be more than 10 altogether. Because on this first visit of Jesus to that upper-room, Judas and Thomas were definitely not present. But Luke was not an eyewitness to this scene. He is simply copying verbatim from *Mark 16:14* who said, **“he** (Jesus) **appeared unto the ELEVEN as they sat eating.”**

Now listen to Paul, the thirteenth self-appointed apostle of Jesus. He says that after three days of hibernation, **“(Jesus) was seen of Cephas** (meaning Simon Peter), **then to the TWELVE”** — (*1 Corinthians 15:5*). Which **“twelve?”** The word “THEN,” here, excludes Peter! But if you add him on, and with all good luck, you can still never get the “CHOSEN TWELVE” together to see Jesus, because the traitor Judas had committed suicide by hanging — (*Matthew 27:5*), long before Jesus' alleged resurrection.”

We are dealing here with a strange mentality, where **“Eleven”** does not mean ELEVEN — (*Luke 24:33*). **“Twelve”** does not mean TWELVE, and **“Three and three”** means TWO AND ONE!<sup>1</sup> Jesus would truly sympathise with us:

---

1. This conundrum will be discussed further on under the heading: **“What was the Sign of Jonah?”** (Page 223)

***“it is hard for you  
to kick against the pricks”***

(HOLY BIBLE) Acts 9:5<sup>1</sup>

## ENTER JESUS

Whilst the two are telling their sceptical audience about their encounter with a **physical**, living Jesus (one who was eating food with them), “IN WALKS JESUS” (these are my words)<sup>2</sup> the doors being shut for fear of the Jews.

The Christian controversialist says: “No! Our records state that Jesus simply ‘STOOD IN THEIR MIDST,’<sup>3</sup> he did not WALK in!” It was a question of disappearance from Emmaus and a re-appearance in Jerusalem — like the “**Invisible Man**”, like the “**Indian Rope Trick**,” like “**Star Trek**” (a science-fiction fantasy where people are “beamed” from Space Ships to planets and back again). You actually “see” people disappearing before your very eyes and materialising in another place. People who believe this to be real are victims of their own delusions. They have seen too many films and viewed too many TV programmes.

## THE HARE AND THE TORTOISE

But why did it take Jesus (pbuh) so long to reach the upper-room? He had “**vanished**” before the “**two**” made a beeline for Jerusalem, and yet Jesus had not preceded them. He was late in coming. It reminds one of the story of the hare and the tortoise. Could it be that he was nursing his wounds on the way?

The cultists imagine that Jesus was floating around from place to place, appearing and disappearing at will. Jeffrey Hunter, the handsome young actor, playing the role of Jesus Christ in the film, “**King of Kings**,” made a very sensible observation after

- 
1. Paul says that these words were spoken to him by Jesus, originally in the Hebrew tongue — (Acts 26:14)
  2. “**Came Jesus and stood in their midst**” — (John 20:19)
  3. In John 20:19, 24, 26, the word “**CAME**”, “**CAME**”, “**CAME**”, contradict the notion that he simply appeared, meaning that he materialised out of thin air.

climbing Mount Zion for the scene of the **“temptation”** of Jesus by the Devil. After heaving and hoving, sweating and panting for breath while climbing the hill, he remarked, **“FOR THE FIRST TIME IN MY LIFE I REALISED HOW HUMAN JESUS WAS!”**

Neither Luke nor John, who record this episode of Jesus' visit to the upper room, venture to tell us that he simply **o-o-z-e-d** through the keyhole, or that he **oozed** through crevices in the wall. O! But why did they deprive us of this vital information? Because no oozing happened! But the problem remains — how did he get in when the **“doors where shut?”** — (*John 20:19*). Amazingly, Luke 24:36, who also records this incident word for word did not think fit to add, **“the doors were shut.”** It was unimportant to him! Why? Because it was irrelevant! Claiming an “orderliness” and judiciousness for his writings, he would not confuse the issues — (*Holy Bible Luke 1:3*)

## THE UPPER-ROOM

This abode in question, is alternatively described as a **“guest chamber”** and as a **“large upper-room”** — (*Mark 14:14-15*). It is not the whole residence. It is part of a mansion. Do I have to prove this to you? Could this be the only room upstairs? Taking into account that this particular room contained a table big enough to seat at least 14 people on 14 clumsy chairs — Jesus and his 12 disciples making the “unlucky thirteen,” and John the **“disciple whom Jesus loved”** being the owner of the house and **“leaning on Jesus' bosom”** (*John 13:23*) making fourteen in all.

Can you imagine the size of this **“guest room?”** — With pantry, kitchen, and other facilities; and downstairs, where the owner's family and servants resided. It was like a small palace! Jesus was familiar with this mansion. He had visited Jerusalem often for the feast of the Passover. Remember how he directed his disciples to find the place? — (*Luke 22:10*).

My own humble abode has four entrances. Perhaps John's **“GUEST CHAMBER”** had only one main-entrance with 2 doors. But was there a need to seal it off from the rest of the house? For the visitor, the front doors were sufficient for all their needs — entry and exit. And Eastern guests do not pry into passages, attics and apartments of their hosts! They are easily gratified with every little hospitality bestowed. But Jesus was no stranger to the house. He was like a

member of the family of the disciple Jesus loved. He had no need to knock at bolted doors to terrify his timid flock. There were more ways than one of getting in. If there was any misgiving on the part of the disciples for his sudden appearance in their midst, he was quick in dispelling it.

**“Peace be unto you”**, he cried;  
but his little lambs **“were terrified!”**

(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 24:36-37

## OPPOSITE REACTIONS ON RECOGNISING JESUS

Remember at the break of dawn that very morning, a lone woman, Mary Magdalene, was mad with glee on recognising him around the tomb. And she had to be stopped in her stride from embracing him. But these ten heroes who were rattling sabres in this very room were now petrified on recognising their Master. Why was there opposite reactions between the men and the woman? — Men terrified, woman not afraid? The reason is that the woman was an eyewitness to all the happenings around Calvary, whereas the men were nowhere in sight. Therefore the woman went to the tomb with the intention of meeting a LIVE Jesus, and thus her joy on meeting him. But the ten were not witnesses to the happenings, hence their supposition about seeing a ghost. They were physically and emotionally on the verge of breaking down. Luke succinctly describes their condition:

**“But they were terrified and affrighted  
and supposed that they had seen a spirit.”**

(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 24:37

## REASON FOR FEAR

The reason for their terror was that they thought that the man they saw standing in their midst was not Jesus himself but his ghost. Ask your **“BORN-AGAIN”** friends who want to share heaven with you, the reason for the disciples thinking that Jesus was a spirit. Ask them, “Did he look like a spirit?” And though misguided as they may be, you will hear their answer — **“No!”** Then why did the disciples of Jesus think that Jesus was a spirit, when he did not look like one? There is no answer! They are speechless. Please help them. Free them from their misconception. If we don't, they will harass us and our people till kingdom come. They will steal our children (as they are

doing now in Muslim lands), in the guise of feeding hungry children, and at times with our own money. Have you heard of “**World Vision**” and the like? Crusades once more but with arms invisible!

The reason the disciples of Jesus were afraid was that they had learned by **hearsay** that their Master was killed by being fastened to the cross — that he was crucified.<sup>1</sup> They had learned by **hearsay** that he had “given up the ghost”: that he had **died**. They had learned by **HEARSAY THAT NOW** he was “DEAD AND BURIED” for three days. A man with such a reputation would be expected to be decomposing in his tomb. **FOR ALL THEIR KNOWLEDGE WAS FROM HEARSAY!** — What they had heard! Because none of them was there to witness what was really going on with Jesus at Golgotha. In the most critical juncture in the life of Jesus:

**“... THEY ALL FORSOOK HIM AND FLED.”**

**(HOLY BIBLE)** Mark 14:50

## THE GENUINE DISCIPLES

Mark is talking about the chosen “**twelve.**” Not about Jesus’ “**secret**” devoted ones like the other John who took Mary the mother of Jesus home, and Nicodemus<sup>2</sup> and Joseph of Arimathe’a and the like. In view of the dastardly desertion by the other “twelve,” I am loathe to call these “men” disciples. Or is Mark lying? When he said “**all,**” did he not mean “All?” There was no come-back with these heroes. The author of the fourth Gospel lists a number of women from Jesus’ entourage. Among them three Marys, “**and the disciple whom Jesus loved.**” He repeats this phrase a number of times without actually identifying him as JOHN their benefactor in Jerusalem. Why? If that John is the author himself of the fourth gospel, then why does he not say so. Why is he so shy? He was not very bashful when asking Jesus to make him and his brother sit:

- 
1. “**Crucified**”: see “**CRUCIFIED OR CRUCIPLAYED**” on page 234. The Gospel writers had not known the use of inverted commas to imply, that this is what others say, or this is the “so-called”.
  2. **Nicodemus**: A selfless soul, who, having risked his all in associating with a man (Jesus) condemned by a Roman Court for treason, is deliberately blotted out of the 26 Books of the N.T. “**It is difficult to avoid concluding that the omission in the synoptic tradition of the mysterious disciple was intentional,**” says Dr Hugh J. Schonfield, one of the world’s leading Biblical scholars.

***“One on thy right hand,  
and the other on thy left hand  
in thy Kingdom”***

**(HOLY BIBLE) Mark 10:37**

The reason for his reticence is that the “beloved disciple” is his namesake, i.e. his name is also John! The rest of the disciples were nowhere to be found when he (Jesus) was most in need. They all had, as Mark says,

***“forsaken him and fled!”***

**(HOLY BIBLE) Mark 14:50**

## WHAT WOULD YOU CALL THIS — “CRUCIFIXION or CRUCI - FICTION ?

WEEKEND WORLD, Sunday, August 3, 1969

# Crucified man hung on cross



**LEFT: A friend hides his face as Newcastle barman, Mr. Pieter van der Bergh, is nailed to a cross.**

**NEWCASTLE**—Blood spurted from the hands of a Newcastle barman, Mr. Pieter van der Bergh last week, after he was publicly crucified in one of South Africa's weirdest “religious” services.

Hundreds of people, including scores of children, watched as 4-inch nails were driven through Mr. van der Bergh's hands and right foot, and he drooped for 20 minutes from a six-foot cross. Mr. van der Bergh told me he held the crucifixion to prove that “man was master over his body.”

Most spectators attended out of morbid curiosity and shouted protests when views of the grotesque ceremony were blocked by photographers.

Mr. R. Riethoven used a builder's metal hammer to force the nail through Mr. van der Bergh's flesh. Mr. van der Bergh did not flinch as the nails were driven home while cries of “sit down in front!” and “we want to see too!” echoed over the Newcastle circus ground.

### SHOCKED

Several women turned away shocked, and children gaped, open-mouthed. Men lifted the cross from the ground and manhandled it into a shallow hole, where it was fixed in position.

An 18-inch spike was plunged through Mr. van der Bergh's thigh. For 20 minutes he hung on the cross chanting psalms and giving a sermon.

No blood flowed while he was there.

**BELOW: A four-inch nail driven through the hand of Mr. Van der Bergh did not draw blood as it was hammered into a wooden cross.**



SUNDAY TRIBUNE, JULY 17, 1983

# WAS HE DEAD OR ALIVE?

THE DILEMMA FACING TRANSPLANT DOCTORS  
AFTER THE BIZARRE CASE OF DONOR ANTONIE



THE mystery surrounding whether potential kidney donor Antonie Franken was dead or alive when Tygerberg Hospital doctors decided to operate on him may jeopardise transplant operations.

**Antonie Franken**  
... a bizarre dead  
or alive question

An "urgently needed" transplant has been called off because of the controversy following the death of the 21-year-old Goodwood fireman who suffered devastating brain damage in a car crash on Saturday, July 9.

**By Tony  
Spencer-Smith**

The transplant operation had to be cancelled this week, said the medical superintendent of Tygerberg, Dr JP van der Westhuyzen.

Transplant doctors around the country now fear the supply of organs from donors could dry up because of the incident.

The bizarre case began the Sunday morning following Antonie Franken's fateful accident the Saturday night before.

THE SUNDAY TRIBUNE, MARCH 27, 1960

## MAN DIED FOR TWO HOURS: STILL LIVES

'Miracle' amazes doctors

(Sunday Tribune Correspondent)

LONDON, Saturday.  
ONE thing is being kept very carefully from 27-year-old Walter Harridge in St. Bartholomew's Hospital at Rochester, Kent—the fact that he was dead for nearly two hours. Doctors fear that the shock of knowing it might kill him. Newspapers are forbidden him. The hospital staff has been warned that he must not be told that by all normal standards he should not be alive. For no one has ever died for so long and lived again.

## CHAPTER FOURTEEN

### *Jesus Not Resurrected*

#### A PHYSICAL, LIVE JESUS!

After the due greetings of “**Shaloam**,” Jesus begins calming the disciples’ fear for taking him to be a ghost. He says:

**“Behold** (have a look at) **my hands  
and my feet, that it is I  
myself** (I am the same fellow, man!);  
**handle me and see;**  
**for A SPIRIT has no flesh and bones,**  
**as you see me have.**  
**... And he showed them his hands  
and his feet.”**

(**HOLY BIBLE**) Luke 24:39-40

What was the man trying to prove? That he had been resurrected from the dead? — That he was a spirit? — What has the demonstration of hands and feet to do with resurrection? **“It is I MYSELF!”** Can’t you see, you fools!? **“For a SPIRIT . . .”** — any spirit, has **“NO flesh and bones, as YOU see ME have!.”** This is an axiomatic, self-evident truth. You do not have to convince anybody, whether Hindu, Muslim, Christian, Jew, Atheist or Agnostic. Everyone will acknowledge without any proof that A SPIRIT HAS NO FLESH AND BONES!

#### WHY BELABOUR THE OBVIOUS?

Then why did Jesus need to belabour the point? It is simply because the disciples were thinking that he had returned from the dead, that he had been resurrected, and if so he would be in a spiritual form — A SPIRIT! And Jesus is telling them that he is NOT that — he is not a spirit — NOT resurrected! The above verses in their original, in every language, are so vivid, so simple, so clear that you do not need a dictionary nor a D.D. to explain them to you.

Why don't you (dear reader) memorise just this one verse. In your own language — English, Arabic, Zulu or Afrikaans, and with just this one verse you can take the wind out of the missionaries' sail. You can "CRACK HIS SKULL," exactly as young David, with his little pebble did to Goliath. The pleasure is yours... Allah is giving you the opportunity, in this day and age to disabuse the Christian mind from his fantasies!

I have asked learned giants of Christendom to tell me whether in their language, when a man says, "A Spirit has **NO** Flesh and Bones," that it means — A Spirit **HAS** Flesh and Bones! In debates, no opponent of mine has ever had the courage to tackle the question. They all pretend that the words were never uttered.

### VIVID EXPLANATION . . . I AM ALIVE!

If I tell you in English that "**Because I have flesh and bones** — I am not a SPIRIT, I am not a GHOST, I am not a SPOOK!" — is that what it really means in your language? You say, "**Yes!**" (This reasoning equally applies to every language under the sun). In other words, Jesus was telling his disciples, when he said: "**Behold my HANDS and my FEET,**" that the body he wanted them to see, feel and touch was not a SPIRITUAL body, nor a METAMORPHOSED<sup>1</sup> body, nor a RESURRECTED body. Because a resurrected "body" becomes spiritualised!

### WHO SAYS SO?

The argumentative Crusader asks: "Who says that resurrected persons will be spiritualised?" I say, "Jesus!" He asks: "Where?" I say: "In the Gospel of Luke; go back four chapters from where Jesus said: "**A spirit has no flesh and bones,**' that is, to Luke 20:27-36, and you will see . . .". The Jews were coming to Jesus again and again with posers and riddles, like:-

- (a) "**Master, must we pay  
tribute to Caesar or not?**"

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 22:17

---

1. **Metamorphose:** to change in form; to change the nature of.

- (b) **“Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.”**

(HOLY BIBLE) John 8:4

- (c) **“Master, what commandment is the first of all?”**

(HOLY BIBLE) Mark 12:28

Now they come to him concerning a Jewess who had seven husbands. According to a Jewish practice — if one man dies leaving no offspring behind, then the 2nd brother of the deceased husband takes her to wife, to give her his seed. But when he fails and dies, the 3rd takes her on; and so on. In the case before Jesus, seven brothers had this one woman, one after another. All the seven brothers died, and in time, the woman also died. There was no problem while each was trying to fulfil his obligation on earth — it was ONE by ONE! But the question of the Jews was that, at the RESURRECTION, which one was going to **HAVE** this woman, because they had all **“HAD”** her here! The picture the Jews are trying to conjure up in Jesus' mind is that if the seven brothers are resurrected simultaneously at the RESURRECTION, and the woman also, then there will be a war in heaven among the seven brothers, everyone claiming the woman as his own wife, because they had **“all had her”**. In short, which fellow will have this woman as his wife in heaven? In answer to that, Jesus says: **“Neither shall they die anymore”** meaning that the resurrected persons will be immortalised: needing no food, no shelter, no clothing, no sex, no rest of the type we know. **“For they are equal unto the angels,”** meaning that they will be ANGELISED, they will be SPIRITUALISED, they will become SPIRITUAL CREATURES, they will be SPIRITS! As regards himself, four chapters further on he says: **“A spirit has no flesh and bones, as you see me have”** — I am **NOT** a spirit, I am **NOT** a ghost, I am **NOT** a spook, I am **NOT** RESURRECTED! I am the same living Jesus — **ALIVE!**

**“And when he had thus spoken, he showed them his hands and feet.”**

(HOLY BIBLE) Luke 24:40

## THE DISCIPLES' FEAR SUBSIDES

The disciples were “**overjoyed and wondered,**” what could have happened? They had thought that he was dead and gone, but here with them stands their Master, with flesh and bones — with 100% characteristics of a man who is **ALIVE!**

To assure them further, to calm their shaky nerves, he asks:

**“Have you here any meat,”**

(i.e. anything to eat?)

**“And they gave him**

**a piece of broiled fish and of a honeycomb,**

**and he took it,**

**and DID EAT before them.”**

(**HOLY BIBLE**) Luke 24:41-43

To prove what? That he is RESURRECTED? Why does he not then say so instead of proving everything to the contrary? Presenting his physical body for examination, eating and masticating “**broiled fish and honeycomb.**” Is all this an act, a pretence, a make-believe, another “**leela**” as the Hindus might say? “No!” Said Schleliermacher a hundred-and-sixty-five years ago. Albert Schweizer in his book, “**In Quest of the Historical Jesus,**” page 64, quotes him:-

“IF CHRIST HAD ONLY EATEN TO SHOW THAT HE COULD EAT, WHILE HE REALLY HAD NO NEED OF NOURISHMENT, IT WOULD HAVE BEEN A **PRETENCE** — SOMETHING DOCETIC.”

## EASY SALVATION

What is wrong with our Christian brethren? Jesus says that a spirit has no flesh and bones. They say that it has! Please ask your friends among them. Who is lying? Jesus or you, the billion so-called followers of his? This is the result of two thousand years of brainwashing or “programming” as the Americans would say. Salvation is cheap in Christianity! The Christian does not have to fast, and pray, and straitjacket his life as the Muslim is obliged to do. He merely has to BELIEVE and salvation is his.

For us, all our efforts, all our good deeds are “like filthy rags,” he says. You better reprogramme him, or he will programme you. He will never be satisfied with us, never mind how far backward we bend to appease him. Allah says:

**AND THEY — THE JEWS  
AND THE CHRISTIANS —  
WILL NEVER, NEVER  
BE SATISFIED WITH YOU  
UNTIL YOU FOLLOW  
THEIR RELIGION.**

وَلَنْ تَرْضَىٰ عَنْكَ  
الْيَهُودُ وَلَا النَّصَارَىٰ  
حَتَّىٰ تَتَّبِعَ مِلَّتَهُمْ

Holy Qur'an 2:120

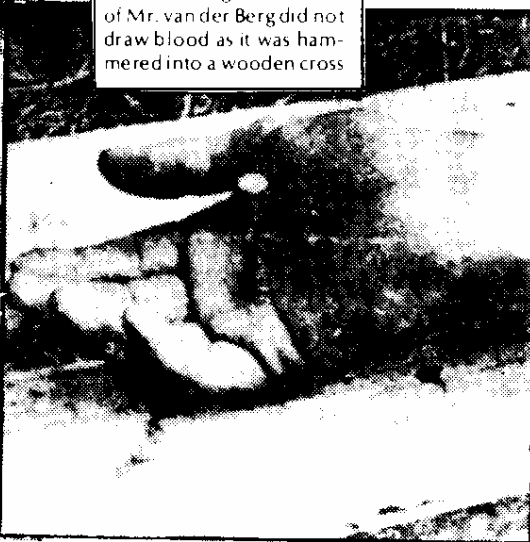
It's either you change them, or they change you! If you want peace — Peace — Salaam — ISLAM!

**THIS SOUTH AFRICAN  
DID ONE BETTER THAN  
THE PHILIPPINOS.<sup>1</sup>**



An 18 inch spike piercing his thigh. Mr van der Berg hangs from the cross. Many people thought the ceremony was disgusting.

BELOW: A four-inch nail driven through the hand of Mr. van der Berg did not draw blood as it was hammered into a wooden cross



1. See page 237 for story of multiple cruci-fictions in the Philippines.

SUNDAY  
**EXPRESS**

23rd JULY, 1961



## **Man's heart stops but he lives on**

SUNDAY EXPRESS REPORTER

**T**HE heart of a 52-year-old man stopped after a minor operation at Johannesburg's South Rand Hospital last week, but within the four-minute deadline in such cases his chest had been opened and hand-massage restored him to life.

### **He was 'dead'**

One of the staff noticed something wrong. When the surgeon arrived, Mr. Jeffery's heart had stopped. He was "dead."

An eight-inch incision was made in his chest and for 30 minutes only the skill of the team kept him alive. Oxygen was pumped down his throat, injections were made directly into his heart. The heart itself was hand-massaged throughout the emergency. A defibrillation machine was used several times.

The Natal Mercury,  
DURBAN, WEDNESDAY,

**'Clinically dead'**  
**toddler alive**  
**after hour-long**  
**revival battle**

Miss Gillanderes said the child was clinically dead when the team arrived. There was neither heartbeat, blood pressure nor breath and his pupils were dilated.

'A neighbour had already started resuscitation before we arrived. We put through an air way to help him start breathing, we used drugs and we tried to shock his heart into working with the paddles.'

### **Brain damage**

He was moved to hospital where doctors aided the resuscitation bid and about 10 minutes later the monitor indicated his heart had begun to pump.

## CHAPTER FIFTEEN

### *The Only Miracle Promised*

#### VATICINIUM EX EVENTU

The hot-gospeller and the Bible-thumper does not tire of quoting statements, alleged to have been made by Jesus, that he was going to Jerusalem to die, and on the third day he would **come back** to life. The Gospels, any Christian scholar will confirm, were first penned decades and centuries after Jesus. In his lifetime, not a word was written, nor did he instruct anyone to write a word! Taylor in his commentary on the Gospel of St. Mark, page 437, discounts the so-called prophecies regarding the “crucifixion” as **vaticinium ex eventu** meaning “prophecy after the event.” The Gospel-writers fabricated words and sayings, and put them into the mouth of Jesus, as if he had foretold the happenings.

The Christian missionary, the evangelist, the crusader, is reluctant to give a hearing to any Christian scholar despite the latter's sincerity or greatness of calibre — whether Taylor, or Schweizer, or Brandon or Anderson. As soon as they say a word which goes against their pet prejudice, they will discount them all as “**external source**” and “**minority 20th-century speculation.**” Therefore, I am constrained here to take the proverbial “bull by the horn” and take him to the drinking trough.

#### DEMAND FOR A MIRACLE

The Jews had murmured in the wilderness against Moses (pbuh). They had given him endless trouble, and now his successor, the Messiah is given no lesser parrying. In their bouts of harassing questionings, they come to him, now, sounding most respectable and polite:

**“Master, (Hebrew — *Rabbi*,  
meaning Teacher)  
we would have a sign of thee.”**

**(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 12:38**



All his teaching and preaching, and healing were not enough to convince the Jews that he was a man sent by God; that he was their Messiah. Now they are asking for a "SIGN" — a Miracle — such as flying like a bird, or walking on water; in short, anything they considered IMPOSSIBLE.

Before you proceed any further in the discussion with the Christian, please make sure that he understands the word "sign" in the above verse to mean a "miracle". This simple English word from the King James Version of the Bible, which every other Version seems to have copied, is creating difficulty in the grasping of its true significance. In the "**New International Version**," supported by Baptist, Lutheran, Methodist, Presbyterian and Reformed churches, the word is expanded as "**miraculous sign**," thank God! Not just any sign, or road signs — "Stop, Yield or Go!" but a **MIRACLE**.

It is also necessary for us to try and define what is meant by a miracle. One of the simplest and truest of definitions is that given by Dr. Lyttelton in, "**The Place of Miracles in Religion**," that is:-

"AN ACT BEYOND HUMAN POWER."

This is exactly what the Jews wanted from Jesus. An act which they, the Scribes and the Pharisees, could not duplicate. On the face of it the request seems quite fair, but it is a sick mentality which craves for "tricks" which every sceptic and materialist can rationalise.

## NO "SIGN" BUT ONE!

So Jesus reacts:

***“ . . . An evil and adulterous generation  
seeketh after a sign (miracle),  
and there shall no sign (miracle)  
be given to it, but the sign (miracle)  
of the prophet, Jonah.”***

(**HOLY BIBLE**) Matthew 12:39

What was the "sign" or the miracle that Jonah performed that Jesus now proposes to emulate? To discover this miracle, we have to go to the "**Book of Jonah**," in the Bible. But this "Book" is very elusive! It happens to be a single leaf, with four short chapters, and is

difficult to find in any encyclopedia of a thousand pages, such as the Christian Bible. But you do not have to go to the Book itself. Every Christian child who ever attended Sunday school, knows the whole story.

### BACKGROUND TO THE "SIGN"

To refresh your memory, let me tell you that God Almighty commands Jonah (pbuh) to go to Nineveh (a city of a hundred thousand people) and warn them to "**repent in sack-cloth and in ashes.**" That is, to humble themselves before the Lord; or God will destroy them.

Jonah feels despondent, fearing that the materialistic Ninevites, "**The Wicked and Adulteress Generation**" of their time, will not listen to him; they will make a mockery of him. So instead of going to Nineveh, he goes to Joppa and sets sail to Tarshish. At sea there is a terrible storm and, according to the superstition of the mariners, whoever runs away from his "Master's Commands" creates such a turmoil at sea. An enquiry begins and Jonah realises that he is the guilty party, that as a prophet of God, he was the soldier of God. And as a soldier of God he had to obey the Commands of God. He had no right to act presumptuously. So he volunteers and makes a manly comeback. He feared that God was after his blood, and in wanting to kill him, He will sink the boat, and innocent people will die. Jonah reasons that it will be better for him to be thrown overboard, and thus avert the disaster overtaking them.

### CASTING OF LOTS

These "pre-exilic"<sup>1</sup> people, eight centuries before Christ, had more sense of justice and fairplay than modern civilised (?) man. They felt that Jonah wanted to commit suicide, and perhaps wanted their helping hand. They were not going to aid and abet him in his folly. So they said that they had a system of their own to discover right from wrong, by casting "lots", something like our tossing of the coin — "head or tail!" And according to their primitive system the lot fell on Jonah, who was discovered as being the guilty man. So they took him and threw him overboard!

---

1. Before the Jews were carried away into exile under Nebuchadnezzar.

## DEAD OR ALIVE?

The question arises that, when they threw Jonah overboard, was he dead or alive? To make it easy for you to get the right answer, let me help you by suggesting that Jonah had volunteered when he said:

*“... Take me up,  
and cast me forth into the sea;  
so shall the sea be calm for you;  
for I know that for my sake  
this great tempest is upon you.”*

(HOLY BIBLE) Jonah 1:12

When a man volunteers, one does not have to strangle him before throwing him; one does not have to spear him before throwing him; one does not have to twist his arms or legs before throwing him. Everyone agrees that that is so.

Now once more the question: Was Jonah **dead or alive** when he was thrown into the raging sea? We get a unanimous reply — that he was **ALIVE!** The storm subsides. Perhaps it was a coincidence. A fish comes and swallows him. Was he **dead or alive?** And again everyone says **ALIVE!** From the belly of the fish he prays to God for help. Do dead men pray? “No!” So he was . . . **ALIVE!** On the third day the fish vomits him onto the seashore — **dead or alive?** And the reply again is **ALIVE!** It is a miracle of miracles! The Jews say that he was **ALIVE!** The Christians say that he was **ALIVE!** And the Muslims say that he was **ALIVE!** Little wonder that Jesus chose the “SIGN” (miracle) of Jonah as his only “SIGN” (miracle):<sup>1</sup> This is something on which the followers of three major religions are agreed.

Let me recapitulate this Mighty Miracle from the Book of Jonah:

1. When you throw a man into a raging sea, he ought to die. Since Jonah did not die, it is therefore, a **MIRACLE!**

---

1. For a detailed explanation write for your **FREE** copy of “**What was the Sign of Jonah?**” from the Centre.

2. A fish comes and gobbles up the man; he ought to die. He did not die. It is now therefore, a double MIRACLE!
3. Because of heat and suffocation in the whale's belly for three days and three nights, he ought to have been dead. He did not die. Therefore it is now a miracle of MIRACLES!

When you expect a man to die, and he does **not** die, only then it is a MIRACLE. If a man faces a firing squad and six bullets are pumped into his body at the given signal, and the man dies, is it a miracle? "No!" But if he lives to laugh it off, would that be a miracle? Of course it would be a MIRACLE. We expected Jonah to die each time, but he does not die; therefore, his is a multiple MIRACLE.

### JESUS LIKE JONAH

Jesus too, after the ordeal he is supposed to have gone through, ought to have been dead. Had he died, it would be no miracle. But if he had lived, as he had himself foretold, and proved "**according to the scriptures,**" it would be a "**sign**" — a MIRACLE! And these are his words:

. . . "**For as Jonah was . . .**" (English), "**Want soos Jonah . . .**" (Afrikaans), "**Ngokuba njengo Jonah . . .**" (Zulu).

"For **as Jonah was** three days and three nights in the belly of the whale, **so shall the son of man be . . .**" — (*Matthew 12:40*). How was Jonah in the whale's belly for three days and three nights — **Dead or Alive?** The Muslims, the Christians and the Jews again give a unanimous verdict of **A-L-I-V-E!** How was Jesus in the tomb, for the same period of time — **Dead or Alive?** Over a thousand million Christians, of every church or denomination give a unanimous verdict of **D-E-A-D!** Is that **like** Jonah or **unlike** Jonah in your language? And everyone whose mind is not confused, says that, that is very UNLIKE Jonah. Jesus said that he would be "**LIKE JONAH**" and his infatuated

followers say that he was “**UNLIKE JONAH!**” Who is lying — Jesus or his followers? I leave the answer to you!

## BIG BUSINESS

But religion is good business. In the name of Christ they are minting it! The crusaders say that we have got it all wrong. They say it was the time factor that Jesus was prophesying about, and not whether he would be Dead or Alive. They say, “Can’t you see that he is emphasising the time factor? He repeats the word, “**three**”, four times.” These are drowning men and women clutching at straws. What did Jesus say?

***“For as Jonah was THREE days  
and THREE nights in the whale’s belly;  
so shall the son of man be THREE days  
and THREE nights  
in the heart of the earth.”***

(HOLY BIBLE) Matthew 12:40

Jesus was nowhere near the “**heart of the earth;**” he was supposed to have been in a tomb, which is well-above ground-level. Maybe he was speaking figuratively.

Three and three are no doubt repeated four times, but there is nothing miraculous about a time factor. The Jews were asking Jesus for a “**sign**” — a miracle and there is nothing to make THREE days, or THREE weeks or THREE months into a miracle. The first time when I went to Cape Town from Durban, thirty years ago, was by train, and the train took exactly THREE days and THREE nights to reach there. It’s a Miracle! Nonsense, you will say, and I am forced to agree.

But it is not so easy for the Christian to agree because his salvation hangs upon a thread. Therefore he must hold on for dear life. We can afford to be charitable. So let us humour him! So was it the time factor that Jesus was out to fulfil? “Yes!” says the Christian. When was he “crucified?”<sup>1</sup> The bulk of Christendom believes that it was on a Friday afternoon some two thousand years ago.

---

1. “**Crucified**”: The wisdom of the inverted commas will become apparent when you read the “**Crucified or Cruciplayed?**” on page 234.

## CHAPTER SIXTEEN

### *Simple Calculations*

#### WHY “GOOD FRIDAY?”

In my country, we enjoy a four day holiday during Easter, beginning with what is called GOOD FRIDAY. What makes Good Friday good? They say it is so because Christ died for their sins on that day. And in tune with that, every Christian country in the world — Britain, France, Germany, America, Lesotho, Swaziland, Zambia, Zimbabwe, they all commemorate Good Friday. I have already proved to you that Jesus could not have been on the cross for more than three hours, if at all. For all their rush and hurry, they could not bundle Jesus into the tomb before the sunset of Friday.

More than a thousand and one sects and denominations of Christianity, bickering on every aspect of faith, are nevertheless, almost all agreed that Jesus Christ was **SUPPOSED** to have been in the tomb on the **night** of Friday. He was still **SUPPOSED** to be in the tomb on the **day** of Saturday. And he was still **SUPPOSED** to be in the tomb on the **night** of Saturday.<sup>1</sup> But on Sunday morning, the first day of the week, when Mary Magdalene visited the tomb, she found the tomb empty. You will note that I have repeated the word SUPPOSED, SUPPOSED, SUPPOSED, three times. Do you know why? Surely not to rhyme with the other THREE, THREE, THREE of the prophecy. The reason is that none of the 27 Books of the New Testament records the time of his exit from the tomb. Not a single writer of these 27 “tomes”<sup>2</sup> was an eyewitness to his alleged “resurrection.” The only ones who could have told us a word or two on the subject, authoritatively, have been utterly silenced.

May another Arab lad make a find like the “**Dead Sea Scrolls**,” but this time autographed by Joseph of Arimathe’a and Nicodemus

---

1. We are dividing the 24 hour day into DAY part and NIGHT part exactly as Jesus had. As a Jew, he was reckoning time exactly like a Jew, not according to any heathen calculation, like those of the Romans from midnight to midnight. His people the Jews, to this day, reckon the day from sunset to sunset.

2. **Tome:** A volume, a large book.

themselves! These two would have told us candidly how they had taken their Master soon after dark that very Friday evening, to a more congenial place for rest and recuperation. Is it not amazing that the only genuine witnesses have been eternally silenced? Could it be that these two and the disciples at Jerusalem were preaching about “**ANOTHER JESUS, and ANOTHER GOSPEL?**” — (2 Corinthians 11:4)

### EASY ADDITIONS

If it was the time factor that Jesus was trying to stress in the prophecy under discussion, let us see whether that was fulfilled, “**according to the scriptures,**” as the Christians boast.

<u>EASTER</u> <u>WEEK</u>	<u>IN THE SEPULCHRE</u>	
	<u>DAYS</u>	<u>NIGHTS</u>
<u>FRIDAY</u> Placed in tomb at sunset	-nil-	One Night
<u>SATURDAY</u> Supposed to be in tomb	One Day	One Night
<u>SUNDAY</u>	-nil-	-nil-
TOTAL	One day	Two Nights

You will no doubt observe from the above table that the grand total amounts to no more than **ONE** day and **TWO** nights and, juggle as you may, you will never, never get **three** days and **three** nights as Jesus had himself foretold, “**according to the Scriptures.**” Even Einstein, the Master mathematician, cannot help you for this! Can't you see the Christian is giving a double lie to Jesus from this one prophecy alone? Jesus said, that he would be LIKE Jonah!

1. The Christians allege that Jesus was UNLIKE Jonah. Jonah was **ALIVE** for three days and three nights, whereas Jesus was “**DEAD**” in the tomb! (?)

2. Jesus said that he would be in the tomb for **THREE** days and **THREE** nights, whereas the Christians say that he was in the tomb for only **ONE** day and **TWO** nights.

Who is lying, Jesus or the Christians? Let them answer.

### COUNT BACKWARDS TO SOLVE DILEMMA

For all their learning, you have cornered them. And they know it! We must not relent. The Christians are already inventing a way out of this dilemma. They have now invented the "GOOD Wednesday" theory. "**The Plain Truth**" with its monthly FREE worldwide circulation of 6 million copies, is offering further FREE books on the subject of "Three DAYS and three NIGHTS." There are other organisations in South Africa, like "**Bible Revelation**" Johannesburg, who are also offering FREE books to prove that the "crucifixion" took place on a GOOD **Wednesday**, and not on a GOOD **Friday**.

Mr. Robert Fahey from that great country, America — where almost all (?) new cults originate eg. the Jehovah's Witnesses, the Seventh Day Adventists, the Christian Scientists, the Mormons, you name them, and they have them — representing that premier Christian magazine, named in the previous paragraph, lectured recently in the "Holiday Inn", Durban. He startled his overwhelmingly Christian audiences with a lot of novel ideas. Among these newfangled doctrines was one about **Good Wednesday**. He agreed 100% with the present writer's conclusion that Good Friday was **actually disproving** Christ's claim to be the Messiah. To solve this problem he suggested that we count backwards from the time he was discovered to be missing from the tomb, viz. on that Sunday morning, ("**first day of the week**") when Mary Magdalene went to anoint him. If we deduct 3 DAYS and 3 NIGHTS from Sunday morning, we ought to get WEDNESDAY as an answer. It is not difficult from here to get your THREE DAYS AND THREE nights to resolve the Christian dilemma. The audience, already pre-prepared with a flood of FREE<sup>1</sup> magazines and literature, gave Mr Fahey a resounding applause.

---

1. They have a fantastic system for achieving a FREE worldwide monthly circulation of 6 million "**Plain Truth**" magazines alone.



## GOD OR THE DEVIL?

After the meeting, during a personal discussion<sup>1</sup>, I congratulated Mr. Fahey for his ingenuity. "How was it possible for the past two thousand years, that the Christian world had not known their religious arithmetic to get their sums right?" Even to this day the bulk of Christendom commemorate a **GOOD FRIDAY** instead of a **GOOD WEDNESDAY**. "Who has deceived the 1,200,000,000 Christians of the world, including the Roman Catholics who claim an unbroken chain of Popes from the first Pope (Peter) to the present Pope, into falsely celebrating GOOD FRIDAY?," I asked Mr. Fahey.

Mr. Fahey, unashamedly answered: "**The Devil!**" I said, "If the Devil can succeed in confusing the Christians, and keep them confused for two thousand years in the most simple aspect of Faith, how much easier it would be for the Devil to mislead them in things concerning God?" Mr. Fahey blushed and walked away. If this is the belief of the trendsetters of Christianity,<sup>2</sup> we may well ask, "is this 'crucifixion' not the mightiest hoax in history?" Should we not now, more appropriately, call it **CRUCIFIXION!**

## CRYSTAL-CLEAR EVIDENCE

I have given you a list on page 230 showing overwhelming proof from the Christian scriptures where it was being said, again and again, that Jesus was ALIVE, **ALIVE!** Yet the disciples did not believe. Will the modern-day disciples believe now? Are they prepared to believe their own Master who had said:- "AS Jonah was . . . **SO SHALL** the son of man be?" Not likely! Remember Thomas — another one of the elected ones of Jesus, dubbed by the Christians as "Doubting Thomas"? He was "***not with them***"

---

1. The Christians do not allow their speakers to be questioned in public.

2. At the rate of this cults progress, before long the whole Christian world will opt for a "**Good Wednesday.**"

(the disciples) **when Jesus came**" — (John 20:24), the first time in the upper-room. Subsequently, when these very disciples who had felt, and touched and eaten with Jesus, testified that they had seen the "**Lord**" (not God, not the ghost of Jesus, but he himself flesh and blood — ALIVE!), Thomas said unto them:

**"Except, I shall see in his hands  
the print of the nails,  
and put my finger  
into the print of the nails,  
and thrust my hand into his side,  
I will not believe."**

(HOLY BIBLE) John 20:25

THE WATCHTOWER — OCTOBER 15, 1983 5



## The Watchtower

Announcing Jehovah's Kingdom

In an article covering four full pages on the subject "**Does the Bible Promise an Earthly Paradise?**" where this picture appears, there is not one word about this — **STAKI-FICTION!**

The fastest growing Christian cult — the "**Jehovah's Witnesses**"<sup>1</sup> (excluding the "**born-again**") — have innovated a novel concept of the **cruci-FICTION**. They choke on the word, cross (**cruci**), which they claim is the symbol of phallic worship.

On page 110 of their book — "**What Has Religion Done for Mankind?**" They say about the cross (**crux ansata**) — "**THIS LOOKED LIKE THE LETTER T WITH AN OVAL HANDLE ON TOP. ACTUALLY THIS REPRESENTED THE MALE AND FEMALE ORGANS OF REPRODUCTION COMBINED, AND SO WAS THE 'SIGN OF LIFE!'**" Hence they will never countenance their "**lord**" and "**saviour**" Jesus Christ being associated in anyway with a cross — a pagan totem.

Therefore they claim that Jesus was instead killed on a **STAKE** (a pole) and not on a "**cruci**" (a cross). If we accept their hypothesis then Jesus would have been **STAKIFIED** instead of crucified. Hence it would be **STAKIFICTION** instead of **CRUCI-FICTION!**

Watch, how their cleverness shunts them from the "fraying pan into the fire". The **stake** is the symbol of the totem-pole, another form of the phallus of the phallic worshipping cults. I wonder, how long they will hold on to this?

1. **Jehovah:** Obtain your **FREE** copy of the book — "**WHAT IS HIS NAME?**" which explains how this word originated.

## CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

### *Fabricated "Scripture"*

#### NEW NAME, OLD GAME

A "**born-again**" had been boasting how he used to pinch 10 cents from the church collection plate for a "**milk-shake**", and how he used to tie his drunken father ". . . **in the barn . . .**" — the same barn where he used to see his ". . . **mother lying in the gutter in the manure — the bathroom of the cows — beaten so badly by my father . . .**"<sup>1</sup> now he does another confidence trick upon his readers. He quotes the above verse (*John 20:25*) from his American Bible without giving the reference.<sup>2</sup> And after the words, "**I will not believe,**" he begins a new paragraph with the words, "**AT THIS POINT, Jesus said to Thomas,**" quoting again from the Bible without giving the reference. St. John, gives a lie to this cultist by saying,

***"And, AFTER EIGHT DAYS,  
again his disciples were inside,  
and Thomas with them;  
then CAME Jesus . . ."***

(**HOLY BIBLE**) *John 20:26*

#### ARTFUL LIES

Another of these cultists, a lawyer by profession, supports his reborn brother from America with yet another lie. He says on page 120 of "**The Islam Debate,**" that "Deedat has recently made a big issue of the stone which sealed the tomb by publishing a booklet entitled **Who Moved the Stone?**"<sup>3</sup> In it he suggests that the stone was moved by two disciples of Jesus who were Pharisees — Joseph

- 
1. The sickness is so cultivated that when this type of tripe is narrated, the "**born-again**" Christians go into ecstasy with their "**Alleluyas!**"
  2. On the same page 20 of "**The Resurrection Factor**" (by Josh McDowell) the author gives four other quotations, with references for everyone! On the following page he gives three quotes, also with references for everyone! But the verses where he wants to deceive, no references at all.
  3. Available **FREE** on request.

of Arimathea and Nicodemus (page 18). But in his booklet **Was Christ Crucified? SUGGESTS** it was a Superwoman (page 25), **IMPLYING** that it was Mary Magdalene." (Emphasis are mine).

How can a born-again Christian and an attorney-at-law lie? To ensnare his victim he even quotes the page number, "25." The book has been out of print for a long time. Even if you had a copy, you were not likely to check it up. The cultist sounds so cocksure! But the "Gospel Truth" is that my actual words are:

"SHE WAS PLEASANTLY SURPRISED ON HER ARRIVAL TO FIND THE STONE ALREADY ROLLED AWAY."

Where is the suggestion that it was Mary Magdalene? Where do I **imply** that it was Mary Magdalene? But for these sick people, whether American or South African, every trick in the bag is permissible to clinch a convert for Christ. I "throw in the towel." I am not prepared to give battle to every false charge, and I want you to do the same. You simply deliver your message the best way you can, and leave the rest to God.

## A FABRICATION

Biblical scholars are coming to a conclusion that the "doubting Thomas" episode is of the same variety as that of the woman "**caught in the act**" — (*John 8:1-11*), i.e. it is a fabrication! But as the orthodox will not allow this interpolation — (*John 8:1-11*) to be expunged from their Versions of the Bible, he exhibits a similar stubbornness in dealing with the verses about "**putting fingers into the print of the nails**" — (*John 20:25*). For the present we will deal with them for what they are worth.

The Romans had no special reasons for being vindictive towards Jesus as compared to his two "crossmates." Why make fish of one (his "crossmates") and fowl of the other (Jesus), i.e. to have the two tied with leather thongs to the crossbar and to have Jesus "nailed?"

Not "**at this point**," as the cultist alleges, but "**eight days**" later, Jesus walks once more into the upper-room, and he finds Thomas there this time. And according to John, he commanded Thomas to . . .

**... Reach hither thy finger,  
and behold my hands;  
and reach hither thy hand,  
and thrust it into my side;  
and be not faithless, but believing."**

**(HOLY BIBLE) John 20:27**

Thomas realises the heel he has been. He had signally rejected every proof that Jesus was ALIVE! Every other disciple, beside Judas Iscariot the traitor, had testified that they had seen Jesus and felt him and eaten food with him, but Thomas WOULD NOT BELIEVE!. What would he not believe? That the living, pulsating Jesus was making his rounds — Not a ghost of Jesus. Now, being confronted with the PHYSICAL reality of his presence, demonstrating his physical, material body, he was forced to exclaim,

**"My Lord and my God!"**

**(HOLY BIBLE) John 20:28**

## WHAT DID THOMAS REALISE?

Did Thomas realise at that juncture that Jesus Christ was his Jehovah? Did he and other disciples fall down in prostration before him. Never! His words were the words of self-reproach. We utter them daily, "My God! What a fool I have been!" Are you addressing your listener, as your God?<sup>1</sup>

DAILY NEWS - OCTOBER 17, 1955.

### **GIRL, AWAITING BURIAL FOR 4 DAYS, WAKES UP**

**S**ITEBE, a Native woman of Fairleigh, near Newcastle, sat in mourning beside the coffin of her 14-year-old daughter early yesterday, waiting for a hearse to come and take the child away.

For four days she had mourned her daughter's death, but she had one comfort - there was to be no pauper's burial.

The whole family had helped pay for the shroud, the coffin and a funeral at a distant cemetery.

It was early when Mrs. Sitebe sat for the last time beside the coffin. All was quiet in the house.

Then she heard a rustle and a slight movement. She stood up and looked down into the open coffin.

Her daughter stared back at her.

#### **MOVED AND SPOKE**

For a moment the mother stood shocked and stunned, then she screamed and ran from the

building.

Relatives hurried in, lifted the girl from the coffin and placed her gently down.

The girl, apparently dead since Thursday, moved on to her side and spoke. Feebly she asked for water and then for a drink of milk. A doctor was called to attend to her.

She had escaped being buried alive by a few hours.

Had there been a conveyance available earlier than yesterday to carry the coffin, she might have gone to her grave. The Sitebe family, however, had had to postpone the funeral and the coffin was never closed.

1. For further details regarding the false claim that Jesus was God, see "**Christ in Islam**", available **FREE** on request from the Centre.

## CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

### *None So Blind...*

#### **TAKE STOCK. THE TRUTH SHINES THROUGH**

Let me give you a quick summary of the points we have discussed so far, concluding that Jesus Christ was neither killed nor was he crucified, as alleged by the Christians and the Jews, but that he was ALIVE!

1. **JESUS WAS RELUCTANT TO DIE!**  
He had worked out a strategy of defence to repel the Jews, because he wanted to remain ALIVE!
2. **HE BESEECHED GOD FOR HELP.**  
With strong crying and tears for God Almighty to keep him ALIVE!
3. **GOD "HEARD" HIS PRAYERS**  
Which means that God accepted his prayers to keep him ALIVE!
4. **AN ANGEL OF GOD CAME TO STRENGTHEN HIM**  
in the hope and belief that God will save him ALIVE!
5. **PILATE FINDS JESUS NOT GUILTY!**  
Good reason to keep Jesus ALIVE!
6. **PILATE'S WIFE SHOWN A DREAM IN WHICH SHE WAS TOLD THAT —**  
"No harm should come to this just man." In other words, he should be saved ALIVE!
7. **SUPPOSED TO BE ON THE CROSS FOR ONLY THREE HOURS.**  
According to the system in vogue, no man could die by crucifixion in so short a time which means that even if he was fastened to the cross — he was ALIVE!
8. **THE OTHER TWO — HIS "CROSSMATES" ON THEIR RESPECTIVE CROSSES WERE ALIVE.**

So Jesus too, for the same period of time, must have been ALIVE!

9. **ENCYCLOPEDIA BIBLICA UNDER ARTICLE "CROSS" — COLUMN 960, says:**  
"When the spear was thrust — Jesus was ALIVE!"
10. **"FORTHWITH" CAME THERE OUT BLOOD AND WATER:**  
"Forthwith" means straightaway, immediately, which was a sure sign that Jesus was ALIVE!
11. **LEGS NOT BROKEN — AS A FULFILMENT OF PROPHECY**  
"Legs" can be of any use only if Jesus was ALIVE!
12. **THUNDERSTORM, EARTHQUAKE, AND DARKENING OF THE SUN ALL WITHIN 3 HOURS!**  
To disperse the sadistic mob to enable his "secret disciples" to help keep him ALIVE!
13. **JEWS DOUBTED HIS DEATH**  
They suspected that he had escaped death on the cross — that he was ALIVE!
14. **PILATE "MARVELS" TO HEAR THAT JESUS WAS DEAD**  
He knew from experience that no man can die so soon by crucifixion. He suspected that Jesus was ALIVE!
15. **BIG ROOMY CHAMBER**  
Close at hand, big and airy for willing hands to come to the rescue. Providence was out to keep Jesus ALIVE!
16. **STONE AND "WINDING SHEETS" HAD TO BE REMOVED**  
Necessary only if Jesus was ALIVE!
17. **REPORT ON WINDING SHEETS**  
German scientists who carried out experiments on the "**Shroud of Turin**" said that the heart of Jesus had not stopped functioning — that he was ALIVE!
18. **EVER IN DISGUISE!**  
Disguise not necessary if Jesus was "resurrected." Only necessary if he was ALIVE!

19. **FORBADE MARY MAGDALENE TO TOUCH HIM**  
 "Touch me not" for this reason that it would hurt; because he was ALIVE!
20. **"NOT YET ASCENDED UNTO MY FATHER"**  
 In the language of the Jews, in the idiom of the Jews, he was saying, "I am not dead yet," in other words, "I am ALIVE!"
21. **MARY MAGDALENE NOT AFRAID ON RECOGNISING JESUS**  
 Because she had seen signs of life before. She was looking for a Jesus who was ALIVE!
22. **DISCIPLES PETRIFIED ON SEEING JESUS IN THE UPPER-ROOM**  
 All their knowledge about the "crucifixion" was from hearsay, therefore, they could not believe that Jesus was ALIVE!
23. **ATE FOOD AGAIN AND AGAIN IN HIS "POST CRUCIFIXION" APPEARANCES**  
 Food only necessary if he was ALIVE!
24. **NEVER SHOWED HIMSELF TO HIS ENEMIES**  
 Because he had escaped death by the "skin of his teeth". He was ALIVE!
25. **TOOK ONLY SHORT TRIPS**  
 Because he was not resurrected, not spiritualised, but ALIVE!
26. **TESTIMONY OF MEN AROUND THE TOMB**  
 "Why seek ye the living among the dead?" — (Luke 24:4-5).  
 That he is not dead, but ALIVE!
27. **TESTIMONY OF ANGELS**  
 ". . . angels who had said that he was ALIVE!" — Luke 24:23.  
 Did not say, "resurrected" but the actual word uttered by the angels was "ALIVE!"
28. **MARY MAGDALENE TESTIFIES —**  
 ". . . they heard that he was ALIVE, and had been seen by her, they believed not." — (Mark 16:11): Mary did not vouch for a



spook, or ghost or spirit of Jesus but a LIVE Jesus. What they could not believe was that the Master was ALIVE!

29. **DR. PRIMROSE TESTIFIES**

That the "water and the blood," when Jesus was lanced on the side, was on account of an upset in the nervous vessels because of the scourging by staves. This was a sure sign that Jesus was ALIVE!

30. **JESUS HAD HIMSELF FORETOLD THAT HIS MIRACLE WILL BE THE MIRACLE OF JONAH!**

According to the **Book of Jonah**, Jonah was ALIVE, when we expected him to be DEAD; similarly when we expect Jesus to be DEAD, he should be ALIVE!

These thirty points and many more arguments are fully expounded in the preceding pages of this book. Please read and re-read the arguments and practise them on your friends. The pleasure is yours. I pray for your success!

## The coffin moved

MOULMEIN (Burma),  
Saturday

**A** YOUNG man narrowly escaped being buried alive here.

Maung Tin Win, 17-year-old son of O U Hla Tin and Daw Thein of Pabedan quarter, had small-pox and was pronounced dead.

The sorrowing parents held the funeral for him at the Buddhist cemetery in Myenigone quarter. While the last rites were being performed by Buddhist monks besides the wooden coffin at the edge of the freshly-dug grave, it began to move.

When groans were heard inside the coffin, relatives decided to open it. They found Maung Tin Win alive.—Sapa-Reuter.

*Rosey's* — **Believe It or Not!**

THE DAILY NEWS

JANUARY 3, 1984

## Shaken and stirred

NAIROBI: Mr Barnabas Achachi suddenly stirred while being carried to a mortuary after he was declared clinically dead "from too much Christmas liquor".

Returned to hospital, doctors advised him to go easy on strong drink.  
—Sapa-AP



**THE** WHO WAS DEAD FOR 3 DAYS!  
**SAI BABA**  
(1856-1918) of Shirdi, India WAS PRONOUNCED DEAD IN 1886 WITH BOTH CIRCULATION AND BREATHING STOPPED COMPLETELY. AS PREPARATIONS FOR HIS FUNERAL WERE BEING MADE 3 DAYS LATER IT WAS OBSERVED THAT HE WAS BREATHING AND HE LIVED ANOTHER 32 YEARS

## CHAPTER NINETEEN

### *Crucified Or Cruciplayed?*

#### LANGUAGE DEFICIENCY

Every word is a frozen picture of what it represents. If we take a word and cogitate on it, we will be able to see or visualise it in our minds. Try — “**ship**,” you will see a ship in your mind. “**Handbag**,” you will see a handbag in your mind. “**Cigarette**,” you will see a cigarette in your mind. But we speak at such a rapid rate that we apprehend words as ideas, thoughts and concepts. Words are the tools wherewith we convey our messages. The greater the vocabulary, the clearer and easier the communication. But wrong words can mar the ideas.

#### THE LANGUAGE CUL-DE-SAC

The Arabic language is very rich in conveying spiritual thoughts and concepts, but English is richer in the field of science and technology. Yet this latter language is letting me down. It seems to have no verbs for incompleting or attempted actions, for example:

1. A man is taken to the gallows, the noose is put around his neck, “he kicks the bucket” meaning the rope is pulled for him to die, but fate intervenes and he is reprieved before he expires. Twenty years later the same man dies drowning. We want one verb to explain to us what happened — was the man “**hanged**” or what happened? Not un-hanged. We want just one verb . . . ?
2. Another person is taken to the electric chair for electrocution. He is strapped to the chair. And the switch is put on. A bolt of electricity goes through the man, but the power fails. The man revives, and before another bolt of electricity is shot through him, he is reprieved. A few days later the man dies in a motor car accident. What was his end? What happened to him on the “chair”? Was he electrocuted or not? One verb . . . ?

3. Josephus, a Jewish historian, records in his book of "**Anti-quities**" about "crucifixions," in which he intervened and as a result the "crucified" men were lowered from their crosses. One survived! What had happened to him on the cross? Was he crucified? The one who did not die by crucifixion, but an attempt was made to crucify him. Was he crucified? One verb ...?

### **CRUCI-FICTIONS GALORE**

The above are hypothetical cases one might say. But we are with history in the making. See page 188, a reproduction from the "**Weekend World**," dated August 3, 1969. Mr. Pieter van der Bergh, a barman by occupation, was "crucified" for "kicks!" — just for the thrill of it. In his own words, he simply wanted to prove, "THAT MAN IS MASTER OVER HIS BODY." He was on the cross; he went through the whole process of the crucifixion. To outdo the three of Golgotha, he had "**An 18 inch spike piercing his thigh**" — (see picture page 214). This barman is still alive and kicking. Was he crucified? One verb ...? There is no such verb in English.

When the Jews cried repeatedly to Pilate — "**Crucify him! Crucify him!**" — (Luke 23:21, John 19:6), they meant KILL him on the cross — by crucifixion. "KILL" him! Not just "taking him for a ride" on the cross! And, if after all the due ceremony, like that of Mr. van der Bergh, the man did not die by crucifixion, what would you say happened? What verb are you going to use, when you haven't got it in your language?

### **MULTIPLE DEFICIENCY?**

A South African Englishman, and his American counterpart, jointly confess<sup>1</sup>: "If the word **crucify** only means to **kill on the cross**, we are at a loss to find an alternative verb to describe the mere act of **impaling on a cross**."<sup>2</sup> (Their own emphasis). Shame on them. They make a mockery of me whilst the deficiency lies in their own language and in their own inability to coin an appropriate word.

---

1. From the book — "**The Islam Debate**," page 113.

2. Why does it not occur to them to write "crucify" within inverted commas?

With all its “**IN** dwelling of the Holy Ghost”, the Christian world has failed to coin an appropriate verb to describe, “the mere act of being fastened to the cross”. Presently, I will get them out of their misery, **Insha-Allah!**<sup>1</sup>, before the chapter is finished. But why the rhetoric when they still say: “**IF** the word **crucify** ONLY MEANS to **Kill** . . .” Will Christendom tell us what else **crucify** means? The world-renowned Oxford Dictionary simply defines **crucify** as “Put to death by fastening to a cross”<sup>2</sup>. The “**born-again**” authors of “The Islam Debate” cannot solve the problem, so I will solve it for them!

### “CRUCIFIXIONS” NOW FOR KICKS

There is always something new coming out of the East. Now in the Far East, the Philipinos have developed a new craze of getting “CRUCIFIED”! They want to walk in the footsteps of Jesus. — (See page 166). A reproduction from the “SUNDAY NEWS” of Daresalam, dated May 3rd 1981, reports of multiple “**crucifixions**” in the Philippines. ‘At least seven cases of “crucifixions” were reported in the local press.’ There could have been many more “crucifixions” in the hinterland, which the newspapers failed to report. Among those “crucified” was one Luciana Reyes, described as “**the first woman known to have performed the ritual**” of “crucifixion”! A new addition to the fanatical elements of the “crucifixions” is that “the penitent’s hands are nailed to a wooden cross”.

### CRUCIFIED OR CRUCIPLAYED?

Not a single person died by “crucifixion”! (i.e. was crucified). One of the “**crucified**” men fainted. Another “**crucified**” man “was up and smoking a cigarette as soon as his hands were bandaged”. A vendor “had gone through the ritual (of “crucifixion”) for the fifth time”. This man has vowed to perform the “**crucifixion**” ten times! It all sounds like a fairy tale. But there were 25,000 witnesses to four “crucifixions” in one town alone. Some of these “**crucifixions**” are shown “live on television”.

---

1. If Allah Wills!

2. See picture on page 185 for a more accurate representation of “fastening”.

6 SUNDAY NEWS, May 3, 1981

## DAR-ES-SALAAM

# Jesus' footsteps?

CHURCH Leaders are concerned by the increasing number of Filipinos submitting themselves to Penitential whipping, beating and "crucifixion" in a re-enactment of Christ's suffering on the cross.

Flagellants, beating themselves or being whipped till they bleed, are a common sight in Asia's only Roman Catholic country during the holly week. On Good Friday, at least seven cases of "crucifixion" were reported in the local press.

One of these was Luciana Reyes, a 23-year-old factory worker and the first woman known to have performed the ritual.

The publicity generated by this year's events and their increasing attraction to local and foreign tourists have worried churchmen, some of whom have expressed their distaste for the practice.

Jaime Cardinal Sin, Archbishop of Manila and leader of the church here, said he opposed this particular form of mortification and penance because it is conducted publicly and it is possible that the penitents are motivated by pride and vainglory.

The church did not encourage the practice nor could it forbid it, he said, because mortification of the flesh can be good for the soul — if the motivation is good.

Forms of penitential mortification go back through the centuries and are deeply rooted in the culture of the Philippines where 75 per cent of the population are Catholics.

"Flagellation was recorded in the Spanish Era", according to National Museum Assistant Director Alfredo Evangelista. The idea of penance was implanted by them".

Oscar Gruz, Archbishop of Pampanga Diocese, just north of here where most of the crucifixions take place, said some features in the practice were not religious.

There were "a good number of fanatical elements," and "crucifixions" had some touristic flavour, he said.

"Crucifixion" where the penitent's hands are nailed to a wooden cross, is a recent addition to penitential custom in the Philippines. The first

cases to receive public notice occurred here in the late 1960s.

One reason for its increase is that the danger of medical complications has been reduced to a minimum, according to Monsignor Teodoro Buhain, Assistant to the Secretary-General of the Catholic Bishop's Conference of the Philippines.

The "crucifixions", some shown live on television, have now become the climax of Easter week in the Philippines. In some cases, they attract thousands of visitors to provincial towns where the atmosphere is a blend of carnival and deep mourning.

The ceremony at Bacolor in

Pampanga was typical. A procession formed outside the town early on Good Friday morning with the flagellants in front followed by three men dragging huge wooden crosses.

When they reached their destination — a small church yard away from the centre of town — the flagellants beat their fellow-penitents on the arms and back.

A little after midday the penitents were nailed to their crosses and raised up for about a minute.

One man fainted. After being removed from the cross he had to be carried to a waiting bus. Another was up and smoking a cigarette as soon as his hands were bandaged.

The group in the procession said they had been members of a criminal gang and wanted "to atone for the bad we did then, and to improve the prosperity of our families."

In the nearby town of San Fernando, some 25,000 people, many of them tourists, watched as four men were nailed to crosses in two separate ceremonies.

One of them Mario Bagtas, a 33-year-old vendor, had gone through the ritual for the fifth time and, like the bacolor penitents, he promised to return next year.

He said he had vowed to perform the "crucifixions" for 10 years after his wife recovered from cancer.

By Reg Gratton

The Christian world has been notorious in exploiting Jesus to make money. The films on the life of Jesus, every one of them, was a "box-office" record smasher! They have their "**Nativity Play**," they have their "**Passion Play**," why not a "**CRUCIPLAY?**"

Reg Gratton, the correspondent for the "**Sunday News**," (see page 237 again) has solved the problem of the "**crucifixions**" by having the words in inverted commas. He has used the words "**crucifixion**" and "**crucifixions**" five times in his article, and every time when these words appear he has them enclosed in inverted commas. Please check it up. In other words he is saying that it is the "SO-CALLED crucifixion" or the "SO-CALLED crucifixions." The inverted commas are more subtle than the words "so-called." I did not catch the joke on my first few readings of the article. Would you have?

You will note that other alert journalists have taken the precautions of putting words like "**DEAD**," "**DIED**," and "**CORPSE**" in inverted commas on pages 189 and 190. Now Reg does the same about the "**CRUCIFIXIONS!**" Since the word "crucify" is getting stuck in the missionaries' throats, should we not use **CRUCI-FICTION** instead?

### **CRUCIFIXION OR CRUCI-FICTION?**

We can now say without any mental reservation that Pieter van der Bergh (page 188) went through the process of the crucifixion with all severity and seriousness, but he was not crucified (verb of crucifixion) as the newspaper proclaimed **BUT** that he had been crucificted (verb of cruci-fiction).

Further, we can say that the Christians in the Philippines are not undergoing crucifixions, but that they are undergoing **CRUCI-FICTIONS** in all sincerity. No **Passion PLAYS** or Play-acting with them as they do in films. It is the real thing, being only short of death! Hence, any performance with the cross, where the victim tries to emulate the alleged experience of Jesus, but does not actually die the "**ACCURSED DEATH**" on the cross, we will rightly call it by its appropriate terms —

<b>CRUCIFICT</b> instead of CRUCIFY	— (Verb)
<b>CRUCIFICTED</b> instead of CRUCIFIED	— (Verb)
<b>CRUCIFICTION</b> instead of CRUCIFIXION	— (Noun)

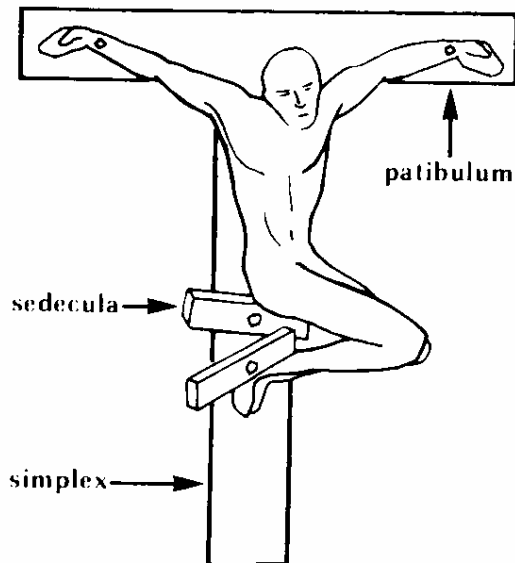
This simple and natural use of the right words will break the "CROSS" of Christianity which finds itself at the "CROSSROADS," not knowing which way to turn. And if we use the words frequently enough, we will soon find them in the English dictionaries of the world.

To this end, we have published a three hundred and fifty thousand copies of this publication for FREE distribution to date. Read it, study it and share it with friends and foes alike for the glory of Truth.

AAMEEN!

### TAKE YOUR PICK

"After more than 1,000 hours of studying . . . the "**crucifixion**," the author of A CAMPUS CRUSADE publication, "**The Resurrection Factor**," invents another posture for his "**lord**" and "**saviour**."



NOW YOU HAVE A  
MULTIPLE OF  
CHOICES.

1. **FROGI - FICTION**  
as illustrated here.
2. **STAKI - FICTION**  
as you see on Page 226
3. **CRUCI - FICTION**  
as it appears on Page 185

This is an illustration from page 47  
of the cultist's book.

## AFTERWORD

The Crucifixion of Christ had been pushed down my throat to be the only redeeming factor for mankind since my early encounter with students and priests of Adams Mission when I was in my teens. (See Epilogue: **“Is the Bible God’s Word?”**)

Being a rather impressionable youth, I was amazed at the manner in which scores of young articulate men believed in the Crucifixion as their only factor of salvation and seemed to be concerned about my being condemned to hell for not believing in it.

This subject of the Crucifixion of Christ on which all Christianity is staked, became a serious subject of my studies. I really wanted to know what it was all about and began to study their authority, the **“New Testament,”** on the subject.

Honestly, I do not expect anyone to ask me about my belief as a Muslim concerning the Crucifixion. My belief is the Quranic belief as categorically stated in Chapter IV, Verse 157.

I repeat emphatically that the study of the crucifixion was thrust upon me by those of the Christian faith who claimed to be my benefactors and well-wishers. I seriously took their concern for me to heart and studied and researched objectively, using their own sources. The results, you will agree, are astounding.

I would like to thank the hundreds of Christians who came knocking at my door and for initiating me into this subject.

The foregoing is the result of my years and years of study and research.

*Ahmed Suddat*  
1/5/1994



Establish the "KINGDOM OF GOD" on earth  
as prayed for by Jesus (peace be upon him)



*...mankind!  
...created you  
From a single pair  
Of a male and a female,  
And made you into  
Nations and tribes,  
That ye may recognise  
One another*

*...Not that ye may  
Respect each other!  
Verily, the most  
Honoured of you  
in the sight of God  
is (he who is) the  
Best in conduct*

**This Book has  
a solution to the  
problems of mankind.  
It will "Guide  
you into all truth"**  
*Jesus Christ*

**This Book has  
over six thousand  
explanatory  
notes alone!**

You can now own this Encyclopaedia of Islam  
"The Future World Constitution" consisting of 1824 pages  
for only £6 UK., \$10 USA., R10 RSA., and \$12 US Middle East.

Get your **FREE** copy of the book -  
**"THE WAY TO THE QUR'AN"**



**ISLAMIC PROPAGATION CENTRE  
INTERNATIONAL**

124 QUEEN STREET, DURBAN, 4001 RSA.  
PHONE: (27-31) 3060026 FAX: (27-31) 3040326

FROM VERY SMALL BEGINNINGS WE  
 HAVE SOUGHT TO SERVE THE CAUSE OF  
 ALLAH IN DISSEMINATING HIS ETERNAL MESSAGE  
 AND IN THE PROCESS SILENCING THE ENEMIES OF ISLAM.  
 WE ARE TRULY GRATEFUL TO ALLAH SUBHANA WA TA'ALA FOR THIS OPPORTUNITY TO EARN HIS PLEASURE.  
 AND WE BELIEVE ALLAH NEVER BREAKS HIS PROMISE.

IF YOU ARE GRATEFUL  
 (ALLAH) WILL ADD  
 MORE UNTO YOU

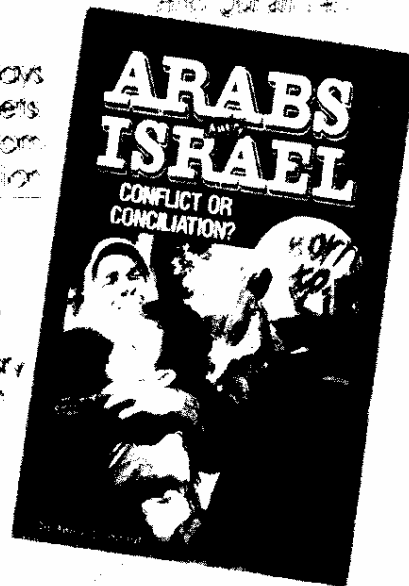
لَيْسَ شُكْرُكُمْ لِي أَزِيدَنَّكُمْ

Honor: Quran 14:7

He could only afford to subsist in the days gone by, one to five thousand pamphlets. Today he is able to produce about four million numerous inserts in a quarter million copies of

**“ARABS and ISRAEL  
 Conflict or Conciliation?”**

Do you consider these efforts necessary and worthwhile? If you do, then we solicit your help to assist us in expanding our ever increasing activities — your contribution will help to fund the work and a million copies of this book (1977-8)



KEEP  
 THE  
 FLAME  
 ALIVE!

WE NEED  
 YOUR  
 HELP!



ISLAMIC PROPAGATION  
 CENTRE INTERNATIONAL  
 124 QUEEN STREET,  
 DURBAN 4001, SOUTH AFRICA  
 PHONE: (27-31) 3060026  
 FAX: (27-31) 3040326

**AHMED DEEDAT**  
49 TREVENNEN ROAD  
VERULAM 4340  
REPUBLIC OF SOUTH AFRICA

***Dar Al-Manarah***

**For Translation, Publishing & Distribution**

**El-Mansoura - Egypt**

**Tel : 050/384254**

**Fax : 050/310501**

**دار المنارة**

**للنشر والتوزيع والترجمة**

**المنصورة ت: ٠٥٠/٣٨٤٢٥٤ - ف: ٠٥٠/٣١٠٥٠١**

Dar Al Kotob Library Number :  
16734 / 98